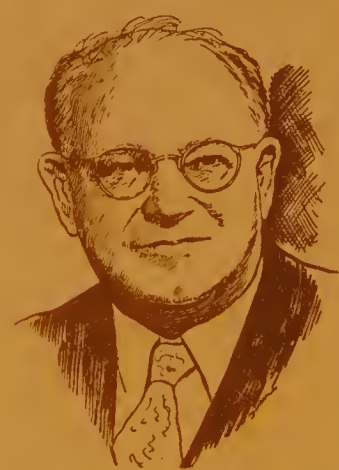


PRIVATE LIFE
OF
LOUIS S. BAUMAN
No. 1012 Bot.

A Gift From
THE LIBRARY OF
Louis S. Bauman



Accession Number
7615

Shelf Number
CD66
EL92

GRACE THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY
WINONA LAKE, INDIANA

Seminary CD66 EL92

c.1

Ely, James E.

110105 000

Glimpses of Bible climaxes fro



3 9311 00004292 5

GRACE COLL/SEM-MORGAN LIBRARY

GLIMPSES OF BIBLE CLIMAXES

From

“The Beginning” to “The End”

By James E. Ely

This Volume also Contains Sub-Sections on the following Topics:

“The World” The “Enemy of God”

The Unmasking of Modernism

The Account of Creation

Evolution Exposed

Contrasts Between Evolution and the Bible

GRACE THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY
WINONA LAKE, INDIANA



BUSINESSMAN'S GOSPEL ASSOCIATION
Garden City Office
GARDEN CITY, KANSAS, UNITED STATES OF AMERICA

CD66
EL92
#7615

Copyright, 1927, by JAMES E. ELY

IMPORTANT, BUT BRIEF SUGGESTIONS FOR YOU

This book has a simple, plain, easily understood and entertaining message, yet it is deep enough to be a study book for serious people, who want to know the truth and who are willing to pay the price to obtain truth by seeking and searching for it.

This book should not be read in haste nor studied in a hurry. One should leisurely, carefully, **but continuously** and prayerfully pursue its pages. Keep an open mind and maintain an unprejudiced heart. Be willing to discard false notions and willing to see and receive the truth. When you once start in to read or study this book, **don't stop** or allow any longer intermission between reading or study periods than necessary. In this way the subject matter will be kept before the mind and its contents will be much more easily seen and mastered. After reading the book entirely through in this way, many readers will be much benefited by repeating this process two, three or even more times. After this, a detailed study should be made of such Scriptures or truths as may appear to be new or difficult for the reader. **Then look up and read from your Bible the different Scripture references cited or referred to.** After it is studied in sections and in detail, the book should be entirely re-read one or more times. This re-reading should occur as nearly as possible at one sitting or in one continuous reading. There should then stand out before you "a bird's eye view" of God's wonderful plan of redemption from "the beginning" to "the end."

This is especially intended to be a study book **for vacational and summer Bible schools, Sunday Schools, Young Peoples Meetings, Mission Study Classes, Conferences, etc.** It should meet the need of old and young. It is adapted for Bible schools, seminaries, etc. **Provide supplies at once for your various students and classes.**

It should meet a need of the preacher in the church, the teacher in the Sunday School, and the teacher in the day school.

It will clear difficulties, dispel doubts, and present facts on which to base your convictions and faith. It will place outstanding, but conflicting movements and teachings of the present day in their true light and relative positions.

Should you find portions of this book difficult or heavy reading, if you will patiently and prayerfully pursue its pages to the end you should be amply rewarded for your labors.

Every man and woman, and every boy and girl should give the subject matter of this book a good, thorough, careful studying, and investigation, that they may know the truth **once for all.**

This book is also especially intended to meet the need of the modern busy business man who wants to know the truth and is willing to seek it.

BUSINESSMAN'S GOSPEL ASSOCIATION

Garden City Office

Garden City, Kansas, U. S. A.

Reverently dedicated to the service
of saving the lost and perfecting the
saved, for the sake of Jesus, who loved
us and gave Himself for us. Amen.

JAMES E. ELY

Garden City, Kansas, United States of America

May the Great Father—God—bless this message and multiply it by hundreds of thousands and send it forth into the home and foreign fields in all languages, that all men everywhere may learn to know Christ, Whom to know is to love; Whom to know is to long to be like; Whom to know is to have “life eternal” (Jno. 17:3). Pray for this message. Pray for those who receive it. Expect God to answer your prayers. If the Lord leads you to take a financial interest in its distribution, we will be glad to hear from you. Who, as a servant of the Lord, will be the first person or church to send a multitude of these messages of redemption to China, to India, to Japan, etc., to all the world—to “every creature.” Amen.

The author of this volume feels greatly in need of and earnestly requests the prayers of the people of God.

PRICES, POSTPAID

One copy, paper cover . . . \$1.85	12 copies, paper cover . . . \$18.00
One copy, cloth cover . . . 2.75	12 copies, cloth cover . . . 27.00

This volume will make the finest kind of a present on any occasion for your son, your daughter, your loved ones and your friends. Present your preacher, your Sunday School teacher and each of the official members of your church with a copy. It will enable the members of your church board to determine whether they have a sound, safe preacher, who is sticking to the Bible. See that each of your state and national legislators receive and read a copy of this book that they may be able the more intelligently to vote on issues involving the subject matter contained herein. See that the editors of your papers and magazines have copies, as well as each "reporter." Every "scientist" should read this volume. Don't fail to give a copy to each member of your school board and to each of the school teachers, who daily have charge of your children. **Order today.**

BUSINESSMAN'S GOSPEL ASSOCIATION

Garden City Office

Garden City, Kansas, United States of America

An Outline of the Bible

Setting forth outstanding periods in God's program of redemption.

- I MANKIND.....Gen. 1-11.
 - 1. Creation (Eden).....Gen. 1-2:3.
 - 2. Man's "fall," and the ground and means of salvation.
.....Gen. 2:4-4.
 - 3. History of mankind's sin and failure.....Gen. 5-11.

- II THE JEW (the call for "an holy nation" Ex. 19:5-6).....
.....Gen. 12—Mal. 4.
 - 1. Abrahamic Phase.....Gen. 12-50.
 - 2. Mosaic Phase.....Ex. 1—1 Sam. 7.
 - 3. Davidic Phase }.....1 Sam. 8—Mal. 4.
 (a) Remnant }

- III Change from the Jew to the Church.....Matt. 1—Acts 1.

- IV CHURCH AGE ("Now the people of God," 1 Peter 2:9-10).....
.....Acts 2—Rev. 3.

- V Change from Church to Kingdom Age.....Rev. 4-19.
 (Includes the translation of the church, the abomination of desolation, the great
 tribulations, the rebirth of the Jews as a nation and attending judgments.)

- VI KINGDOM AGE ("A King shall reign in righteousness").Rev. 20.
 Followed by final judgment on the sinners of all past ages.

- VII The End (All things made new).....Rev. 21-22
 Redemption is then complete or finished.

GLIMPSES OF BIBLE CLIMAXES

from

“The Beginning” to “The End”

VOLUME I

Section 1

THE BIBLE

	Page
Bible Studies.....	3
The Three Cardinal Climaxes In Redemption.....	6
(1) The Penalty For Man's Sin Must Be Paid.....	6
(2) The Earth Must Be Placed Back Under the Direct Government of God.....	6
(3) The Defiled Heaven and Earth Must Be Renovated or Made New.....	6

Section 2

CHRIST CRUCIFIED

	Page
The Redeemer, a Divine Being.....	8
Redemption Was “Ordained” Before the Foundation of the World.....	8
Revelations Concerning “The Lamb of God”.....	9
His “Father’s Business”.....	12
“The Lamb of God”.....	13
His “Hour”.....	13
“His Life a Ransom”.....	13
His “Life For the Sheep”.....	13
That “Ye May Believe That I Am He”.....	14
“The Hour Is Come”.....	14
“It Is Finished”.....	15
Studies.....	16

Section 3

GOD’S KINGDOM BEFORE THE WORLD WAS “MADE.” PART I	18
---	----

Section 4

CHRIST CROWNED KING

or

The Rule of Heaven Over the Earth

The Earth’s Sinful Career.....	20
<i>The Call of the Jews to Set Up a Righteous Kingdom</i>	23
Abrahamic Phase of the Kingdom.....	23
The Mosaic Phase of the Kingdom.....	25
The Davidic Phase of the Kingdom.....	25
The Jews Expected the King and Kingdom.....	28
David’s Throne Belongs to the Lord.....	28
The Kingdom Is Coming.....	29
Kingdom Truth Climaxes.....	29
The King and Kingdom “Prepared . . . From the Foundation of the World”.....	29
The Course of the Jewish Kingdom.....	30
“The Times of the Gentiles”.....	31
“The Remnant Phase” of the Kingdom.....	31
Man, A Continuous Failure.....	32
Studies Concerning the “Scattering” and “Regathering” of Israel.....	32
<i>Daniel’s Prophecies Concerning Gentile World Rule</i>	36
The Prophetic Vision Unfolded by Daniel.....	36
The Time.....	37
The Image.....	37
The Vision and Its Meaning.....	39
What Does the Stone Symbolize?.....	39
When Will the Stone Smite the Ten-toe Nations?.....	40
Keep These Facts in Mind: “The God of Heaven” Will “Set Up” a Kingdom	41
What Will Characterize the Kingdom?.....	41

	Page
The King {A Descendant of David "One Like the Son of Man"} "shall reign in righteousness"	41
How Will a Righteous Reign Affect the Earth?	41
Plant Life, Animal Life.	41
Human Life	42
Identification Marks of the King	42
The Saviour, Satan and the Nations.	43
<i>"The Kingdom of Heaven" "At Hand"</i>	46
The King's Power	46
The King "Came . . . To Minister"	47
The Message of "The Kingdom of Heaven" Was Primarily for Israel.	47
Israel is Not Cast Off Permanently	49
The Jews Rejected Their King at His First Coming	50
<i>The "First" and the "Second" Coming of the Christ</i>	50
Daniel Sets Forth Both "Comings"	51
Peter Sets Forth Both "Comings"	52
Micah Sets Forth Both "Comings"	53
Isaiah Sets Forth Both "Comings" of the Lord	55
"The Sign" of His Second "Coming"	56
Studies Concerning Conditions at "The End of the World"	56
The King Crucified at His First Coming	56
The Kingdom Is Yet Future	59
Studies Concerning Things Christ Said About His "Coming Again" and "The Kingdom"	59
Christ's Resurrection	66
Jesus Christ Lives	67
Christ Is Now "The Believer's" "High Priest"	67
Apostolic Teachings Concerning Christ's Future Coming	68
The Coming of the Lord Jesus Christ	69
"The King of Kings," "The Clouds," "The Golden Crown" and "The Kingdom"	69
"Signs of His Coming Multiply"	71
When Will the Kingdom Be Set Up?	73
At the End of the Reign of "The Beast," "The Man of Sin" or Anti-Christ	74
Revelations Concerning the Future Kingdom	75
<i>"It Is Done"</i>	77
"The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdom of our Lord, and of His Christ; and He shall reign for ever and ever."	
Studies In King and Kingdom Truth	78
 <i>Section 5</i> 	
THE PROPHETS AND THEIR PROPHECIES	79
Chart of "The Ages"	83
Change from Church Age to Kingdom Age	83
<i>The Reign of Christ and the Kingdom Age</i>	86
The Reign of Christ	86
(1) The Kingdom Reign of Christ is to be After the Days of the Apostles	86
(2) The Reign of Christ is to be After the Days of the Church	86
(3) The Reign of Christ is to be After the Great Tribulation	86
(4) The Reign of Christ is Contemporaneous With the 1,000 Years Imprisonment of Satan	87
(5) The Reign of Christ is a Thousand Years Reign	87
(6) The Reign of Christ is That of a "King in His Glory"	87
(7) The Reign of Christ is the Reign of "The Lamb" With His Bride	87
(8) The Reign of Christ Will be in Canaan, the Promised Land	89
(a) "The Land" Promised to Abraham	89
(b) "The Land" Promised to Isaac	90
(c) "The Land" Promised to Jacob	90
(d) "The Land" Promised to "The Seed" of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob	90
(e) "The Land" Promise, Repeated to Moses and Confirmed	90
(f) "The Land" Temporarily Dispossessed by Israel	91
(g) "The Land" to be Repossessed by Israel, as Revealed by Prophecy	91
(9) The Reign of Christ Will Be Over God's People, Israel	92
(10) The Reign of Christ Will Be In Jerusalem	93
(11) The Reign of Christ Will Reach Out and Bless "All Families of the Earth"	94
The Kingdom Age	96

	Page
"This Same Jesus".....	96
Satan's Last Stand.....	97
The Two Resurrections.....	97
The Judgment of the Saved.....	98
The Great White Throne Judgment.....	98

Section 6

CHRIST WILL CREATE ANEW 100

or

The New Heaven and the New Earth 100

"While the Earth Remaineth".....	100
"They Shall Perish".....	100
"I Create New Heavens and a New Earth".....	100
"Heaven and Earth Shall Pass Away".....	100
"The Earth . . . And the Works . . . Therein Shall Be Burned Up".....	101
"Behold, I Make All Things New".....	101
<i>"It Is Done"</i>	101
The Chart of Finished Redemption.....	101
"Then Cometh the End".....	103
Then Comes Eternity.....	103

Section 7

STUDIES CONCERNING "THE ENEMY" OF GOD'S PROGRAM OF FINISHED REDEMPTION 104

"The World," "The Enemy of God".....	104
(1) "The Lust of the Flesh".....	107
War.....	107
Modern Business.....	108
Adultery.....	110
(2) "The Lust of the Eyes".....	111
Movies.....	111
Newspapers and Magazines.....	112
Dress.....	112
(3) "The Pride (or Vain Glory) of Life".....	113
Studies.....	116
God's Love For His Enemy, "The World".....	116

Section 8

THE UNMASKING OF MODERNISM 117

or

"A Falling Away First," in the Church Precedes Christ's "Coming."

God Foresaw and Prophesied the Present Apostasy.....	125
--	-----

Section 9

A DETAILED EXPOSITION OF THE BIBLICAL ACCOUNT OF CREATION 132

Days of Creation.....	133
Length of Days of Creation.....	133
Order of Days of Creation.....	135
The Word of "Scholars" and "The Word of God".....	135
Two Triads of Days; One Triad of Creative Acts.....	136
Some Non-"Bara," Yet Formative Acts or Mandates of God.....	137
Where Begin? Where End?.....	138
The Bible Begins Where God Began.....	140
<i>The Bible</i>	140
Genesis 1:1.....	141
Numerics of Genesis 1:1.....	142
God.....	147
God "Bara" the Heavens and the Earth.....	147
"And It Was So".....	148
God Commanded and He "Created".....	150

	Page
God Commanded and Man Failed.....	150
<i>It Was Judgment, Not Chaos</i>	150
The Earth Passed Thru Judgment.....	152
All Three Indicate Judgment.....	152
Wrong Views.....	153
It's the Same Earth.....	154
God's Preparation For Man.....	154
Suggestions For Glacial Periods.....	155
<i>"Geologic Ages"</i>	155
The Theories of Pseudo-science Usually Arrayed Against the Bible.....	156
Strata and Fossils.....	157
A Bird's Eye View of the Strata and Fossils.....	157
Divisions of Geological Time.....	158
This Earth and the Earth of Gen. 1:1 Are the Same Earth.....	161
The Problem.....	162
The Fossils, a Deadly Witness Against Evolution.....	162
"The Successive Age" Hypothesis or Guess.....	163
God's Record of the "Ages" of Creation.....	165
Cause of Judgment of Gen. 1:2.....	166
God's Kingdom Before the World Was "Made" (Part 2).....	167
Satan Adapted to Earth and Heaven.....	168
How Long?.....	169
<i>Those Troublesome Six Days of Reconstruction and Creation</i>	169
The First Day:—Light.....	169
The Second Day:—Firmament.....	171
The Third Day:—Land, Seas, Plants.....	171
The Fourth Day:—Lights.....	173
The Fifth Day:—Fish and Fowl.....	174
The Sixth Day:—Land Animals.....	176
The Sixth Day:—Man's Creation.....	177
The Trinity in Creation.....	178
"In His Image".....	178
God "Made" and "Created" Them.....	178
The Sixth Day:—Woman's Creation.....	180
Numerics of "And God Said".....	180
<i>"For ever, O Lord, Thy Word is Settled in Heaven"</i>	
The Seventh Day:—Day of Rest.....	186
 <i>Section 10</i> EVOLUTION EXPOSED	 187
Evolution's Origin.....	187
Evolution's Confusion.....	187
Evolution's Followers.....	188
The Spontaneous Generation Myth Dispelled.....	189
No Life Except From Life.....	189
<i>Species Propagate Only "After Its Kind"</i>	190
Testimony of God's Word.....	190
Testimony of God's World or Natural History's Testimony.....	191
Testimony of Geology.....	192
Testimony of Archeology.....	192
Testimony of Biology.....	192
Each "After Its Kind".....	192
Protoplasm, each "After Its Kind".....	193
Anatomy, each "After Its Kind".....	193
Embryos, each "After Its Kind".....	193
The Uncertainties of Human Knowledge.....	195
The Certainty of Scripture.....	195
Species and Orders.....	195
Man is a Species.....	196
Chickens, a Species, etc.....	196
<i>Evolution Diametrically Opposed To the Bible In Every Respect</i>	197
What the Bible Has To Say.....	197

	Page
The Law of Creation.....	197
The Man.....	198
The Woman.....	198
Things To Think About.....	199
A Whipped Evolutionist.....	200
The Muddled Modernist.....	200
Horse Sense.....	201
The Evolutionist's Presentation of Creation and Life.....	201
Scholars Are Agreed?.....	202
So-called Assured Facts of Science.....	202
Science Destroys Its Own Theories.....	204
Scientific Gas and Guesses.....	205
Evolution Ethics.....	207
Scientists Testify Evolution Is "Nonsense".....	208

Reason Rejects the Theory of Evolution 210

Anti-Evolution Evidence.....	216
Glacial Periods.....	221
The "Pre-Glacial Man" a Myth.....	222
Evolution's "Stone Age Man" a Myth.....	223
It's a False Theory.....	225

The "Missing Link" 225

Long Lost Link.....	225
"Missing Links That Won't Link".....	226
Pitldown Man.....	226
The Calaveras Skull.....	227
The Colorado Specimen.....	227
Croatia Skeletons.....	227
Uncertainty of Skeleton Evidence.....	227
New Orleans Skeleton.....	227
Pre-Mousterian Man.....	227
Java Skeleton or Pithecanthropus.....	228
Cro-Magnon Man.....	229
The Heidelberg Man.....	229
The Neanderthal Man.....	230
Strata Do Not Establish Age of Fossils.....	231
Inferior Specimens No Proof of Antiquity.....	233
Dirth of Bones Affords Scant Evidence.....	235
Brain Capacity Inferior in Degraded and Diseased Types.....	236
Reconstruction of Fossil Fragments, Unreliable.....	236
"The Missing Link" Horse Humbug.....	238

O, Where Are The Missing Links? 239

Fossils Testify the Missing Links of Animals are Not Here.....	240
Natural World Testifies the Missing Links of Animals Are Not Here.....	240
Fossils Testify the "Missing Links" of Man Are Not Here.....	241
Natural World Testifies the "Missing Links" of Man Are Not Here.....	241
Age of Man.....	243
Summary of Some of Evolution's Bulwarks.....	246
The Situation.....	248
Evolution is Christianity's Enemy.....	249

Distinctive Results of Evolution and Kindred Teachings 250

Historians Misrepresent the Truth About Man.....	250
Evolution Geologists Mislead.....	252
The Science of Power.....	252
Newspaper Writers.....	253
The Popular Science Monthly.....	257
The Pulpit.....	258
Deception's "Blood Test".....	260
"The Blood Test" That Proves Man is Not Related to the Monkey.....	260

Evils of Evolution and False Science in the Home, School, State and Nation 260

Reference Books.....	264
Professors.....	265
The Modernistic Movement.....	267
What is the Matter With China?.....	269

	Page
The Menace in Religious Publications and Pulpits.....	269
Our National Life in Peril.....	272
The Crime Carnival.....	273
The Bible, the Foundation of Our Government.....	274

Section 11

SUMMARY OF CONTRASTS AND CONTRADICTIONS
BETWEEN EVOLUTION AND THE BIBLE

	277
Typical Evolution Teaches.....	277
The Bible Teaches.....	278
Absolute Conflict Between the Bible and Evolution.....	279
The Person and Work of the Lord Jesus Christ.....	280
The Rise of Man as per Evolution	
versus	
The Fall of Man as per "The Word of God")	281
"What Saith the Scriptures?".....	282
And God Purposed Thru Christ to Reconcile the Universe to Himself.....	285
And It Is Not God's Will That They Should Perish.....	285
"Prepare to Meet Thy God".....	286

Section 12

WHAT ARE YOU GOING TO DO ABOUT IT?

	287
"Crown Him Lord of All".....	290

Glimpses of Bible Climaxes

From

“The Beginning” to “The End”

VOLUME I

Then said Jesus unto them, “O fools, and slow of heart to believe **ALL** that the prophets have spoken: Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into His glory? And beginning at Moses and **ALL** the prophets, he expounded unto them in **ALL** the scriptures the things concerning Himself. . . . And He said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that **ALL** things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning Me. Then opened He their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures” (Lu. 24:25-27; 44-45).

“Open my eyes, that I may see
Glimpses of truth Thou hast for me;
Place in my hands the wonderful key
That shall unclasp, and set me free.
Silently now I wait for Thee,
Ready, my God, Thy will to see;
Open my eyes, illumine me,
Spirit Divine!” In Jesus’ Name. Amen.

Section 1

THE BIBLE

“I am God . . . declaring the end from the beginning” (Isa. 46:9, 10).

The Bible is “the Book of books.” It had many human writers, who were dictated to, as it were, from century to century, by the master Author of all the ages; yet, like its divine Author, it is a complete unit. It is the master **BOOK** of all the ages, for it is “the Word of God.” Its theme is “**salvation for sinners,**” yet the sinner is the Bible’s worst enemy. It is better loved by its friends and worse hated by its foes than any other book in all the world. There is a sense in which it is the least studied, yet the best studied book that has ever been written. It has been the **most misrepresented**, both by friend and foe, of any book that has ever been in existence, yet it is the Rock of the Ages. Its message has never changed. Thru the centuries it has stood the storms of criticism, skepticism and misrepresentation, unaltered and unalterable, for it is “the Word of God” which “shall stand forever.” Its *internal structure and external truths are beyond the range of human endeavor or knowledge. Its internal evidence contains such a maze of proofs and mass of facts, as to convince those who are acquainted with this evidence and these facts, that **beyond a shadow of a doubt, GOD ALONE**, could be its Author.

*See the numeric designs in the Bible, pages 142-147.

It is the **ONLY** book ever written, that the master Teacher of all the ages ever commanded any man to study. "Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are **they** which **testify of me**" (Jno. 5:39). It has a simple message; so no one need err therein. "For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have everlasting life" (Jno. 3:16). Yet, it is the most profound book in existence. No man has ever fathomed its depths or graduated from its pages. It is unlike any other book in all the world, in that children of God can read it thru for years and many times each year, yet its truths are ever new and increasingly interesting. If you simply read a geometry thru a few times you will know mighty little about its contents. This same thing is much more true of the Bible. It requires a repeated process of prayerful "study" and diligent "searching" to become acquainted with its matchless truths. It must be approached with an unbiased, unprejudiced, open mind, if its truths are to be seen and received.

In a sense, the Bible unfolds to those who look into it, that which they bring unto it. "The fool" who has "said in his heart, there is no God" frequently finds no God revealed in its pages. The semi-wise man after the flesh, who approaches God's Word, usually goes away in the condition in which he came. "For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with God" (1 Cor. 3:19). Is not the Bible a mirror which reflects to both of these classes, that which they have brought before it? But to one who is wise according to God's standard; to one who is willing to humble himself before God; to one who is willing to study and learn and listen to the great Father; to such a one it unfolds its priceless treasures. "The fear of the Lord is the **beginning** of wisdom." "The fear of the Lord is to **hate evil**" (Pro. 9:10; 8:13).

To "get at" or analyze a book of the Bible, one should go before its divine Author in humility, consecration and prayer. Read the book thru and thru and thru, until the mind absorbs and becomes saturated, as it were, with its contents. Sooner or later, truths from or an outline of the book will stand out before you. Without a **GENERAL OUTLINE**, one does not usually get very far with the study of most individual books. **This is especially true of the Bible as a whole.** A common practice in teaching is to set the student to "digging in" at some place in the Bible. As a result, most students fail to "dig out" or see the Bible as a completed whole. Hence, we have a maze of differing doctrines and degrees of skepticism. Are seminary methods to blame? Is the Bible practically a closed book to many teachers and preachers who have degrees after their names and occupy prominent positions? Something, somewhere, is certainly radically wrong.

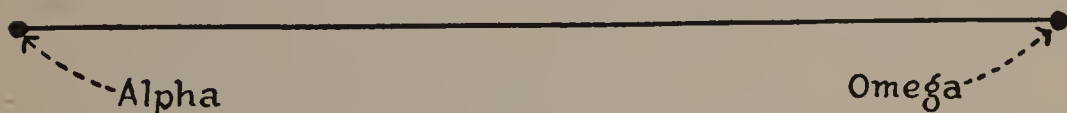
One of the first things to do in studying the Bible, not only to get at the messages of the individual books, but to see their setting in the Bible as a whole, and the aim and end toward which all tends, is to get and keep a bird's eye view of the outstanding facts of the Bible from its "**beginning**" to its "**end**." Then the minor facts, as they come before one, should fit themselves around these outstanding, central facts. Instead of confusion there will be harmony. **Instead of an aimless end there will be a GRAND, IMPOSING CLIMAX toward which all tends.**

The Scribes and Pharisees made "void the Word of God" substituting therefor human "tradition" (Mk. 7:13, Am. V.). As teachers, they were very popular with the people. Jesus was the master Teacher of all the ages, yet only a minority were pleased with His presentation of "the

Word of God." The faithful preacher or teacher of the Bible need not expect any more consideration than the Master received.

BIBLE STUDIES

Where shall we begin to study the Bible? Where the Bible begins. Where is that? Genesis 1:1. What are the first three words of Gen. 1:1? "In the beginning." Then that will make a good place to begin—"In the beginning." Let us represent this point, "In the beginning" with a dot at the left side of the page (See page 3) and call it Alpha.



Now where shall we stop studying the Bible? Where the Bible stops; that is, at **"the end"** (See the expression "Then cometh the end" in 1 Cor. 15:24-28, and see "the end" described in the book of Revelation). That is a fine place to stop—at **"the end."** Now we will represent **"the end"** by a dot on the right side of the page and call it Omega. Now between these two points **"In the beginning"** and **"then cometh the end,"** we will expect to find everything taking place that God has revealed to man concerning redemption. So we see that the things of redemption have a **"beginning"** and an **"end"** or completion.

Now we will connect these two dots with a straight line and build on this foundation line, **AN OUTLINE OF THE ENTIRE BIBLE** which will set before the eye, the great **cardinal climaxes** and **consummations in redemption**, as they have been revealed to man by God.

The Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ is the "Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending" of redemption.

"Thus saith the Lord the King of Israel, and his Redeemer the Lord of hosts; **I am the first, and I am the last;** and besides me **there is no God.**"

"I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the ending, saith the Lord, which is and which was and which is **to come,** the Almighty.

"I John, who also am your brother, and companion in tribulation, and in the kingdom and patience of Jesus Christ, was in the isle that is called Patmos, for the word of God, and for the testimony of Jesus Christ.

"I was in the Spirit on the Lord's day, and heard behind me a great voice, as of a trumpet,

Saying, **I am Alpha and Omega, the first and the last;** and, What thou seest, write in a book, and send it unto the seven churches. . . . And when I saw Him, I fell at His feet as dead. And He laid His right hand upon me, saying unto me, **Fear not; I am the first and the last:**

I am he that liveth, and was dead; and, behold, **I am alive for evermore, Amen;** and have the keys of hell and of death" (Isa. 44:6; Rev. 1:8-11; 17-18).

Read Genesis 1-2.

"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth . . . ¶ And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them . . . ¶ And the Lord God

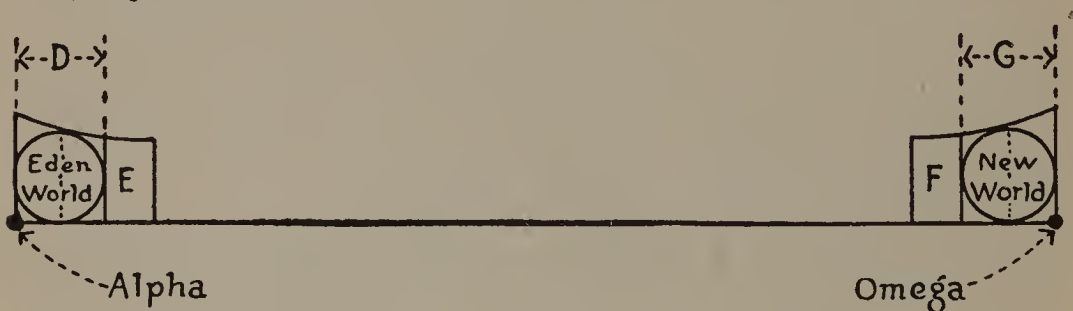
planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed.

And out of the ground made the Lord God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil. . . . And the Lord God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it.

And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat:

But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die." (Gen. 1:1; 2:6-27; 2:8-9; 15-17).

Here you have a record of the creation of the "heavens and the earth"—Eden with its beautiful garden and its glory, a perfect home for a perfect man and a perfect woman, living a life of perfect love both toward God and man. There was nothing wrong with the world nor with man when they left God's creative hand. Nothing has ever left God's creative hand, imperfect.



Let us represent the contents of the two chapters, Gen. 1-2 on our foundation line by two panels at Alpha and draw a circle inside to represent the Eden world and call it "D." See chart, page 4.

Read Genesis 3:

"Now the serpent was more subtle than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? . . . And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. . . . And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat. . . . Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee. And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast harkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field: In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return" (Gen. 3:1, 4-6, 13, 16-19).

"Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin" (Rom. 5:12).

The preceding Scripture records the entrance into the world, of Satan, sin and death. Let us represent this on the chart by a panel and call it "E."

Read Revelation 20.

"And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years . . . And the Devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever" (Rev. 20:2, 10).

This Scripture reveals that in the future, God will finally banish Satan, eternally, from this world. And with Satan will go sin and death. Represent this on the chart by the panel at "F."

Now read Revelation 21-22.

"And I saw a new heaven and a new earth; for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea . . . And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain; for **the former things are passed away**. And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. And he said unto me, **It is done**" (Rev. 21:1, 3-6).

Here you see that prophecy reveals that in the future God will make a "new heaven and a new earth." Let us represent Rev. 21-22 by two panels at Omega; draw a circle inside for the new world and call it "G."

We now have before us a bird's eye view of the entrance (E) and exit (F) of Satan and sin. We will trace the serpent's trail of sin from "the beginning" to "the end." In the Eden world there was no sin, no rebellion. A holy man was given the rulership of the perfect earth and required to govern it for God, as a little kingdom of heaven **on earth**. This was God's choice for man. God is a unit and has created and runs a universe. He purposed that every part of the kingdom of God, including this world, be free from sin and governed by the laws of heaven, so that all would be a holy unity in God's universe. But in Genesis 3 we found Satan, sin and death entering the scene. "An enemy" attacked the government and upset the rule of the heavens over the earth. Satan induced man to do that which God prohibited. Thus, man served the devil instead of God. God's purpose was to **MAINTAIN** on this earth, a kingdom run on the principles of heaven. **GOD'S PURPOSE HAS NEVER CHANGED**. God has undertaken a **WORK OF REDEMPTION** to bring the earth back under the government of heaven; and thus to bring to nought or destroy the work of Satan. Search your Bible entirely thru from the starting of sin (Gen. 3) to its "end" (Rev. 20), and you will find Scripture reveals that Satan and the great mass of mankind, **during this entire period**, are working together in sin and rebellion against God. God's purpose and these conditions **MAKE THE RESTORATION OF THE GOVERNMENT OF THE EARTH UNDER THE DIRECT GOVERNMENT OF GOD, A NECESSITY**.

Violation of law demands punishment. God's penalty against sin is death. "The soul that sinneth, it shall die." "The wages of sin is death" (Ezek. 18:4; Rom. 6:23).

A heaven and an earth, defiled by sin, have to be purged or renovated before they can remain in God's presence without being under condemna-

tion. See Rev. 20:11-15 where "the earth and the heaven" flee away from God's "face" on the day of judgment.

We thus see, that in any plan of redemption that completely places the earth back in a garden of Eden condition, and in a right relationship to God and to the rest of His Kingdom, **THREE CARDINAL EVENTS** must take place.

THE THREE CARDINAL CLIMAXES IN REDEMPTION

(1) **THE PENALTY FOR MAN'S SIN MUST BE PAID:** The death penalty against sin must be executed. God must uphold His moral law. If the sinner is to escape the death penalty, a substitute must be provided. This has been done—"Christ **died** (a substitute) for the ungodly" (Jno. 3:16; 1 Jno. 2:1-2; Rom. 5:6).

(2) **THE EARTH MUST BE PLACED BACK UNDER THE DIRECT GOVERNMENT OF GOD.** For about 6000 years, humanity has refused to govern the earth for God. Therefore, the King of kings must leave heaven, destroy God's enemies and set up a kingdom of heaven on this earth. "The government **SHALL BE** upon His shoulder; and His name shall be called . . . Counsellor, The mighty God . . . The Prince of Peace" (Isa. 9:6-7). He "**SHALL** reign in righteousness" (Isa. 32:1). "**HE MUST REIGN**, till He hath put **ALL ENEMIES** under His feet" (1 Cor. 15:24-28). "The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this" (Isa. 9:7). Who said so? **GOD SAID SO!** "O earth, earth, earth, hear the word of the Lord" (Jer. 22:29).

(3) **THE DEFILED HEAVEN AND EARTH MUST BE RENOVATED OR MADE NEW.** This is accomplished by God at "the end" (Rev. 21-22).

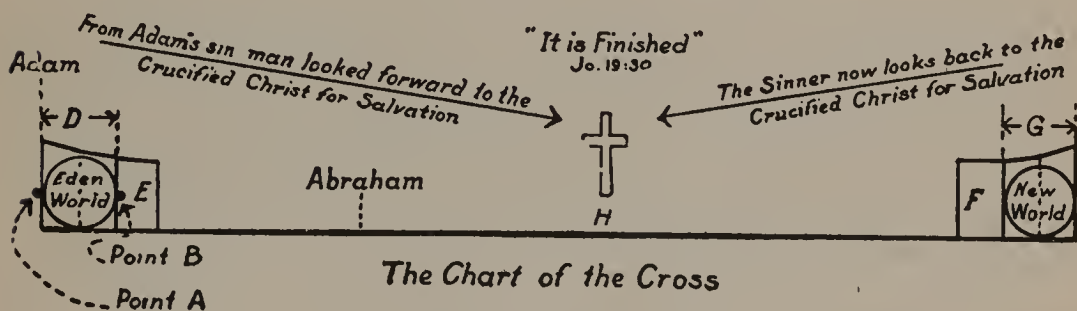
If you want to **KNOW** your Bible, fasten these three cardinal facts in your mind so that you will **never** forget them. **ALL SCRIPTURE CLUSTERS AROUND OR POINTS TO THE CONSUMMATION OF THESE THREE GREAT STEPS IN REDEMPTION.** We will take them up in their order. The paying of the penalty for sin climaxes in the death of Christ on the cross for the sin of the world.

Section 2.

CHRIST CRUCIFIED

GOD'S PLAN OF SALVATION: By **one act of one man**, (Adam and his fall), sin entered the world and has been transmitted to every one, so that by inheritance every one has a nature to sin. God sent **one other Man** into the world who by **one act** (Christ and His death on the cross), removed the **guilt** of sin from every one in the entire world who will accept (trust, believe or depend upon—Greek, believe into) that **sacri-ficial act** of Christ's shedding His **blood** on the cross, as the **redemption price paid**, that his sins might be forgiven.

Because of inherent Adamic sin, "All have sinned" and become separated from God—**lost**. Therefore, all **need** the Saviour. "Christ died for the ungodly." Christ, the one Person, His death, the one act—its purpose was to **save sinners**. This is God's plan of salvation. Adam, of the garden of Eden, headed man's condemnation. The "last Adam," of the garden of Gethsemane, headed man's redemption. God's government is in balance divine (1 Cor. 15:45; Rom. 5:12-19). Salvation is fair, reasonable and just. God is infinite in wisdom and never makes mistakes—infinite in justice, therefore, never unfair about anything. There is no excuse for your being lost. God has provided **ample redemption** for **YOU**.



Notice the design and the divine balance of the Bible as indicated in "The Chart of the Cross." See pages 3 and 4. Sin enters the world, as recorded in the third to the first chapter of the Bible (that is, Gen. 3. See E). Sin ends forever, as recorded in the third to the last chapter of the Bible (that is, Rev. 20, See F). The Bible, from its **third** to the first chapter (that is, Gen. 3) unto its **third** to the last chapter (that is, Rev. 20), is one continuous story of salvation—salvation—salvation for the sinner. **THE CENTRAL FACT IN SALVATION IS CHRIST CRUCIFIED**. Notice the first two chapters of the Bible (that is, Gen. 1-2, See D). Here we have a perfect earth. From Gen. 3 to Rev. 20 we have a defiled earth, but when the last two chapters of the Bible (that is, Rev. 21-22, See G) unfold the future, we find the defiled earth restored to perfection. **Redemption, when it is finished, restores the earth to God and is in balance divine.**

THE REDEEMER, A DIVINE BEING

Read the first four words in your Bible: "In the beginning **God**" (Gen. 1:1). Now **think!** The English language was unborn when God gave the Bible to man. This revelation was first given in Hebrew. Replacing the English word "God" by its Hebrew equivalent, we have "In the beginning **Elohim**." Now **think!** The time was "in the beginning." As yet, no earth, sun or man was created, but "**Elohim**" existed. Who was Elohim? The word "Elohim" is a uni-plural noun. The Hebrew "**Elohim bara**," (or "**bara Elohim**") when translated, is "**God created**." Elohim is plural, its verb "**bara**" is singular. The difficulty clears when we recognize that God or "Elohim" is one God in three Persons. Hence, the plural subject is given a singular verb. Attention is again called to the Trinity, in Gen. 1:26,27. "**And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness. . . . So God created man in His own image, in the image of God created He him; male and female created He them.**" The plural and the singular pronouns, referring to God, are each used **three** times—"us," "our," "our;" "his," "he," "he." That the Godhead consists of a Trinity of persons co-existing in a unity of life is revealed by the use of these pronouns. Christ confirmed the Trinity, "baptizing them in the name (not names) of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit" (Matt. 28:19). The wording and structure clearly set forth one God in three Persons. *Simeon ben Joachi, in his comment on the sixth section of Leviticus, says, "Come and see the mystery of the word 'Elohim'; there are **three degrees**, and each degree by itself **alone**, and yet, notwithstanding, they are all **one**, and **joined together in one**, and are **not divided** from each other." See Ainsworth: "He must be strangely prejudiced indeed who cannot see that the doctrine of a Trinity, and of a Trinity in unity, is expressed in the above words." Man, created in God's image, is also a trinity; body, soul and spirit (1 Thess. 5:23). The body, or house may lie in death while the spirit goes back to God who gave it. As with man, so with God, a three-fold person—each of the three capable of separation, each with special functions to perform, yet all three dependent each upon the other and requiring **all three** to make the one. From eternity—one God in three Persons: Father, Son and Holy Spirit. Jesus, the Son, as God, was "**in the beginning**" with God ("Elohim") (John 1:1-18, Gen. 1:1).

REDEMPTION WAS "ORDAINED" BEFORE THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD

See "Chart of the Cross," p. 7. **AFTER** the world was created, (see Point B), the triune God held a consultation concerning the creation of man—"Let us make man in our image after our likeness" (Gen. 1:26). The plural pronouns "us" and "our" refer to God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit. Point "A" represents a time **BEFORE** the world was created, **at which time**, God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Spirit held a consultation **concerning man's redemption**.

"For as much as ye know that ye were—redeemed—with the precious **blood** of Christ, as of a lamb **without blemish** and without spot; who verily was **FOREORDAINED BEFORE** the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you" (1 Pet. 1:18-20).

In all creation God provided abundantly **ahead** of time. He had water before fish, air before birds and a Saviour **BEFORE** there was ever

* Clarke's Com. Vol. 1, Pages 25, 26.

a sinner. When God made man with the power to sin, He at least knew mighty well ahead of time that man might sin. If he did he would need a Saviour. God provided a Saviour **ahead of time** in the second Person of the Trinity, the eternal Son of God, who was one of the Persons present and consulted concerning man's creation, and who was one of the Persons present and consulted concerning man's redemption, which was planned for or "ordained" **BEFORE** the world was made.

Years ago we were at the Mare Island Navy-yard in San Francisco harbor. Two old submarine boats were in dock. A hood-like affair reared itself up on the end of either boat. A marine was asked what this hood-like affair was for. The architect and designer of the boat had the boat all planned out ahead of time and knew how it would work under different conditions. He knew that if the boat was under water and the machinery refused to work that all on board would be lost and so he provided, **ahead of time**, a life-saving device, a compressed air tube, which would shoot men up thru the water to safety and life. The hood-like affair was the exterior end of this compressed air tube. In time of danger the men drew lots. The man who received the short lot voluntarily gave up his life that all the others might be saved. He stayed on board and ran the machinery of the compressed air tube. God, as the Master-Architect and Designer of all the ages, planned **ahead of time** a life-saving device or Saviour for sinners in "The Lamb slain from the foundation of the world." Before Christ came and was crucified, men **looked forward** and trusted that He would come and bear the punishment for their sins. After the cross, men **look back** and trust that He did come and die for their sins. See "Chart of the Cross" on page 7.

REVELATIONS CONCERNING "THE LAMB OF GOD"

There are thirty-nine books in the Old Testament and most of them contain one or more revelations concerning God's purpose and plan to send the Saviour into the world. All Old Testament ordinances of sacrifice were given by God to teach man, by object lesson, to look forward to the time when **THE SACRIFICE**, the Lamb of God, would come and bear the punishment for the sin of the world (Heb. 10:1-14).

From Adam to Abraham, God dealt personally on the same basis with the human race, and revealed to them the need, the ground and the means of salvation. The murderer, Cain, was instructed by the Redeemer as to the kind of sacrifice required by God for sin (Gen. 4:3-7). A blood offering was necessary, for death is the penalty for sin and "blood" speaks of death in substitution for the sinner. Cain refused to trust in and offer a sacrifice involving a blood offering. Nothing but a blood offering could properly typify the coming death of the Lamb of God for the sin of the world. "Without shedding of blood is no remission" of sins (Heb. 9:22). "The wages of sin is death." The penalty for sin is death, and until its penalty is paid, sin cannot be remitted. Abel sacrificed a lamb, in death, thus demonstrating that he had been instructed and trusted that the Lamb of God would come and bear the punishment for his sins (Gen. 4:2,4; Heb. 11:4; Jno. 1:29). Centuries afterward, God's prophet, Abraham, said, that "God (would) provide himself a **LAMB**" for the sacrifice (Gen. 22:8). "The Lord is not . . . willing that any should perish but that **all** should come to repentance" (2 Pet. 3:9). So God, thru the centuries, was teaching sinners to look forward to the time when Christ, the Lamb of God, would come and bear the punishment for their sins.

Centuries after Abraham's day, God again recurs to the revelations He had already made concerning "the Lamb," and details are added.

"The Lord spake unto Moses...saying...take to them **every man** a lamb...your lamb shall be **without blemish**, a **male** of the **first year**...ye shall keep it up until the **fourteenth** day of the (first) month and the whole assembly of the congregation of Israel shall kill it in the **evening**. And they shall **take of the blood** and **strike** it on the two side posts and on the upper door post of the houses...**it is the Lord's passover**. For I will pass thru the land of Egypt this night...I will execute judgment; **I am the Lord**. And the **blood** shall be to you for a token upon the houses where ye are; and **when I see the blood, I will pass over you**...And this day shall be unto you for a **memorial**; and ye shall keep it a feast to the Lord thruout your generations" (Ex. 12:1-14).

The Lord who spake unto Moses is the same Lord who later "came down from heaven" and was incarnated in a body of flesh as Jesus Christ, and who died on the cross as the "Lamb of God that taketh away the sin of the world." He is the only Lord there ever was or ever will be, whose business always has been and always will be, that of saving the sinner. Long before He ever "spake unto Moses," in His pre-incarnate days, He was one of the Trinity, who was present and consulted concerning man's **redemption before** the creation of the world. He was the Master Teacher of all the ages. As such, He used the object lesson of the **pass-over lamb** to teach men to trust in and look forward to the time when He would come, as God's Lamb, and die on the cross to bear the sin of the world. The passover lamb had to be (1) "Without blemish," indicating that the sin offering **had to be innocent** in order to substitute for the guilty; (2) A "male"—indicating the sex of the coming Saviour; (3) Of "the first year," indicating the Saviour would die in the prime of life; (4), (5), (6) The passover sacrifice was required to die at the **evening hour** on the **fourteenth day** of their **first month**—indicating and prophesying by type that when the Lamb of God came, He too would be sacrificed at the **evening hour** on the **fourteenth day** of their **first month**. JESUS DIED on the EXACT MONTH, DAY and HOUR—thus fulfilling the type. (Only those who stubbornly refuse truth and facts will remain blind to the fact that He is the sinner's Saviour.) (7) The Lamb had to be **killed**, because when he was offered as a substitute he must pay the penalty for sin, which was death. "The wages of sin is death." **Blood** symbolically speaks of death in substitution for the sinner. They trusted and believed in the **BLOOD** of the lamb and struck it on the two side posts and on the upper door post. When the Lord passed over executing judgment on sin, His All-seeing eye was not searching for the kind or degree of sinner the person was, but was searching for the **blood**. If they trusted in and depended upon and applied **the blood**, they were safe, for the Lord, who is the Judge of all the earth had said, "**When I see the blood I will pass over you.**"

GOD'S WORD TEACHES THAT SALVATION FOR THE SINNER IS DEPENDENT ON HIS TAKING REFUGE IN, OR TRUSTING UPON, OR RELYING ENTIRELY UPON THE BLOOD OF THE LAMB OF GOD. All thru the centuries, (until the Lamb of God died on the cross as "Christ our Passover" who was sacrificed for us, —1 Cor. 5:7), each year at the time of the passover, which was on the **first month** on the **fourteenth day** and at the **evening hour**, a lamb without blemish, a male of the first year was sacrificed and its blood applied. This "memorial" taught men to look forward to the coming and the death of the Messiah, the Lamb of God.

Some seven hundred years before Christ was born God revealed thru the great prophet, Isaiah, **WHAT THE CHRIST'S BUSINESS WOULD BE.** "The Lord hath laid on Him the iniquity of us all" (Isa. 53:6). Sin had entered the world by one act of one man, Adam and his fall, and God's plan of Salvation was that He would lay on one other Man, His own Son, the burden of bearing the punishment for the sin of the world. Possibly a clearer rendering of this Scripture from the Hebrew into the English would read: The Lord hath made to **strike on Him** the iniquity of us all. Isa. 53:4 states that He was "smitten of God." God strikes against sin by death, either against the sinner or against **THE SUBSTITUTE** and just as the blood of the Lamb was struck on the door posts, (Ex. 12:7), so God made to strike on Him (The Door, John 10:7), "the iniquity of us all." The sinner can escape the death penalty by turning to and trusting in the Lord Jesus Christ, the Substitute. "Who-soever believeth in Him shall receive remission of sins." "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved" (Acts 10:43; 16:31). Who says so? **God says so!**

Centuries before His birth, that is, the birth of His body or tent of flesh, God revealed thru the prophet, Micah, that when He came, this body or house would be born in the **city of Bethlehem** (Micah 5:2 with Matt. 2:4, 5). Every time Christmas comes round we memorialize the birth of the Saviour in the city of Bethlehem, commemorating the fulfillment of prophecies **made centuries ahead** of time. Every time we date a letter it is so many years and days after the **GREATEST EVENT THAT EVER OCCURRED ON THIS EARTH**, the birth of the world's Saviour.

"Thou shalt call His name Jesus for he shall save His people **from their sins"** (Matt. 1:21). He died to bear the punishment for sin. He arose from the grave—(Easter is a sacred memorial of His resurrection)—He now lives to deliver us from the power and practice of sin. "God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it" (1 Cor. 10:13). In times of temptation look to Jesus—trust Him to deliver you. He loves you. **He died to save you. He lives to keep YOU.**

Scripture sets forth that the Saviour was the God-man; that is, He was Deity united with humanity, so that **in His person**, He was perfect God and perfect man, both united in one Person. Man sinned, man had to die. Only the innocent could substitute for the guilty. God obtained an innocent man by sending His Son down from heaven and providing a body of flesh for Him, which was brought forth by a virgin birth method (Jno. 6:38; Heb. 10:5; Lu. 1:31-35; Matt. 1:17-23). The Saviour was God in the person of the Son of God. God is spirit. Jesus had life and was pre-existent as God's Son back in eternity and was a party to creation. Later He was made flesh and dwelt among us (Jno. 1:1-14; 17:24). He is referred to in Scripture as the Seed or Eternal Life (Gen. 22:16-18; Gal. 3:16; 1 Jno. 1:1-4). It is the mother function to embody the seed. He was the Eternal Life (Seed) and had "life in Himself" (Jno. 5:26), and **therefore needed no human nor earthly father.** What was needed was that the Seed be embodied. "A body hast thou prepared." So the Holy Spirit and the Virgin, Mary, combine, functioning in motherhood or in the embodiment of the Seed. He tented on earth during "the days of His flesh" in this body (Lu. 1:31-35; Jno. 1:1, 14; Heb. 5:7). His Deity made Him sinless. He was the "Lamb without blemish." He was the **ONLY** sinless Man there ever was, and therefore

the **ONLY** Person **there ever was** who could offer His **blood** in substitution for the sins of the guilty world. "There is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved" (Acts. 4:12).

In the account of creation, the Spirit of God moved or brooded over cold, inanimate matter, and Adam, a living man came forth, **in God's image** (Gen. 1:1-27). The same Spirit of God came upon and overshadowed the virgin Mary, and the Christ child came forth **in God's image**. ("He that hath seen me hath seen the Father.") The Spirit of God that brought forth life from inanimate matter could certainly move over the generative organs of a living woman and bring forth life. The God that created the whole body could certainly create or reproduce all or any part of it at will. **"With God all things are possible."**

Before the Saviour came to earth to be incarnated or provided with a "body" of flesh, He pre-existed with the Father (Jno. 17:5, 24); He was the Redeemer, who dealt with Cain (Gen. 4:1-15), who appeared unto Abraham (Gen. 18:1) and spake unto Moses (Ex. 12:1). When on earth He was this same divine Person, yet united with a body of flesh or incarnate. He, therefore, well knew that He was the Lamb of God ordained from the foundation of the world to be slain for the sins of the world. In His pre-incarnate days He "spake unto Moses" and instituted the passover as a "memorial" of this event, which was to occur in His life (Ex. 12:1-13).

HIS "FATHER'S BUSINESS"

From Christ's birth and babyhood until He was introduced as "the Lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the world," **just one event** of His life is mentioned and **this was deep with significance**. When His body of flesh was twelve years old, He went up to Jerusalem to keep the feast of **THE PASSOVER**. For centuries the chosen people of God, annually gathered in the Holy City from all parts of the world. There they kept the **PASSOVER** as a "memorial" (Ex. 12:12-14), which looked forward to and was prophetic of the "fulness of the time," when the "Lamb of God" would come to take "away the sin of the world." At this time and at this **PASSOVER**, Christ said, "Wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business?" (Lu. 2:49). At or near the times of the **passover**, Jesus made significant remarks. As Deity, and as the Lord who instituted the passover as "a memorial," He well knew He had been ordained before the foundation of the world, to be the world's Saviour and that it was **His business**, as the Lamb of God, to "bear" the punishment for the sins of the world (1 Pet. 1:18-20; 1 Jno. 4:10; 1 Pet. 2:24).

Later, Jesus declared, "My meat is . . . to FINISH His work" (Jno. 4:34). God sent Him into the world "to be the propitiation for our sins" (1 Jno. 4:10). Since the punishment for sin **demanded death**, the Saviour **had to die** in order "to finish His work." "Christ died for the ungodly" (Rom. 5:6). Therefore, **DO NOT LET ANYONE** deprive you of the right to salvation that Jesus bought for you with His own blood (Acts 20:28). (Blood symbolically speaks of death in substitution for the sinner.) Accept salvation in God's appointed way (See Jno. 3:16, 18, 36). "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved" (Acts 16:31). Who says so? **GOD SAYS SO!**

Death is the only way sin's penalty can be paid. "Good works" is not death nor "blood" which speaks of death. Therefore, it is useless for you to look to any of your "good works" to cancel the penalty for past, present or future sin. Look to the Redeemer and be **saved by faith in the blood of Jesus Christ FOR a life of good WORKS.** "Ye know

that ye were . . . redeemed . . . **WITH** the precious **BLOOD** of Christ" (1 Peter 1:18-20). "Unto him that loved us, and **WASHED US FROM OUR SINS IN HIS OWN BLOOD**" (Rev. 1:5). The blood represents or stands for the life (Lev. 17:11). We **KNOW** that sinners are "redeemed" and "washed" from their sins by "the precious blood of Christ;" **never** by "good works." "Good works" is what a man is **saved for** and should be the **fruitage** of a redeemed life. To be saved, look to Jesus! Trust entirely upon Him! "Christ Jesus whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation **thru faith in His blood**" (Rom. 3:24-25).

"THE LAMB OF GOD"

Jesus was the Saviour that "Moses and the prophets" had revealed would come. People were expecting Him (Jno. 1:41; 4:25-26). For centuries they had been keeping the **PASSOVER**, as a "memorial." They well knew the significance of the lamb and his substitutional death and sacrificial blood for the sinner. **At last He had come.** The time of the yearly sacrifice of the **passover** lamb was at hand (Jno. 2:13) and Jesus was introduced to all the world as—"the **Lamb of God**, which taketh away the sin of the world." Sin had entered the world by one act of one man, Adam and his fall, and now here was the one other Person who, by one act, Christ and His death on the cross, was to **BEAR AWAY** the sin of the world **for everyone who would BELIEVE** on Him (Jno. 1:29; 3:18, 36).

HIS "HOUR"

At the marriage feast, Jesus made peculiar, yet significant remarks concerning His "**hour**" (Jno. 2:1-11). "Mine hour is not yet come." "The Lord spake unto Moses" and instructed him that the passover lamb must die on the **EVENING HOUR** of the fourteenth day of their first month (Ex. 12: 1-13). The Lord knew that He would come down from heaven and be incarnated as Son of man and that He would fulfill the passover type, dying in the **EVENING HOUR** of the **fourteenth day** of their **first month** which was **THE HOUR** of the passover lamb. When Jesus used this expression, "Mine hour is not yet come," the "Passover was at hand" (Jno. 2:13). In Jno. 1:29 Jesus had been introduced as "the Lamb of God" and He accepted the title and now in John 2:1-11, as the passover was drawing near, it is clearly evident that He had in mind the evening hour, "mine hour," when He, as the Lamb, was to die. Jesus never referred to "mine hour" except at or near the time of the **passover**.

"HIS LIFE A RANSOM"

A few days before His death, Jesus declared, "The Son of man came . . . to **give His LIFE** a **RANSOM** for **many**" (Matt. 20:28). In Scripture, the sinner is represented as being in bondage to sin and under sentence of death (Jno. 3:18, 36; Eph. 2:1). The **RANSOM** is the **price** required to be paid before the prisoner will be set free. And since the prisoner is under sentence of death, the one who redeems, must **give His own life** in **SUBSTITUTION** for the condemned prisoner—"give His life a ransom" for the sinner.

HIS "LIFE FOR THE SHEEP"

"I lay down **MY LIFE** for the sheep" (Jno. 10:15). The black, the defiled, the "ungodly" sheep—yes; Jesus, the Good Shepherd, loved them even unto death. "Unto Him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in His **OWN BLOOD**" (Rev. 1:5). Jesus was repeatedly telling them that He was going to give His life for the sins of the world.

"THAT" "ye may BELIEVE that I AM HE"

"Now I tell you **before** it come, **that**, when it is come to pass, **YE MAY BELIEVE that I AM HE**" (Jno. 13:19). Jesus was anxious that they "believe" in Him, for by faith in Him they passed from death unto life and God was not willing that they should perish (Jno. 14:1; 6:47; 2 Pet. 3:9). God was **SO unwilling** for the sinner to perish, that He gave "His only begotten Son," the object of His heart's choicest love, that He might **TAKE THE SINNER'S PLACE** at God's judgment bar (Jno. 12:31) and **die IN THE SINNER'S STEAD**. "For God **SO LOVED** the world, that He **gave** His only begotten Son, that whosoever **BELIEVETH** in Him, should **NOT** perish but **HAVE EVERLASTING LIFE**" (Jno. 3:16). The way to escape perishing, is to **BELIEVE** on Him. **DO IT NOW!** There is danger and death in delay! "Now is the accepted time."

"THE HOUR IS COME"

At length the time had fully come for Jesus to "lay down" His "life for the sheep." It was the time for the sacrifice of the **passover** lamb. Jesus, during His public ministry, passed thru four passover times. (It was against the Jewish law to minister before one was about thirty years of age. Hence, Christ's public ministry did not begin until this time.) At the first passover time, Jesus said, "Mine hour is **not yet** come" (Jno. 2:4). At **the last** passover time, the one on which it was determined that He should die, He announced, "The hour **is** come" (Jno. 12:23), the hour that He Himself indicated when He, as Lord, spake unto Moses some fifteen centuries before and instructed Moses to have them kill the lamb on the fourteenth day of their first month, at "the evening hour." This was the **last** passover time that was of merit or significance, for when "Christ our Passover" was sacrificed for us on that exact month, day and hour, the type was fulfilled in His offering of Himself for sin "**once**" "**for all**," "**forever**" (Heb. 10:1-14).

The finished work of Christ: After a mock trial, they led the innocent Lamb of God, whom they could not convict of sin and in whom they could find no fault, out to Calvary's hill. This hill had the appearance of a human skull, which spoke of human wisdom, which was so utterly devoid of reason as to crucify the Son of God, who loved them (vile sinners though they were) and came to die that He might bear their punishment for them. Men are still crucifying the Son of God afresh and rejecting Him, and are going out into eternal night without hope and without God. "They crucified Him," and crowned the King of kings and Lord of lords with thorns. Thorns and thistles were part of the curse and penalty against sin and Jesus bore it all in substitution for the guilty (Gen. 3:17-18). The Lamb of God hung on the cross suspended between heaven and earth, a Mediator between a Holy God and an ungodly world, that sinners might be "reconciled to God by the death of His Son." They struck His gentle hands thru with the cruel nails—hands that had tenderly ministered to the poor, the blind, the oppressed and the fallen. They thrust His side thru with the cold jagged spear which pierced the tenderest heart that ever beat in a body of flesh. They nailed His feet thru with the cruel spikes—feet that had trodden over the old Judean hills and down by the old lake side of Galilee, ever seeking the lost and ministering to the needy. This was the Lamb of God who died for the ungodly.

As He looked into the face of those who had scourged Him, and mocked Him, and spit upon Him and crucified Him, He prayed to His great

Father-God: "Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do." Jesus is anxious that the vilest sinner shall receive forgiveness at the hands of God—so anxious that He took the sinner's place and died in his stead. He said, "This is **my blood** of the new covenant which is shed for many for the remission (forgiveness) of sins" (Matt. 26:28).

They offered Jesus the vinegar and He said unto them, "**IT IS FINISHED** . . . and He bowed His head and gave up the ghost." "It is finished." . . . JESUS said, "It is finished." That settles the subject for time and eternity. What was finished? Why, His "hour" had come; the Lamb, ordained **from before** the foundation of the world to be slain, had given His life for the life of the world. "**It is finished.**" What was finished? God hath made to strike on Him the iniquity of us all. "**It is finished.**" What was finished? "Wist ye not that I must be about my Father's business?" "**It is finished.**" "I lay down my life for the sheep." "**It is finished.**" "My flesh which I will give for the life of the world." "**It is finished.**" "I am the Good Shepherd, the Good Shepherd giveth His life for the sheep." "**It is finished.**" The Son of Man had given "His life a **ransom**" for sinners. "**It is finished.**" "Jesus paid it **all**." "God was in Christ reconciling the world unto Himself, not charging men's transgressions to their account" (2 Cor. 5:19), but charging them to the account of the Lamb of God who at the judgment bar (Jno. 12:31), "bare our sins in His own body on the tree . . . by whose stripes ye were healed" (1 Pet. 2:24). "**It is finished.**" "Jesus paid it all." What was finished? The Lamb of God had taken away the sin of the world. "It is finished!" "**It is finished!**" "**IT IS FINISHED!**" "Jesus paid it all." "Go ye into all the world" and "preach the gospel." **PREACH IT! TEACH IT! TELL IT WHEREVER YOU GO!**

It is the **BLOOD** of the Lamb that maketh an atonement for the soul. Sin separates a man from God. "We were reconciled to God **by the death** of His Son," who paid the penalty for our sin in our place and stead (Rom. 5:10). The **blood** makes an at-one-ment (atonement) for the sinner. "Unto Him that loved us and loosed or washed us **from our sins** in His own **blood**" (Rev. 1:5). "Christ Jesus whom God set forth to be a propitiation (substitute sacrifice) **thru faith** in His **blood**" (Rom. 3:24-25). The **blood** of Jesus Christ, His Son (when actually trusted or believed in or depended upon), cleanseth us from **all sin** (1 Jno. 1:7). "Justified (saved) **by His blood.**" (Rom. 5:9). "**Believe** on the Lord Jesus Christ and **thou shalt** be saved." "Whosoever believeth in Him **SHALL** receive remission (forgiveness) of sins" (Acts 10:43). Who says so? **God says so.** Depend upon it. **Trust** in it. **Rest absolutely** upon it as God's **eternal truth** "and thou shalt be saved."

"It is Finished"



"Having made peace through the Blood of His Cross"
Jno. 19:30; Col. 1:20

"Jesus paid it all
All to Him I owe;
 Sin had left a crimson stain,
 He washed it white as snow!"

"What can wash away my sin?
Nothing but the **blood** of Jesus;
 What can make me whole again?
Nothing but the **blood** of Jesus."

"There is a fountain filled with **blood**
 Drawn from Immanuel's veins;
 And sinners, plunged beneath that flood,
Lose all their guilty stains."

"Whosoever (or everyone that) believeth in Him shall receive remission (or forgiveness) of sins" (Acts 10:43). "Thou your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow" (Isa. 1:18). Who says so? God says so. "Salvation belongeth to Jehovah." He disposes of it as He pleases. "Who shall lay anything to the charge of God's elect?" "It is God that justifieth" (Rom. 8:33-34).

"On a hill far away stood an old rugged cross,
 The emblem of suff'ring and shame,
 And I love that old cross where the dearest and best
 For a world of lost sinners was slain.

Chorus:

So I'll cherish the old rugged cross
 Till my trophies at last I lay down;
 I will cling to the old rugged cross,
 And exchange it some day for a crown.

Oh, that old rugged cross, so despised by the world,
 Has a wondrous attraction for me,
 For the dear Lamb of God left His glory above,
 To bear it to dark Calvary.

In the old rugged cross, stained with blood so divine,
 A wondrous beauty I see,
 For 'twas on that old cross Jesus suffered and died,
 To pardon and sanctify me."

—Rev. Geo. Bennard.

This great, cardinal climax in redemption is now an accomplished fact. All Scripture relating to **SACRIFICE**, either looks **forward to** or **backward to** and **CLIMAXES** in Christ's death on the cross, for the sin of the world.

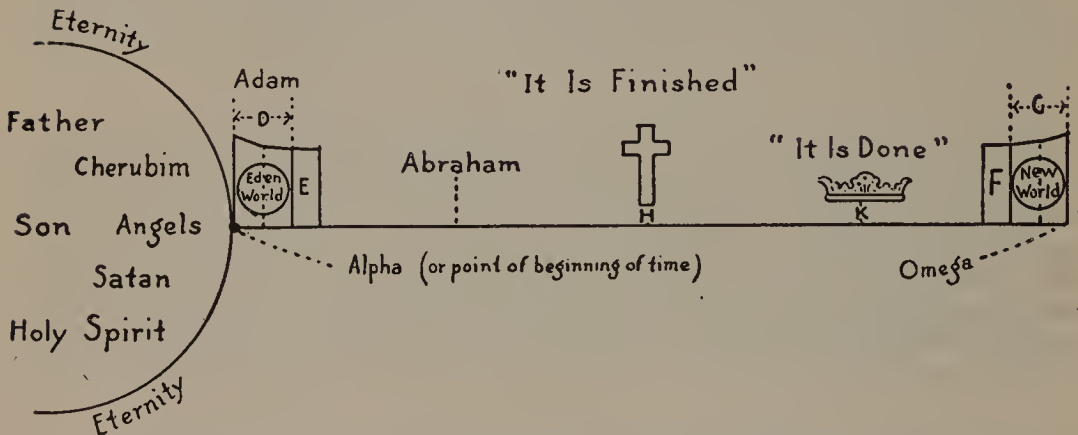
STUDIES: All Old Testament prophecies concerning sacrifice, point forward to the **Sacrifice**, the death of "the Lamb of God which taketh away the sin of the world." Compare Gen. 3:21 with Isa. 61:10 and Lu. 15:17-24 and Rom. 3:21-26 and Rev. 7:9-14. Compare Gen. 4:1-15 with Heb. 9:22. Compare Gen. 22:8 with Jno. 1:29. Compare Ex. 12:1-13 with 1 Cor. 5:7. Compare Lev. 16 with Heb. 8-11. Compare Num. 19 with 1 Pet. 1:2; 1 Jno. 1:7-9. Compare Deut. 16:1-8 with Jno. 12:1, 23; 19:30. Compare Deut. 18:15-18 with Jno. 6:14; 12:49; Acts 3:20-24 and notice the word, "Prophet." Compare Joshua 2:9-21; 6:17 with Rev. 1:5 and Gen. 9:12-17 and notice the word "token." Compare Judges

13:16-23 with Jno. 19:16-18 and notice the word "altar." Compare Ruth 4:16-22 with Matt. 1:1-17 and notice that David is the ancestor of the Christ. Compare 2 Sam. 11:1-12:23 and Ps. 51 with Lu. 24:47 and Eph. 1:6-7. Compare 1 Kings 8:46-50 with 1 Jno. 1:8-9. Compare 2 Kings 5:1-19 with Matt. 8:1-4 and 1 Jno. 1:7. Compare 1 Chron. 1:1-28, 34; 2:1-15; 3:1-16 with Lu. 3:23-38. Notice that a record is kept thru the centuries, tracing the ancestry of the Christ back to Adam, son of God. Compare 2 Chron. 20:20 and Gen. 15:6 and Isa. 26:3-4 with Jno. 3:16 and Jas. 1:6 and Heb. 11. Compare Ezra 6:19-22 with Matt. 26:2-29. Compare Neh. 9:15 with 1 Cor. 10:4 and Jno. 4:6-14; 6:22-51. Compare Job 13:18 with Rom. 1:17; 5:1 and Job 19:25 with Jno. 14:19. Compare Ps. 49:15 with 1 Cor. 15:20-57 and Ps. 22:1, 16 with Matt. 27:46, 35. Compare Isa. 53:5 with 1 Pet. 2:24 and Isa. 53:7-9 with Acts 8:32-35 and Isa. 53:10-11 with Jno. 16:21; 17:1; Rom. 3:23-26 and Isa. 53:12 with Lu. 22:37. Old Testament sacrificial truth climaxes in the fifty-third chapter of Isaiah.

From Leviticus 1-7, Genesis 15:9-10 and John 2:14, we see that the ordinances of the Lord required that **certain kinds** of animals be offered in sacrifice. The different animals symbolized different angles of the sacrificial work of the Christ: the lamb spoke of the innocent suffering for the guilty; the goat spoke of the substitutionary work of the sacrifice, etc. They all pointed forward, prophetically, to the time when **the sacrifice**, the Lamb of God, would come and take away the sin of the world. The Lamb of God is the **only** Sacrifice that ever took away sin (Heb. 10:4-14; 1 Pet. 2:24). See "God's Plan of Salvation," p. 7.

Section 3

GOD'S KINGDOM BEFORE THE WORLD WAS "MADE"



Let us go back to our chart outline of the Bible. Was any one or were any beings in existence **before** the point, "Alpha" or **before** the time, "In the beginning?" Yes! God. How do we know? Scripture states that "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth" (Gen. 1:1). Therefore, God existed **back** in eternity and **before** the point of time "in the beginning" and **before** the heavens or the earth was created. But who is God? As we have seen (page 8) in Gen. 1:1, the Hebrew word "Elohim" is translated God. And "Elohim" is the uni-plural, Hebrew noun, used to designate God as a Triune Being—God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit. "God is a trinity of Persons co-existing in a unity of complemental, counterpartal Being and Life"—Dr. J. N. Wright. Therefore, Father, Son and Holy Spirit each existed back in eternity **before** any other being existed. See this indicated in the "eternity" circle before the point "Alpha" on the Chart; p. 18. Did any other beings come into existence **between** the time above referred to as "back in eternity" and the time, "In the beginning?" Yes. Who? Cherubim, Satan and angels were created and were in existence. And Satan and certain angels were in a fallen and rebellious condition. How do we know?

(1) God ordained a Saviour **before** the foundation of the world to destroy the work of Satan (1 Pet. 1:16-20; 1 Jno. 3:8). This indicates that Satan was in existence as a rebel before the world of Gen. 1:3-2:3 was made.

(2) "Thou shalt not" (Gen. 2:16, 17). This is clearly a prohibition against yielding to a temptation of the **evil one**, whom God recognized as being **in existence**, as a rebel, **at man's advent**. Hence, the issuing of the command indicates the existence of Satan, as a rebel, **before** the days of Adam.

(3) That Satan existed in a state of rebellion is proven by the fact that he, at once, tempted and seduced man, and this in the face of God's expressed prohibition (Gen. 2:16, 17).

(4) When God made the firmament on the second day (Gen. 1:6-8), it was not pronounced "good" as was the rule. See the expression, "it

was good" in the account of creation (Gen. 1:3-31). This seems to be, because the air (heavenlies) is an abode of Satan and his evil hosts of spirit beings (Eph. 6:12). This failure to specifically pronounce the expanse of air as "good" would indicate that **at this time** (before man's creation) Satan, with certain angels, was in rebellion.

"And angels that kept not their own principality, but left their proper habitation. He hath kept in everlasting bonds under darkness unto the judgment of the great day" (Jude 6). "For if God spared not angels when they sinned, but cast them down to hell, and committed them to pits of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment" (2 Pet. 2:4, Am. V.). See Rev. 12:7-9.

As the British Government has prison houses where the criminals await judgment, so God's government has prison houses where His rebels await judgment. Ireland is within the Kingdom of Great Britain; she maintained a state of rebellion for a long time; yet Ireland, during this time has been under the British government. Satan and his rebellious kingdom are within the sphere of the Kingdom of God; yet Satan only moves within such limits as God, as Sovereign, permits (Job 2:6, 7; Rev. 12:7-9). The work of redemption does not cease until all rebellion (celestial and terrestrial) is subdued forever (1 Cor. 15:24-28).

(5) That Satan was in rebellion before man's advent, is proven by the fact that in the temptation and seduction of man, Satan was cursed (to an ultimate, eternal doom) **without a hearing**—"because thou hast done **this**." Adam and Eve had a hearing and chance; not so with Satan. God is no respecter of persons. This would indicate that Satan was a rebel "from of old" and had had his chance to repent and refused, and maliciously interfered with God's government of the earth by man. This last act of rebellion with its fearful, far-reaching consequences on earth and in heaven, was Satan's **dead line**. It was his **last chance**. It sealed his doom, which was, evidently, not sealed before. †Every lost person has his chance, but rebellion, persisted in, takes one across the "dead line" where the chance is **gone forever**. Every lost life, just as that of Satan, at some place passes beyond the pale of mercy, and ultimate death results; that is, eternal separation from God under an eternal curse.

Angels followed Satan in rebellion (Eph. 6:12; Matt. 25:41).

They, as Satan, were free moral agents or they could not have rebelled against God's government. Hell was made for the devil and his angels (Matt. 25:41). Hell is one of God's prisons for rebels, and shows they are never out from under the sovereignty of God.

Cherubim acted as custodians, as it were, in God's government (Gen. 3:24). The fact that they were at once on the scene, indicates that they existed before man. So before man's advent, we find God with a government of spirit beings, who had to do with heaven and earth. See "the eternity circle" on the chart, p. 18.

At the resurrection, man's body is transformed into a spiritual body and these spiritual, redeemed children of God have a life relationship to this earth (Philip. 3:20-21; 1 Cor. 15:42-58). "We shall also reign with him" (2 Tim. 2:12).

The two remaining cardinal climaxes in redemption [(2) and (3) of page 6] are **YET TO BE ACCOMPLISHED**. They are **known ahead of time** by revelation, **just as** Christ's death was known ahead of time. As the Saviour cried forth from the cross, "It is finished" when the sacrifice for the sin of the world was made, so there comes forth from the **throne** in heaven, a cry, "It is done" when the Redeemer takes over the government of the world and becomes King. See "K" "Chart of the Cross" p. 18. The crowning of the Redeemer, as King, over the earth, is the climax in God's program to re-establish the rule of heaven over the earth.

†Every living "unbeliever" is lost, now. "He that believeth not is condemned **already**" (Jno. 3:18, 36). Death closes and ends all chance to be saved. "It is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment" (Heb. 9:27).

Section 4

CHRIST CROWNED KING

or

The Rule of Heaven Over the Earth

"Thou madest him (man) a little lower than the angels; thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands" (Heb. 2: 7).

"God created man in His own image . . . male and female created He them . . . and God said unto them . . . replenish the earth, and **subdue it: and have dominion . . . over every living thing that moveth upon the earth**" (Gen. 1:27, 28.)

Now, how would Adam be expected to govern or exercise dominion over the earth? Govern it for God in righteousness and true holiness, and in obedience to Him, who placed the earth under his charge.

Satan quickly induced Adam to rebel—to do what God prohibited being done on earth. The government of heaven over the earth was upset. "An enemy hath done this." The Scripture teaches that "the world" from that day to this has been governed, in sin and rebellion against God, by men under the sway of Satan. "All have sinned." "There is none righteous, no, not one." God has never had a righteous man on earth to govern it for Him, except the Lord Jesus Christ. And the unrighteous "world" would not have this righteous Man to rule over them (Lu. 19:14; Jno. 19:15). Neither will they now. Certain kings, as David, have ruled better than others. Humanity has been benefited thereby, but never blessed as in Eden. God's purpose to have a rule of heaven over the earth has never changed and **WILL NEVER ALTER** until the earth is **AGAIN UNDER** the complete, direct government of God. Redemption does **not stop at the cross** but includes the final banishment of all sin and rebellion—the restoration of the earth to an "Eden" condition.

THE EARTH'S SINFUL CAREER

Man, driven from Eden's flowers to "the world's" "thorns," multiplied and separated into two diverging streams, the "sons of God" and "the daughters of men." See Genesis 6-8. The former under the government of God, a righteous government; the latter under Satan's rebellious government, an unrighteous government. The "holy seed" did not remain separated, but mingled with "the children of the wicked one," until "every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was **ONLY EVIL CONTINUALLY**" (Gen. 6:5). "An enemy hath done this." **Back of all sin** lies the serpent, Satan, whom God charges with deceiving "the whole world" (Rev. 12:9). Thru the years, God's purpose to re-establish a kingdom of heaven on earth seemed forgotten. But "He is faithful that promised" and the vile, degraded race, the product of Satan, was finally destroyed by the judgment of the Flood when their iniquity was "full." Noah alone "found grace in the eyes of the Lord." As God started the world off with Adam, one righteous man, so He again starts the world off under Noah to be governed for God. Satan soon seduces Noah who becomes drunken. A drunken man has a muddled mind and

is unfit to govern self or others. Noah quickly fell, as did Adam and started the world off in sin. From a drunken start, the course of the race soon consummates in the rebellion and idolatry of the city and tower of Babel. (Babel literally means confusion—a normal consequence of drunkenness.) Satan again succeeded in upsetting the government of God (Gen. 6-11). The race forsook God and served Satan and worshiped idols. "Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools" (Rom. 1:21-22). "They did not like (or refused) to retain God in their knowledge," so "**God gave them up** unto vile affections"; "**God also gave them up** to uncleanness thru the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonor their own bodies" (Rom. 1:21-32).

The city and tower of confusion (Babel) is the seed bed of the Bible prophecies concerning "Babylon" (Isa. 13-14; Jer. 50-51; Rev. 17-18). Search the Scriptures and history and you will find that from this "city" and "tower" (commercial and religious centers), seeds of corruption spread over the earth, varying in their degree of growth and increase, until at the end of this age, conditions will again become like they were in the days of Noah. "The earth" will be "**CORRUPT** before God" (The Son of God says so, Matt. 24:37-39, and context with Gen. 6-9). "The harvest of the earth" will then be "ripe" (Rev. 14:15). And the Lord who was King at the Flood (Ps. 29:10) again comes, as at the Flood, "taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ" (2 Thess. 1:8). Babylon, in Bible language, represents the cities of Satan and sin, as opposed to the "New Jerusalem," the city of God. In God's program of redemption "Babylon" will eventually be destroyed and the city of God established (Rev. 17-18; 21-22). Babylon, in Scripture, is symbolized by an evil woman. When Babylon's sin is "full," she will come "in remembrance before God" and "the judgment of the great whore" will occur. "Mystery, Babylon the Great, the **MOTHER OF HARLOTS** and **ABOMINATIONS** of the Earth" "is fallen." As Noah was drunken with the blood of the grapes, so "the great whore" is "drunken with the blood of the saints"—therefore, unfit to rule; so both alike fall before God (Rev. 16-19).

Up to the time of Babel, "the whole earth was of one language" (Gen. 11:1). A condition of unity was still present. But man willed to rebel and oppose God. Man **willed** and God **shalled**. If men will be rebels, God **gives them up** (Rom. 1:21-28) and they take the trail of sin, unrestrained, as it were, and reap the consequences. Instead of further unity, "from thence did the Lord **scatter** them abroad upon the face of all the earth." "God did confound their language, that they" could "not understand one another's speech." **THUS, AT THIS TIME, ‡THE DIFFERENT NATIONS WERE BORN.** The different nations, in confusion (Babel), spread over the earth opposing each other and God. God, "in times past suffered **all nations** to walk in their own ways" (Acts 14:16). From that time on man's sin has kept and Scripture reveals it will keep the world in disorder and degradation, until God restores unity and righteousness in the "Kingdom Age." See pp. 43-45.

The Gentiles, or nations ("the world," see pp. 20, 104) chose to **remain** under Satan's sinful dominion. God's foreknowledge enabled Him to look down the centuries and see that they would **NEVER**, as nations,

‡After searching thousands of pages of history and the best authorities, we find that these nations unquestionably had their origin at this time. Statements made to the contrary by indiscreet "scholars" are without any proper foundation of facts. See this subject in Vol. 2 of this work.

turn back to God, but would persist in sin until "the end" (Gen. 15:16; Dan. 9:26; Rev. 4:20). The New Testament opens, setting forth that the nations were **then still** under Satan's dominion (Lu. 4:1-13). Keep these facts in mind in anticipation of the New Testament revelations concerning "the kingdoms of this world" and their ultimate "end."

All thru the centuries the history of each of the nations has always been a history of disorder, corruption, final degradation, and disintegration; a record of lust and pleasures of the flesh, greed, oppression, hate, war and bloodshed; a refusal to worship God or to acknowledge His revelation to man thru the Bible or to observe His holy laws. Do you think God is going to allow this condition on earth to forever mock His holy throne in heaven? This is the system referred to in Scripture as "the world," "the nations," or "Babylon" that the Son of God destroys when He re-establishes the kingdom of heaven on earth (Rev. 4:19). This is "the world" that the modernist says is "evoluted" and that God says is devil-looted. These views are diametrically opposed to each other. One of them is necessarily wrong. "The Word of our God shall stand forever."

After the sin of Babel and the birth and scattering of "the nations," there is no record that God dealt further with any of these nations until the call of Abraham (Gen. 12:1-3). The Scriptures indicate that during these centuries idolatry prevailed.

"And Joshua said unto all the people, Thus saith Jehovah, the God of Israel, Your fathers dwelt of old time beyond the River, even Terah, the father of Abraham, and the father of Nahor: and **they served other gods**" (Josh. 24:2, Am. V.).

"And saying, Sirs, why do ye these things? We also are men of like passions with you, and preach unto you that ye should turn from these vanities unto the living God, which made heaven, and earth, and the sea, and all things that are therein:

Who in times past suffered all nations to walk in their own ways" (Acts 14:15-16).

"They did not like to retain God in their knowledge" and so "God . . . gave them up" etc. (Rom. 1:26-28). This is God's record of sinful man's past history. *Profane history confirms this.

Had God forgotten his purpose to re-establish a rule of heaven over the earth? No! God's purpose has never changed, but as man's position has altered, God's method of dealing to set up this kingdom has altered to meet man's changing conditions. "The Gentiles . . . followed not after righteousness" (Rom. 9:30). **THE BASE CONDUCT OF THE GENTILES** would justify God in setting the nations aside as instruments to govern the earth for Him; so God **chose A NATION, THE JEWS**.

"For thou art an holy people unto the Lord thy God; the Lord thy God hath chosen thee to be a special people unto himself, above all people that are upon the face of the earth" (Deut. 7:6). "For thou didst **separate them** from among all the people of the earth, **to be** thine inheritance" (1 Kings 8:53). "Thou art become the people of the Lord thy God. Thou shalt therefore obey the voice of the Lord thy God" (Deut. 27:9-10).

*Search the records of the monuments and you will find that thru these periods of the human race, mankind was in idolatry, having forsaken the Lord, or Jehovah, to worship and serve idols. The world was in darkness.

"Search the scriptures" and notice how God condemns idolatry. True

THE CALL OF THE JEWS TO SET UP A RIGHTEOUS KINGDOM

"Now the Lord had said unto Abram, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and from thy father's house, unto a land that I will show thee: and I will make of thee a great nation, and I will bless thee, and make thy name great; and thou shalt be a blessing; And I will bless them that bless thee, and curse him that curseth thee; and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed" (Gen. 12:1-3).

ABRAHAMIC PHASE OF THE KINGDOM: "The Gentiles . . . followed not after righteousness." God wanted a righteous people, so Abraham was called to found "A GREAT NATION" in a LAND that the Lord would "shew" him. See "Abraham," Chart of the Cross, page 18. God purposed that this "great nation" should inherit "the holy land"; that they should be "an holy nation" and govern in righteous-

history, everywhere, confirms the Word of God. The nations closed their eyes to God. They "willed" not to see God, therefore, God "shalled" that they should not see Him. God "gave them up" and withdrew, as it were, leaving them in darkness. After a time, God, faithful to His purpose to redeem the world, **called out the Jews** and thru them once more began to unveil or reveal Himself. Thru God's chosen instrument, the Jews, all the families of the earth are ultimately to be blessed and to receive a knowledge of the Lord (Gen. 12:1-3; Rom. 9:3-5; Isa. 11:9). **Our Bible, with its written revelations, dates from this period.**

"Remember these, O Jacob and Israel; for thou art **my servant**: I have formed thee; thou art **my servant**: O Israel, **thou shalt not be forgotten of me**. I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and, as a cloud, thy sins; return unto me; for I have redeemed thee" (Isa. 44:21-22). "Behold, **the former things** are come to pass, and new things do I declare: before they spring forth I tell you of them" (Isa. 42:9). "Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else: **I am God**, and there is none like me, **declaring the end from the beginning**, and from ancient times **the things that are not yet done**, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure" (Isa. 46:9, 10).

God, in revelation has looked **backward** and shown "the former things," and looks **forward** revealing "the things that are not yet done."

While our permanent, written revelation began with Moses, yet, centuries before this, God dealt personally with Cain and Abel and instructed them as to the ground and means of redemption (Gen. 4); God made an everlasting covenant with Noah (Gen. 9) and covenants and promises with Abraham, with Isaac and with Jacob; See page 24. **Scripture teaches that God**, all thru the ages, has been revealing redemption to man.

Thru God's revelations to the Jew, the whole world gradually began to get more or less re-acquainted with God and His Word (Rom. 3:1-2; 9:1-5). During the time of God's special favor to the Jews and His withdrawal from the Gentiles, Isaiah refers to "the vail that is spread over all nations (or Gentiles)" (Isa. 25:7). This shows that **before this**, there was a time when the Gentiles were not under a vail, but were acquainted with God and His Word. But in Isaiah's day, God revealed His purpose to eventually send the Messiah, who, as "the light of the world," would again "lighten the Gentiles" (Isa. 9:1-2; 42:1-7 with Matt. 4:12-16; Jno. 9:5). As the Gentiles failed God, and went under a vail before and during the Jewish era, so the Jews failed God and, as a nation, are now under

ness for Him. Thus, God would be glorified and "all families of the earth be blessed" (Gen. 12:1-3; Ex. 19:6). God's choice for the world is not "thorns" and "thistles," but Eden. Sin brought "curse" and sin must go before Eden blooms again.

The Abrahamic phase of the kingdom ended with the Jews in abject bondage in the land of Egyptian night (Gen. 50:26; Ex. 1). Was God's promise that He would make of Abraham a "great nation" to fail? No! A famine occurred in Canaan. Corn was to be had in Egypt. Jacob, grandson of Abraham, was then head of the sons of Abraham. Jacob was tempted to go to Egypt for food. Yet he hesitated, for he well knew that CANAAN was "**the land**" that the Lord had *promised to him (Gen. 28:10-15) and to his father, Isaac (Gen. 26:1-5) and to his grandfather, Abraham (Gen. 17:1-8). So Jacob went to his ancestral home, Beersheba and there interceded with God.

"And he said (to Jacob) I am God, the God of thy father: fear not to go down into Egypt; for I will there make of thee a great nation.

I will go down with thee into Egypt; and I will also surely bring thee up again: and Joseph shall put his hand upon thine eyes" (Gen. 46:3-4).

At that time there was only a little family of about seventy Jews. They went to Egypt (Gen. 46: 26-27).

a veil during the Church Age—which veil is ultimately to be lifted (Rom. 11:7-12). "For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits, that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in" (Rom. 11:25). Of course, during the Jewish era (Abraham to the cross of Christ) some Gentiles partook of God's mercy; so also during the Church or Gentile Age, some Jews receive salvation. The darkness of both "the nations" and "Israel" is eventually to be entirely dispelled by the "eternal day" (Rev. 21:23-25).

*"¶And Jacob went out from Beer-Sheba, and went toward Haran.

And he lighted upon a certain place, and tarried there all night, because the sun was set; and he took of the stones of that place, and put them for his pillows, and lay down in that place to sleep.

And he dreamed, and behold a ladder set up on the earth, and the top of it reached to heaven: and behold the angels of God ascending and descending on it.

And, behold, the LORD stood above it, and said, I am the LORD God of Abraham thy father, and the God of Isaac: the land whereon thou liest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed;

And thy seed shall be as the dust of the earth; and thou shalt spread abroad to the west, and to the east, and to the north, and to the south: and in thee and in thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed.

And, behold, I am with thee, and will keep thee in all places whither thou goest, and will bring thee again to this land; for I will not leave thee, until I have done that which I have spoken to thee of" (Gen. 28:10-15).

"And there was a famine in the land," besides the first famine that was in the days of Abraham. And Isaac went unto Abimelech king of the Philistines unto Gerar.

And the LORD appeared unto him, and said, Go not down into Egypt; dwell in the land which I shall tell thee of.

Sojourn in this land, and I will be with thee, and will bless thee; for unto thee, and unto thy seed, I will give all these countries, and I will perform the oath which I sware unto Abraham thy father.

And I will make thy seed to multiply as the stars of heaven, and will give unto thy seed all these countries; and in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed:

Because that Abraham obeyed my voice, and kept my charge, my commandments, my statutes, and my laws" (Gen. 26:1-5).

"And when Abram was ninety years old and nine, the LORD appeared to Abram, and said unto him. I am the Almighty God; walk thee before me, and be thou perfect.

THE MOSAIC PHASE OF THE KINGDOM: In process of time God, in a sense, made of them a great nation, there being some †600,000 fighting men when God, **FAITHFUL TO HIS PROMISE**, brought them up out of Egypt by the hand of Moses (Ex. 12:37-38). Moses was raised up by God for that purpose (Ex. 1-4). The Jews were **QUICKLY** born into a nation with the initiation of the feast of **THE PASSOVER** (Ex. 12-13; 19:1-6). Previous to this, they had been slaves in Egypt. The Mosaic phase of the Jewish Kingdom was theocratic: a government existed wherein the Lord was their King. "And Gideon said unto them, I will not rule over you, neither shall my son rule over you; the Lord shall rule over you" (Ex. 19:3-8; Judges 8:22-23). It was ended by the Davidic phase of the kingdom when the Jews rejected the Lord of heaven as their King. "Jehovah said unto Samuel . . . they have rejected me, that I should not be **king** over them" (1 Sam. 8:7, Am. V.).

THE DAVIDIC PHASE OF THE KINGDOM: The Jews wanted to be "like all the nations." But the fearful sins of the nations had caused God to give them up (Rom. 1). And God wanted the Jews to be a kingdom for Himself; a separated people; "an holy nation."

"Now therefore, if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me **above all people**: for all the earth is mine:

"And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and a holy nation" (Ex. 19:5-6).

The Lord warned them **ahead of time** that the kings of earth, whom they would choose in preference to the King of heaven, would take their possessions, oppress them and use their children as servants and that they would then cry out to the Lord for help, but that He would not hear them.

"¶But the thing displeased Samuel, when they said, Give us a king to judge us. And Samuel prayed unto Jehovah. And Jehovah said unto Samuel, Hearken unto the voice of the people in all that they say unto thee; for they have not rejected thee, but they have rejected me, that I should not be king over them. According to all the works which they have done since the day that I brought them up out of Egypt even unto this day, in that they have forsaken me, and served other gods, so do they also unto thee. Now therefore hearken unto their voice: howbeit thou shalt protest solemnly unto them, and shalt show them the manner of the king that shall reign over them. And Samuel told all the words of Jehovah unto the people that asked of him a king. And he said, This

And I will make my covenant between me and thee, and will multiply thee exceedingly.

And Abram fell on his face: and God talked with him saying,

As for me, behold, my covenant is with thee, and thou shalt be a father of many nations.

Neither shall thy name any more be called Abram, but thy name shall be Abraham; for a father of many nations have I made thee.

And I will make thee exceeding fruitful, and I will make nations of thee, and kings shall come out of thee.

And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations, for an everlasting covenant, to be a God unto thee and to thy seed after thee.

And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God" (Gen. 17:1-8).

†"¶And the children of Israel journeyed from Rameses to Succoth, about six hundred thousand on foot that were men, beside children.

And a mixed multitude went up also with them; and flocks, and herds, even very much cattle" (Ex. 12: 37-38).

will be the manner of the king that shall reign over you: **he will take** your sons, and appoint them unto him, for his chariots, and to be his horsemen; and they shall run before his chariots; and **he will appoint** them unto him for captains of thousands, and captains of fifties; and **he will set some** to plow his ground, and to reap his harvest, and to make his instruments of war, and the instruments of his chariots. And **he will take** your daughters to be perfumers, and to be cooks and to be bakers. And **he will take** your fields, and your vineyards, and your oliveyards, even the best of them, and give them to his servants. And **he will take** the tenth of your seed, and of your vineyards, and give to his officers, and to his servants. And **he will take** your men-servants, and your maid-servants, and your goodliest young men, and your asses, and put them to his work. **He will take** the tenth of your flocks: and ye shall be his servants. And ye shall cry out in that day because of your king whom ye shall have chosen you; and Jehovah will not answer you in that day. But the people refused to hearken unto the voice of Samuel; and they said, Nay; but we will have a king over us, that we also may be like all the nations, and that our king may judge us, and go out before us, and fight our battles. And Samuel heard all the words of the people, and he rehearsed them in the ears of Jehovah. And Jehovah said to Samuel, Harken unto their voice, and make them a king" (1 Sam. 8:6-22, Am. V.).

Saul, their first chosen king, was a sample of this prophesied oppression by human kings. Jewish oppression reached its climax during the reigns of Solomon, Rehoboam and Jeroboam, who divided the kingdom and headed it toward temporary defeat and exile (1 Kings 12). All of this was not God's choice for the Jews. They "**willed**" to have it so, and God "**shalled**" that they should have it. This is a method of heaven. Rebellion, persisted in, is permitted to take its course and reap the consequences. They persisted in having earthly kings. God permitted it, **to**verruling as it were, and guiding in their selections and seeing that the best material that the Jews had for kings (such as Saul, David, Solomon, Rehoboam, etc.) was used. God foresaw that it would all end in miserable failure, in sin and defeat. Even Solomon, **wisest** of earth's kings, was **no exception**. Solomon's shameful career, as king, is God's object lesson to all mankind that man needs the King of heaven to rule the earth. Six thousand years of human history have demonstrated that this is true.

Centuries before the days of the Jewish kings, God had made an UNCONDITIONAL, EVERLASTING COVENANT with Abraham that He would make of him "A GREAT NATION" and that "in thee shall ALL FAMILIES OF THE EARTH BE BLESSED." See Gen. 12:1-3, page 23.

"And the Lord said unto Abram, after that Lot was separated from him, Lift up now thine eyes, and look from the place where thou art northward, and southward, and eastward, and westward:

"For all the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed for ever.

"And I will make thy seed as the dust of the earth: so that if a man can number the dust of the earth, then shall thy seed also be numbered.

†The Scripture sets forth that they chose their own kings. It also sets forth that God chose their king. Both things are true. This is one of the places the skeptic points to with scorn, when he declares in his blindness, that the Bible contradicts itself. God chose Israel as a special instrument in redemption and made unconditional, oath-bound covenants that He would accomplish thru them, His intended purposes. No matter what Israel did, it was up to God to accomplish and bring His covenants to pass. So God, in their rebellion in selecting an earthly king, intervened and over-ruled and guided them as to what person to select for king. So they chose their king, yet God chose their king, for their choice was guided by God. Multitudes of so-called contradictions in Scripture vanish into thin air, when one sees and understands the combined Divine and human presentation of scriptural facts.

. . . And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations, for an **everlasting covenant**, to be a God unto thee and to thy seed after thee.

"And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an **everlasting possession**; and I will be their God. . . . By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son,

"That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies;

"And in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice" (Gen. 13:14-16; 17:7-8; 22:16-18).

ABOUT A THOUSAND YEARS PASSED between Abraham's time and David's day; yet the Jews had not been "a great nation" nor had they blessed "all families of the earth" in the full sense in which God had covenanted with Abraham. **NEITHER HAVE THEY TO THIS DAY.** "He is faithful that promised." No matter how much man fails, God "abideth faithful" still. "**He cannot deny Himself**" (2 Tim. 2:13). So God began to reveal to David the provisions heaven had made to yet bring to pass the promises made to Abraham.

"**Thus saith the Lord of hosts**" to David, "I will appoint a place for **my people**, Israel, and will **plant** them that they may . . . **move no more.** . . . I will set up thy seed after thee, which shall proceed out of thy bowels, and I will establish his kingdom. He shall build an house for my name, and **I will establish the throne of his kingdom for ever**" (2 Sam. 7:4-29).

"My **covenant** will I not break . . . once have I **sworn** by my holiness . . . unto David . . . **His seed shall endure for ever**, and his throne as the sun before me. **It shall be established** for ever as the moon, and as a faithful witness in heaven. Selah" (Ps. 89:3-4; 34-37).

David replied to the Lord, saying,

"For thou hast confirmed to thyself **thy people Israel** to be a people unto thee **for ever**: and thou, Lord, art become their God. And now, O Lord God, the word that thou hast spoken concerning thy servant, and concerning his house, **establish it for ever**, and **do as thou hast said**" (2 Sam. 7:24-25).

In the preceding Scripture, God has recurred, in prophecy, to the everlasting covenant He made with Abraham and **DETAILS ARE ADDED.** God reaffirms this covenant unto David, a descendant of Abraham and binds Himself by oath to perform it.

"David . . . Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had **sworn with an oath to him**, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne;" (Acts 2:29-30).

Here we see that the preceding Old Testament covenant and promise to David is carried over into the New Testament, where it is recurred to, confirmed and applied to Christ. "God had sworn with an oath to" David . . . "that . . . He would raise up Christ to sit on his (David's) throne." Therefore, the **fulfillment** of this promise **necessitates** and **awaits** the time when Christ shall reign, as King of Israel.

It will be noted from these Scriptures that God has taken Israel unto Himself, for his people "forever," that He will **plant** them in a **place** appointed by God, there to "move no more"; and that a "seed" of David who "shall endure forever" shall sit on his throne establishing the kingdom forever (Heb. 1:8).

THE JEWS EXPECTED THE KING AND KINGDOM

David knew and the Jews knew that God had promised to establish the **seed** of David forever, **UPON HIS THRONE**. They were looking for and expecting this King of Davidic descent to come and rule over them. These promises of God could only be fulfilled by the inheritance of **DAVID'S THRONE** by a person who was eternal in being, yet a descendant of David. Now a ***PERSON FULFILLING THESE REQUIREMENTS** was provided when the Lord left heaven (He, Himself says, "I came down from heaven," Jno. 6:38; the Lord is Spirit Being) and became incarnate by means of a virgin birth, in and with the body God prepared for Him (Matt. 1:18-23; Lu. 1:31-35, 2:10-11; Heb. 10:5). He was still Son of God though in the flesh. He humbled Himself and took **upon Himself** the form of a servant, as Son of man (Philip. 2:5-8). His body or tent "was **made of the seed of David according to the flesh**" (Jno. 1:1-3, 10, 14; Rom. 1:3). His earthly life is referred to in Scripture as "the days of His flesh" (Heb. 5:7). He claimed that He was **with** the Father in glory **BEFORE** the foundation of the world; "O Father, glorify thou me . . . with the glory which I had with thee before the world was" (Jno. 17:5, 24); that He was going back to His Father (Jno. 16:28); and that He would "come again" (Jno. 14:1-3). See p. 58. **THEREFORE**, the Lord Jesus Christ, the King of kings and **HE ALONE** fulfills the conditions that God promised to David. "God, that cannot lie, promised." God is under an oath-bound covenant to set Jesus Christ, as Son of man, on the throne of David to rule forever. "There hath **NOT FAILED ONE WORD** of all His good promise."

DAVID'S THRONE BELONGS TO THE LORD

Centuries before the birth of "Christ the Lord" (1 Chron. 29:23) revealed that **David's throne was the throne which belonged to "the Lord."** "Then Solomon sat on **the throne of the Lord** as king instead of David his father" (In connection with this "king" truth, see Hos. 13:9-11). The Lord had allowed His throne to be temporarily possessed by the Davidic line of Kings (1 Sam. 8 to 2 Sam. 7). This, of course, was before His incarnation or "the days of His flesh." At the birth of the Redeemer, He was announced as "Christ the Lord." He was "the Lord from heaven," and yet His "body" was of Davidic descent (Lu. 2:10-11; 1 Cor. 15:47; Heb. 10:5; Jno. 2:19; Matt. 1:1). And just **before** the birth of "Christ the Lord," God announced He would "give unto Him the throne of His father David" (Lu. 1:32). That is, the Lord, **NOW TO BECOME INCARNATE**, would be ready to retake His own throne, "the throne of the Lord" which was once occupied by David and by Solomon (1 Chron. 29:23).

CENTURIES BEFORE the birth of David, who was **OF THE TRIBE OF JUDAH**, God had revealed that "the sceptre" and "ruler's staff" **SHOULD NOT** depart from **JUDAH** until the Prince of Peace came to rule the earth.

"The sceptre shall not depart from Judah,
Nor the ruler's staff from between his feet,
Until Shiloh come:

And unto him shall the obedience of the peoples be"

(Gen. 49:10, Am. V.).

"The government shall be upon His shoulder: and His name shall be called . . . The Prince of Peace" (Isa. 9:6-7).

*See the author's booklet, "The Deity, the Virgin Birth and the Atoning Blood of the Lamb Slain From the Foundation of the World." Price 10 cents, postage paid.

Christ, the coming King and Prince of Peace is a descendant, according to the flesh, **of the tribe of Judah**. See His genealogy in Matthew 1. Therefore, when Christ reigns, this prophecy will have been fulfilled. God's eye, thru the ages, has ever been upon "the kingdom" which He has bound Himself by an oath to set up **ON THIS EARTH**. Marvelous prophecies like the preceding, demonstrate the unity and inspiration of Scripture.

Jesus said, "O fools ('dull-witted minds') and slow of heart to believe **ALL** that the prophets have spoken . . . **ALL** things **must** be fulfilled, which were written **in the law of Moses**, and **in the prophets**, and **in the psalms**, concerning me" (Lu. 24:22-27; 44-45).

THE KINGDOM IS COMING

CENTURIES AFTER DAVID'S DAY, after the Jews had been sent into Assyrian and Babylonian exile and **SCATTERED** to the four quarters of the globe and after the Jewish kingdom, so far as human eyes could see, had run its final course, the Lord raised up **THE PROPHETS** and **THEY REAFFIRMED** the "everlasting covenants" that God had made with Abraham and David. Details were added. They pictured, in glowing terms, a coming King and kingdom **FOR ISRAEL**, which would endure forever. "Search the Scriptures."

About three centuries, after God's covenant with David, God's faithful prophet, Micah, revealed to all the world that "the Lord cometh forth **OUT OF HIS PLACE**, and will . . . tread upon . . . the earth" (Micah 1:2-3). Continuing, the prophet proclaims, "**In that day, SAITH THE LORD . . . I will gather her that is driven out . . . I will make her . . . that was cast off** (into exile and scattered) **a strong nation**. And the **LORD shall REIGN over them (Israel) IN Mount Zion from henceforth, even FOR EVER . . . the KINGDOM shall come TO THE DAUGHTER OF JERUSALEM**," that is, to Israel (Micah 4:6-8).

The Word of God, which shall "stand forever," discloses that the kingdom shall come to "Israel" and the **LORD SHALL** reign as King over them **IN Mount Zion forever**.

KINGDOM TRUTH CLIMAXES

Old Testament Kingdom Truth Climaxes in 1 Sam. 8, where Israel rejects the Lord of heaven as King and in 2 Sam. 7 (See Ps. 89 and 1 Chron. 29:23), where God covenants with David that He will again place the Lord of heaven back as King over Israel (See Hos. 13:9-11).

THE KING AND KINGDOM

"PREPARED . . . FROM THE FOUNDATION OF THE WORLD"

The Scriptures set forth that God's foreknowledge enables Him to look down the centuries and see what man is going to do. God has anticipated man's failures and **PROVIDED AHEAD OF TIME** for all the altering needs of the race. He revealed these plans, provisions and elections to men thru "holy men of old," the prophets (1 Pet. 1:10-11; 2 Pet. 1:15-21). When the kingdom is "set up" (Dan. 2:44) Christ said, "Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom **PREPARED** for you **FROM THE FOUNDATION** of the **WORLD**" (Matt. 25:34). When God made man with free moral agency He, at least, knew very well ahead of time, that man might rebel and refuse to rule the earth according to the laws of heaven. God is infinite in wisdom and never makes any

mistakes. If God ought to have done differently, He would have done differently. "His ways (are) past finding out!" In all nature God provided abundantly **ahead of time**. He provided the earth, before the plant kingdom; He provided the plant kingdom before the animal kingdom. And **BEFORE** man ever failed, God provided a King "**FROM THE FOUNDATION of the world**" who would govern a kingdom on this earth, in righteousness for God, if man failed. So we see that, just as God, before the foundation of the world, **FOREORDAINED** a Saviour for man if he sinned, just so He also "prepared" a "kingdom" "from the foundation of the world" to be ruled over by the King of kings, if man failed to govern the earth for God. And **JUST AS SURE** as God brought to pass the words of the prophets, as He revealed thru them that Christ would come and be crucified, **JUST SO SURE** God will also bring to pass the words of the prophets, as He reveals thru them, that Christ will come and be crowned King.

There are 66 books in the Bible and at least most of them contain one or more prophecies concerning either the King or the kingdom that "the God of heaven" is going to "set up" on this earth. The king truth starts in Genesis with Melchizedek (king of righteousness) who is a type of Christ, as King. The king truth ends as prophesied in Revelation, when Christ is crowned King of kings and Lord of all (Gen. 14; Heb. 7; Rev. 11-22). Many men in many countries and separated by many centuries, were used by God to reveal the King and kingdom prophecies. These prophecies are so numerous, so marvelous, so consistent, so simple, yet so wonderfully and intricately woven into the very fabric and design of the Scriptures, and so many of these prophecies have been literally fulfilled in history, while others made centuries ago are right now in process of fulfillment, that it demonstrates beyond a shadow of doubt that †God is the Author of the Bible. There is nothing and it is impossible for there ever to be anything in human literature to duplicate the Bible. Humanity cannot duplicate Divinity.

THE COURSE OF THE JEWISH KINGDOM

As we have seen, the kingdom divided under the son of Solomon, into the northern and southern kingdoms (1 Kings 12). From the time of God's "everlasting covenant" with David or from David's day (2 Sam. 23:1-5), until the **northern kingdom** went into Assyrian captivity, just 21 (3 x 7) kings had a chance to demonstrate their willingness and ability to rule for God. And from this **same time** until the **kingdom of Judah** went out into Babylonian exile, just 21 (3 x 7) kings of Davidic descent ruled from the throne of David.*

"Seven" in Scripture is the number God uses in expressing covenanted, redemptive relationships and has in it the idea of completion or sufficiency. That both kingdoms, **from the time of David to their ends**, were each allowed to be ruled over by 21 (3 x 7) kings, is no mere accident. It is evidence that the finger of God, in great patience and mercy was on each of the sinful kingdoms. God has truly recorded of his chosen people, Israel, "There is none to guide her among all the sons whom she hath brought forth" (Isa. 51:18). What was true of Israel is true of all the world. **ALL NATIONS ARE EVENTUALLY WRECKED BY THEIR HUMAN RULERS**. This fact ought to awaken the dumbest mind to the truth, that there is something radically

†The pagan religious books came into existence after God began to reveal Himself and His truths to men. They have woven into them parts of these truths of God and this is mingled with human folly and fanaticism.

*Athaliah was a usurper—never legally on the throne—not of Davidic descent.

wrong with man-run governments. And God is going to meet this evil and need by sending Jesus Christ to govern the earth for God. "The government shall be upon his shoulder" (Isa. 9:6-7). Who says so? God says so! Twenty-one (3 x 7) kings of Davidic descent failed in the rulership of Israel for God. No other king of Davidic descent will be permitted to rule Israel for God until they shall say unto the Lord Jesus Christ, "the branch" of David (Jer. 23:5-8; Lu. 1:30-33; Rev. 22:16; 20:4-6; 19:11-16), "Blessed is He that cometh in the name of the Lord." "Jerusalem . . . your house is left unto you desolate . . . till ye shall say blessed is He that **cometh** in the name of the Lord." Who says so? God says so! (Matt. 23:37-39, See pages 50-58).

The marvelous and intricate way in which the number "seven" appears thruout the books of the Bible as it pertains to the things of redemption is fine, convincing evidence of the divine authorship and unity of the Bible. See pp. 142-147.

Israel, chosen to be "an holy nation" and an instrument in God's hands to bless the world was defeated thru sin (Dan. 9:9-12). God set them aside, as it were, **for the time being** and TURNED AGAIN to the nations or Gentiles. We remember that the Gentiles had been set aside (because of sin) **at** and **after** the dispersion of Babel (Gen. 11) and **before** the Jews were called in Abraham (Gen. 12:1-4).

"THE TIMES OF THE GENTILES"

began with the Babylonian exile. The Babylonians dominated the world at this time. "The most High God gave Nebuchadnezzar thy father a kingdom" (Dan. 5:18-21; 4:1, 34, 37). After the Babylonians' course was finished, the sway of the Persians (Media-Persians) began. They then in turn dominated the world. "Thus saith the Lord . . . Cyrus . . . my shepherd . . . shall perform all my pleasure: even saying to Jerusalem, Thou shalt be built; and to the temple, Thy foundation shall be laid" (Isa. 44:24-45:1). With the rise of these nations, what is referred to in Scripture as "the times of the Gentiles" began. "Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles (nations) be fulfilled" (Lu. 21:20-24). Jerusalem was "trodden down" by the Babylonian king, Nebuchadnezzar (Jer. 52). EVER SINCE, Palestine has been a province under the dominion of Gentiles. So, "the times of the Gentiles" is not yet "fulfilled." But scattered Jews from all over the world are now going back to Palestine, establishing little colonies over the land, having in view the rebuilding of the Jewish nation. For centuries prophecy has looked forward to the time when the "scattered" Jews would again be in their own land and free from Gentile dominion. Evidently, "the times of the Gentiles" is nearing its end. Oh! ye "nations," ye Gentiles! "Prepare to meet thy God." "O earth, earth, earth, hear the Word of the Lord."

"THE REMNANT PHASE" OF THE KINGDOM: The Davidic phase of the kingdom ended in exile and "the remnant" phase began. After seventy years of Babylonian captivity **only a remnant** of the Jews under Zerubbabel, a **prince of the house of David**, went back to Jerusalem (See the books, Ezra, Nehemiah). From the descendants of Zerubbabel, the Christ was born (Matt. 1:1-16). God keeps for Himself "a remnant" (spiritual element) in Israel. Just as in the days of Zerubbabel, only a remnant of Israel cared for the things and purposes of God, so when the kingdom is finally set up on this earth, it is **ONLY THE REMNANT** of Israel that are used of God, as instruments in setting up the kingdom (Isa. 1:9; Micah 5:7-8; Zech. 13:1, 8-14: 1-4, 9;

Rom. 11:4-5; Matt. 23:39; Rev. 7:3-8). It is well to **KEEP THIS IN MIND**.

"God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the . . . mighty. . . . That no flesh should glory in His presence" (1 Cor. 1:26-31). "The Lord did not set his love upon you (Israel), nor choose you, because ye were more in number than any people; for ye were the **fewest of all people**" (Deut. 7:7). Scripture does not represent Israel as a great nation from a material, but from a spiritual viewpoint. It is the God of Israel, Who has elected Israel to be an instrument in His hands, working in and thru "the remnant" that makes and will make Israel "a great nation," thru which all families of the earth were and are to be blessed.

MAN, A CONTINUOUS FAILURE

In their opportunity to rule the earth in righteousness, Adam, Noah and Abraham (the Jews) were all defeated by self, Satan and sin. With few exceptions, the history of the reigns of the kings of Judah and Israel were marked by oppression, sin and shame. We remember that God had warned the Jews not to set the King of heaven aside and allow themselves to be governed by earthly kings. See pages 25, 37-38. When the iniquity of the Jews was full, God thrust them out into exile and **SCATTERED** them over the world under curse, there to remain until a **chastened** remnant is ready to receive their Lord and King—then the kingdom will be "set up."

STUDIES CONCERNING THE "SCATTERING" AND "REGATHERING" OF ISRAEL

The scattering of Israel:

"If thou wilt not observe to do all the words of this law that are written in this book, that thou mayest fear this glorious and fearful name, **the Lord thy God**;

Then the **Lord** will make thy plagues wonderful, and the plagues of thy seed, even great plagues, and of long continuance, and sore sicknesses, and of long continuance.

Moreover, he will bring upon thee all the diseases of Egypt, which thou wast afraid of; and they shall cleave unto thee.

Also every sickness, and every plague which is not written in the book of this law, them will the **Lord** bring upon thee, until thou be destroyed.

And ye shall be left few in number, whereas ye were as the stars of heaven for multitude; because thou wouldest not obey the voice of the **Lord thy God**.

And it shall come to pass, that as the **Lord** rejoiced over you to do you good, and to multiply you; so the **Lord** will rejoice over you to destroy you, and to bring you to nought; and **ye shall be plucked from off the land** whither thou goest to possess it.

And the **Lord** shall **scatter** thee among all people, from the one end of the earth even unto the other; and there thou shalt serve other gods, which neither thou nor thy fathers have known, even wood and stone" (Deut. 28:58-64).

†When an orthodox Jew builds a house, part of it is left unfinished. This is prophetic of the fact that their permanent home and possession is Palestine. Thru the centuries, God has promised Israel (scattered among the Gentiles) that He would bring them back to their own land. They will not be disappointed. For "there hath not failed one word of all His good promise" (1 Kng. 8:56).

“¶But if ye will not hearken unto me, and will not do all these commandments;

And if ye shall despise my statutes, or if your soul abhor my judgments, so that ye will not do all my commandments, but that ye break my covenant: . . .

And I will set my face against you, and ye shall be slain before your enemies: they that hate you shall reign over you; and ye shall flee when none pursueth you.

And if ye will not yet for all this hearken unto me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins. . . .

And I will destroy your high places, and cut down your images, and cast your carcasses upon the carcasses of your idols, and my soul shall abhor you.

And I will make your cities waste, and bring your sanctuaries unto desolation, and I will not smell the savour of your sweet odours.

And I will bring the land into desolation: and your enemies which dwell therein shall be astonished at it.

And I will scatter you among the heathen, and will draw out a sword after you; and your land shall be desolate, and your cities waste. . . .

And they that are left of you shall pine away in their iniquity in your enemies' lands; and also in the iniquities of their fathers shall they pine away with them.

If they shall confess their iniquity, and the iniquity of their fathers, with their trespass which they trespassed against me, and that also they have walked contrary unto me;

And that I also have walked contrary unto them, and have brought them into the land of their enemies; if then their uncircumcised hearts be humbled, and they then accept of the punishment of their iniquity:

Then will I remember my covenant with Jacob, and also my covenant with Isaac, and also my covenant with Abraham will I remember; and I will remember the land.

The land also shall be left of them, and shall enjoy her sabbaths, while she lieth desolate without them: and they shall accept of the punishment of their iniquity; because, even because they despised my judgments, and because their soul abhorred my statutes.

And yet for all that, when they be in the land of their enemies, I will not cast them away, neither will I abhor them, to destroy them utterly, and to break my covenant with them: for I am the Lord their God.

But I will for their sakes remember the covenant of their ancestors, whom I brought forth out of the land of Egypt in the sight of the heathen, that I might be their God: I am the Lord” (Lev. 26:14-46).

“For the Lord shall smite Israel, as a reed is shaken in the water, and he shall root up Israel out of this good land, which he gave to their fathers, and shall scatter them beyond the river, because they have made their groves, provoking the Lord to anger.

And he shall give Israel up because of the sins of Jeroboam, who did sin, and who made Israel to sin” (1 Kings 14:15-16).

“Remember, I beseech thee, the word that thou commandedst thy servant Moses, saying, If ye transgress, I will scatter you abroad among the nations: (Neh. 1:8).

“And Haman said unto king Ahasuerus, There is a certain people scattered abroad and dispersed among the people in all the provinces of thy kingdom; and their laws are diverse from all people; neither keep

they the king's laws: therefore it is not for the king's profit to suffer them" (Esther 3:8).

"And the **Lord** said, Even thus shall the children of Israel eat their defiled bread among the Gentiles, whither I will drive them. . . .

Therefore the fathers shall eat the sons in the midst of thee, and the sons shall eat their fathers; and I will execute judgments in thee, and the whole remnant of thee will I **scatter** into all the winds.

Wherefore, as I live, saith the **Lord** God; Surely, because thou has defiled my sanctuary with all thy detestable things, and with all thine abominations, therefore will I also diminish thee; neither shall mine eye spare, neither will I have any pity" (Ezek. 4:13; 5:10-11).

"O **Lord**, righteousness belongeth unto thee, but unto us confusion of faces, as at this day; to the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and unto all Israel, that are near, and that are far off, **through all the countries whither thou hast driven them**, because of their trespass that they have trespassed against thee" (Dan. 9:7).

"But they refused to hearken, and pulled away the shoulder, and stopped their ears, that they should not hear.

Yea, they made their hearts as an adamant stone, lest they should hear the law, and the words which the **Lord** of hosts hath sent in his Spirit by the former prophets: therefore came a great wrath from the **Lord** of hosts.

Therefore it is come to pass, that as he cried, and they would not hear; so they cried, and I would not hear, saith the **Lord** of hosts:

But I **scattered** them with a whirlwind among all the nations whom they knew not. Thus the land was desolate after them, that no man passed through nor returned: for they laid the pleasant land desolate" (Zech. 7:11-14).

The regathering of Israel:

"¶Hear the word of the **Lord**, O ye nations, and declare it in the isles afar off, and say, **He that scattered Israel will gather him**, and keep him, as a shepherd doth his flock.

For the **Lord** hath redeemed Jacob, and ransomed him from the hand of him that was stronger than he.

Therefore they shall come and sing in the height of Zion, and shall flow together to the goodness of the **Lord**, for wheat, and for wine, and for oil, and for the young of the flock and of the herd: and their soul shall be as a watered garden; and they shall not sorrow any more at all.

Then shall the virgin rejoice in the dance, both young men and old together: for **I will turn their mourning into joy**, and will comfort them, and make them rejoice from their sorrow.

And I will satiate the soul of the priests with fatness, and my people shall be satisfied with my goodness, saith the **Lord**" (Jer. 31:10-14).

Notice the regathering is **on this earth**.

"And it shall come to pass, when all these things are come upon thee, the blessing and the curse, which I have set before thee, and thou shalt call them to mind among all the nations, whither the **Lord** thy God hath driven thee,

And shalt **return** unto the **Lord** thy God, and shalt obey his voice according to all that I command thee this day, thou and thy children, with all thine heart, and with all thy soul;

That then the **LORD** thy God will turn thy captivity, and have compassion upon thee, and will **return and gather thee** from all the nations, whither the **Lord** thy God hath scattered thee.

If any of thine be driven out unto the outmost parts of heaven, **from thence will the LORD thy God gather thee**, and from thence will he fetch thee:

And the **Lord thy God will bring thee into the land which thy fathers possessed**, and thou shalt possess it; and he will do thee good, and multiply thee above thy fathers.

And the **Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart**, and the heart of thy seed, to love the **Lord thy God with all thine heart**, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live.

And the **Lord thy God will put all these curses upon thine enemies**, and on them that hate thee, which persecuted thee.

And **thou shalt return** and obey the voice of the **Lord**, and do all his commandments which I command thee this day.

And the **Lord thy God will make thee plenteous in every work of thine hand**, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy land, for good; for the **Lord will again rejoice over thee for good**, as he rejoiced over thy fathers: (Deut. 30:1-9).

Notice that Deut. 28 prophesies the "scattering" and Deut. 30, the "regathering," **centuries ahead of time**. How did Moses know they would be scattered? "The Lord spake unto Moses!"

"If they shall confess their iniquity, and the iniquity of their fathers, with their trespass which they trespassed against me, and that also they have walked contrary unto me:

And that I also have walked contrary unto them, and have brought them into the land of their enemies; if then their uncircumcised hearts be humbled, and they then accept of the punishment of their iniquity:

Then will I remember my covenant with Jacob, and also my covenant with Isaac, and also my covenant with Abraham will I remember; and I will remember the land.

The land also shall be left of them, and shall enjoy her sabbaths, while she lieth desolate without them: and they shall accept of the punishment of their iniquity; because, even because they despised my judgments, and because their soul abhorred my statutes.

And yet for all that, when they be in the land of their enemies, I will not cast them away, neither will I abhor them, to destroy them utterly, and to break my covenant with them: for I am the **Lord their God**.

But I will for their sakes remember the covenant of their ancestors, whom I brought forth out of the land of Egypt in the sight of the heathen, that I might be their God: I am the **Lord**.

These are the statutes and judgments and laws, which the **Lord made between him and the children of Israel in mount Sinai by the hand of Moses**" (Lev. 26:40-46).

"Again the word of the **Lord** came unto me, saying,

Son of man, thy brethren, even thy brethren, the men of thy kindred, and all the house of Israel wholly, are they unto whom the inhabitants of Jerusalem have said, Get you far from the **Lord**: unto us is this land given in possession.

Therefore say, Thus saith the **Lord God**; Although I have cast them far off among the heathen, and although I have scattered them among the countries, yet will I be to them as a little sanctuary in the countries where they shall come.

Therefore say, Thus saith the **Lord God**; I will even gather you from the people, and assemble you out of the countries where ye have been scattered, and I will give you the land of Israel.

And they shall come thither, and they shall take away all the detestable things thereof and all the abominations thereof from thence.

And I will give them one heart, and I will put a new spirit within you; and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh, and will give them a heart of flesh:

That they may walk in my statutes, and keep mine ordinances, and do them: and **they shall be my people, and I will be their God** (Ezek. 11:14-20).

See Ezekiel 43:1-7; Daniel 9:24-25.

"Remember, I beseech thee, the word that thou commandedst thy servant Moses, saying, If ye transgress, I will scatter you abroad among the nations:

But if ye turn unto me, and keep my commandments, and do them; though there were of you cast out unto the uttermost part of the heaven, yet will I gather them from thence, and will bring them unto the place that I have chosen to set my name there" (Neh. 1:8-9).

"Thus saith the Lord of hosts; Behold, I will save my people from the east country, and from the west country;

And I will bring them, and they shall dwell in the midst of Jerusalem: and they shall be my people, and I will be their God, in truth and in righteousness. . . .

And it shall come to pass, **that as ye were a curse** among the heathen, O house of Judah, and house of Israel; so will I save you, and **ye shall be a blessing:** fear not, but let your hands be strong" (Zech. 8:7-8; 13; 10:8-10).

"He is faithful that promised." "There hath not failed one word of all His good promise." The Jews are now being "regathered" and are now going back to **"the land"** of their forefathers. God is faithful to His oath-bound covenants made with David and Abraham. How did Moses know they would ever be regathered? "The Lord spake unto Moses." The Bible is "the Word of God." These marvelous facts are not here by accident, but by design and that design is of necessity Divine. This Divine design proves the Scriptures to be inspired.

DANIEL'S PROPHECIES CONCERNING GENTILE WORLD RULE

In the dark hour of Israel's exile, "scattering" and apparent defeat for the kingdom, God raised up the great prophet, Daniel, who had been carried a captive from Judah to Babylon. Thru Daniel, God revealed the **entire future course** of the Gentile (nations) world powers ("the times of the Gentiles" beginning with the world sway of the Babylonians) to its miserable end under the reign of "the beast" in the "abomination of desolation" and the "great tribulation." That **Daniel was God's prophet** and **wrote these prophecies** and that the **"abomination of desolation" will mark the end of the rule of the nations**, was testified to by the Son of God, who was God incarnate (Jno. 1:1-3, 14; 2:24-25). This absolutely settles the divine authority of Daniel's prophecies (Matt. 24:15; Dan. 9:27). History has demonstrated that his prophecies were of divine origin, for God alone could have looked down the ages and outlined the future course of human history, **AS WAS DONE** in the revelations by Daniel.

THE PROPHETIC VISION UNFOLDED BY DANIEL: Carefully read Daniel 2; also see chapters 7-12. The following contains God's prophetic interpretation of Nebuchadnezzar's symbolic dream, as revealed to man thru the great prophet Daniel.

“¶Thou, O king, sawest, and behold a great image. This great image, whose brightness was excellent, stood before thee; and the form thereof was terrible.

This image's head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass.

His legs of iron, his feet part of iron and part of clay.

Thou sawest till that a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet that were of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces.

Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshing-floors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them: and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth.

¶This is the dream; and we will tell the interpretation thereof before the king.

Thou, O king, art a king of kings: for the God of heaven hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory.

And wheresoever the children of men dwell, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the heaven hath he given into thine hand, and hath made thee ruler over them all. Thou art this head of gold.

And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee, and another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth.

And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all things: and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise.

And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of the iron, forasmuch as thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay.

And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong and partly broken.

And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay.

And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand forever.

Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver, and the gold; the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter: and the dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure" (Dan. 2:31-45).

The ancients used signs or symbols to express thots and teach truths. The hieroglyphic of the Egyptian was a sign or symbol language. God used this method in unfolding truths as they, being accustomed to it, could interpret and understand it. "I have also spoken by the prophets, and I have multiplied visions, and used **similitudes**, by the ministry of the prophets" (Hosea 12:10. See Isa. 8:18; 20:3-4; Jer. 13:1-11; Ezek. 12; Dan. 2).

TIME: The vision had to do with, "what shall be in the **latter days**" . . . "what should come to pass **HEREAFTER**" (Daniel 2:28-29).

THE IMAGE: The forms of Gentile world domination are symbolized by Daniel's terrible image. "This great image . . . the (aspect) thereof

was **TERRIBLE**" (Dan. 2:31). The use of the word "terrible" is prophetic of the kind of reign that shall characterize Gentile world rule, especially its latter form. See "a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible" (Dan. 7:7). The fourth beast pictures in symbolism, the corruption that shall mark the end of "the world" dominion. "Iniquity shall abound"—"dreadful and terrible."

As Pharaoh had two visions concerning the coming famine (Gen. 41:14-32), so there were two main visions concerning Gentile world rule (Dan. 2 and 7). "And for that the dream was **doubled** unto Pharaoh **twice**; it is because the thing is **established** by God, and God will shortly bring it to pass" (Gen. 41:32). They were taught by means of symbols; they thought in terms of symbols and so they had visions in terms of symbols. The vision was of a human image, which typified human government as opposed to divine government. The Jews had been under divine government ("Gideon said unto them, I will not rule over you . . . the Lord shall rule over you," Judges 8:22-23), but they rejected the Lord as King and chose a human government. "All the elders of Israel . . . came to Samuel . . . and they said unto him make us a king to judge us like all the nations . . . and the Lord said unto Samuel . . . they have not rejected thee, but they have rejected me, that I should not be king over them . . . harken unto their voices and make them a king" (1 Sam. 8:4-22, Am. V.). As a result of that human government or rule of the Jewish kings, they had sunk into sin and shame and were now in exile. By this human image they were to receive a symbolic lesson **as to future human events, and as to what a terrible thing it is to reject divine government** for human government.

Its head of **gold** †symbolized Babylonian world dominion
Its breast and arms (two arms)

of **silver** †symbolized Media-Persian world dominion

Its belly and thighs of **brass** . . †symbolized Grecian world dominion

Its legs (two) of iron:

feet part iron, part clay . . †symbolized Roman world dominion

The pages of history disclose that these four nations (and these nations alone) were characterized by and took the historical course, typified by this image and its symbolic interpretation as set forth in Daniel. History sets forth that world domination started with Imperial Babylon and ended with Imperial Rome. No nation since then has dominated the world, as did each of these four nations. How did Daniel

†For evidence that these different metal parts of this image symbolically represent these four nations and their world sway, see Dan. 2:36-40. A study of these symbolic visions discloses the fact that the same four nations are set forth in symbolic vision in Dan. 7, that are set forth in Dan. 2. And by comparing Dan. 2 and 7 with Dan. 8 and especially verses 2:36-40 with 8:20-21, we see the gold represents Babylon, the silver Media-Persia and the brass, Greece, etc. Other Scripture and the facts of history confirm this. Also see page 31 for evidence that Gentile world dominion began with Babylon and was followed by Media-Persia.

Rome, and the history thru the centuries of Rome, alone, fits into and fills the symbolic requirements of Daniel's fourth world empire (fourth beast). Rome dominated the world and ruled it with a rod of iron. She was pagan, rapacious and normally at warfare. She broke in pieces as iron (two legs) into the Eastern and Western Empires. These were later each subdivided, and in mixture these sub-kingdoms have retained something of the strength of iron and instability of clay, "partly strong and partly broken." The history of these sub-kingdoms thru the centuries has been true to prophecy—"they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay." The remnants of these sub-kingdoms are with us yet, and true to prophecy, the time will come when the "ten-toe" (ten kings) form will appear. Eventually these nations will federate under the leadership of "the beast," "the man of sin" (see p. 74), and wreckage will make desolate the world, as God has clearly revealed. Why should America join the federation of the nations on the site of the old Roman empire? Scripture has revealed this federation heads up and climaxes the reign of antichrist, which wrecks the world. Prophecy reveals that fearful wars and judgments await these nations. The thing for America to do is to confess her sins and beat back to the Bible and God.

know this would be the case? He was God's prophet (Matt. 24:15). Show us a duplicate of this in profane literature, if you can. The Scripture is "the Word of God." Who said so? God, in the Person of the Son, when He was on earth during the "days of His flesh" (Mk. 7:13; 13:31).

THE VISION AND ITS MEANING: "Thou sawest till that a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet that were of iron and clay, and break them to pieces. Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshingfloors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them: and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth" (Dan. 2:34-35).

Read Dan. 2:36-43, page 37. The vision speaks of human government. "The fourth kingdom shall be **strong as iron**" (vs. 40). This speaks of Rome at the height of her power. "Whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided . . . they **shall not cleave one to another.**" (Neither will clay and iron, Vs. 41-43.) The two legs speak of the division of Rome into the Eastern and the Western Empires about 395 A. D. Later, both of these Empires fell and were subdivided. The result of these later subdivisions still exists in the form of the different nations that now occupy the domain of the old Roman Empire. They are the modern Gentiles, who continue in a **DIVIDED** world domination. Scripture reveals that there is to come a time when a ten-toe-subdivision form of the old Roman Empire appears, then: later,

(1) A stone, cut out without hands (not human) will smite the image "**UPON HIS FEET . . . and BRAKE THEM TO PIECES . . . TOGETHER**" (at same time). The wind carries these away, like chaff (refuse), "that **no place** was found for them"—no place or part in God's kingdom for the smitten, removed nations. "The Stone that smote the image" **BECOMES** a great mountain and fills "the whole earth" (Dan. 2:34-35) (In Scripture symbolism, "mountain" signifies "a kingdom." See Isa. 2:2; Rev. 17:9-12).

(2) "**IN THE DAYS OF THESE KINGS** (i. e., of the kings over the ten-toe kingdoms) **SHALL** the **GOD OF HEAVEN set up A KINGDOM**, which shall **NEVER BE DESTROYED . . . it shall break in pieces** and consume (get them out of the way) **ALL** these kingdoms, and it shall **STAND** forever" (2:44-45).

The kingdom is set up by "the God of heaven" **and not by the church, as many incorrectly assert.** When this kingdom is set up, "all these kingdoms" are so wicked that God has to strike them in judgment, breaking them to pieces and consuming them. Scripture indicates that remnants only will turn to God and be saved. This confirms previous statements made, that the aspect of the fourth beast being "terrible" is symbolic of the corruption that shall exist during the last days of man's rule over the earth. This is confirmed by Christ's statement that one of "the signs" of His coming and "the end of the world" was the fact that "iniquity shall **ABOUND**" (Matt. 24:12). The expression "end of the world" refers to the "end" of that human system of government that is cursing humanity and that is at enmity against God. God brings it to an "end" by breaking it to pieces and consuming it. Then the "God of heaven" sets up His kingdom.

WHAT DOES THE STONE SYMBOLIZE? As the gold, silver, brass and iron symbolized kingdoms, so Scripture uses the word "Rock"

or "Stone" to symbolize the King of kings, the Christ, who alone has the power to set up the kingdom of heaven. "That spiritual Rock that followed them (the children of Israel from Egypt to Canaan) . . . was Christ" (1 Cor. 10:4). "Jesus Christ . . . is the stone which was set at nought of you builders" (Acts 4:10-12). "The Lord is . . . a LIVING STONE . . . chosen of God and precious . . . (He is) a rock of offence" (1 Pet. 2:3-8; Eph. 2:20; Matt. 21:44). It is this "Living stone," a "stone" "cut out **without hands**" that shall smite the sinful nations.

"SMOTE" is a judgment word and speaks of a rapid process such as occurred at the Flood and at Sodom. See 2 Thes. 2:1-8; 1:7-9. When God smites, it is always against sin. The fact that it will be necessary for God to smite at the end of the age is proof that iniquity will then abound. The human race, instead of being headed in an evolution to perfection, is headed in a devil-looting to its destruction. Who says so? God says so! "Search the Scriptures" and see! "The word of our God shall stand forever."

WHEN WILL THE STONE SMITE THE TEN-TOE NATIONS?

The stone "smote the image **upon his feet.**" Rome was not in its two-leg form (Eastern and Western Empires) until about the year 395 A. D. Therefore, this event is to take place **after** Christ's first advent. That it did not take place at His first advent, is evident from the fact that Christ Himself was smitten on the cross by the authorities of the old Roman Empire. Setting up the kingdom is not brought about by all the world being gently led to Jesus as some fondly believe. "The God of heaven (shall) set up a kingdom, which . . . shall break in pieces . . . **ALL** these kingdoms." If "in the latter days" "the God of heaven" has to break in pieces "all these kingdoms," then it is quite evident that this world will not be won to Christ by Christianity. Nevertheless it's the business of Christianity during this Age to be a faithful witness to a rebellious world concerning Christ and "the kingdom of God" (Matt. 28:19-20). God is now visiting "the Gentiles, to take **OUT OF THEM** a people for His name." "**AFTER THIS I WILL RETURN**" and set up the kingdom (Acts 15:13-18; 1 Pet. 2:9). That this smiting judgment has not yet occurred is proven by the fact that the Gentiles or nations are still standing and have not been broken in pieces, nor driven away as chaff.

See p. 39, Daniel 2:35—evidences the fact that these nations and God's "kingdom of heaven" **do not co-exist** on this earth. From the Scripture it is evident that Christ did not smite or "break in pieces" at His first coming, but it is equally evident from Scripture that He will, at His second coming. "When the Lord Jesus (the living stone) shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ" (2 Thes. 1:7-8; Matt. 25:31-46; Rev. 4:19). This doesn't sound like the world will be led to Christ by Christianity.

As we have seen, altho the Jews were in exile and the hope of the kingdom seemed at an end; yet God's prophet, Daniel, declared to all the world that "In the days of these kings **shall** the **GOD** of **HEAVEN** **SET UP A KINGDOM** which shall **NEVER BE DESTROYED**" (Dan. 2:44). This confirmed the promise made to David that his throne and kingdom should be established forever (2 Sam. 7:16). When God brings Daniel's prophecies to pass, then God's promises to David will have been brot to pass; and when David's promises are brot to pass, then God's promises to Abraham will have been fulfilled. **They are all links in the great chain of kingdom prophecies.**

KEEP THESE FACTS IN MIND: Prophetic history looks forward to the time when "the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled" and "**the God of heaven**" shall make "a great nation" of Israel and "**SET UP A KINGDOM** (on this earth), which shall never be destroyed." "**He is faithful that promised.**"

WHAT WILL CHARACTERIZE THE KINGDOM?

When "the God of heaven" sets up this kingdom, who will reign over it? Ans. { 1. A descendant of David (Jer. 23:1-6).
2. "One like the Son of man" (Dan. 7:13-14).

A descendant of David: "Thus saith the Lord God of Israel . . . I will gather the remnant of my flock out of all countries whither I have driven them, and will bring them again to their folds . . . I will raise unto David a righteous branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth. In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is his name whereby he shall be called, **the Lord our righteousness**" (Jer. 23:1-6).

Notice that the King is to be a descendant of David, who shall "reign" and execute "justice **IN THE EARTH**" and His name is "**THE LORD our righteousness.**" At the birth of the "Son of man," He was referred to as "**Christ THE LORD**" (Lu. 2:10-11). Our Lord referred to Himself about seventy-nine times as the "Son of man." David had but one "**Righteous Branch**"—the Son of man, who was "the Lamb" "without blemish" (Isa. 53:11). The book of Revelation unveils the future and reveals that Jesus Christ, "the root" and offspring (branch) of David, is to be crowned King of kings (Rev. 4:19; 5:5; 22:16).

The Son of Man: "I saw in the night visions, and, behold, **one like the Son of man came with the clouds of heaven**, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought him near before him. And there was given him dominion, and glory, **and a kingdom**, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve him: his dominion is an everlasting dominion, which shall not pass away, and **his kingdom that which shall not be destroyed**" (Dan. 7:13, 14).

It's the "Son of man" who "shall come in His glory" and receive from His Father ("the Ancient of days") "a kingdom" "which shall not be destroyed" (Matt. 25:31). Here Daniel and Matthew are each setting forth things concerning the kingdom that are to occur **in the future.**

How will the King reign? Ans. { 1. "A King shall reign in **righteousness**" (Isa. 32:1).
2. "The Sun of **righteousness** (shall) arise with healing in **His wings**" (Mal. 4:2).

The world is sick with sin, human wreckage, and sorrow. It certainly needs a righteous reign and its diseases healed.

HOW WILL A RIGHTEOUS REIGN AFFECT THE EARTH?

(1) **Plant Life:** "The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose" (Isa. 35:1).

(2) **Animal Life:** "The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and

the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them . . . They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea" (Isa. 11:6, 9).

(3) **Human Life:** "The law shall go forth of Zion, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem . . . He shall . . . rebuke strong nations . . . they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruning-hooks: nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more . . . The Lord of hosts hath spoken it . . . All people will walk every one . . . in the name of the Lord our God for ever and ever" (Micah 4:2-5).

As long as the first Adam ruled for God, there was an Eden condition on this earth in plant, animal and human life. Then sin entered the world and all nature went under curse. "Cursed is the ground for thy sake . . . thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee" (Gen. 3:17-19). But when the "last Adam" reigns in righteousness over the earth, an Eden condition will be restored.

"For I reckon that the sufferings of this present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed to us-ward. For the earnest expectation of the creation waiteth for the revealing of the sons of God. For the creation was subjected to vanity, not of its own will, but by reason of him who subjected it, in hope that the creation itself also shall be delivered from the bondage of corruption into the liberty of the glory of the children of God. For we know that the whole creation groaneth and travaileth in pain together until now. And not only so, but ourselves also, who have the first-fruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for our adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body" (Rom. 8:18-23, Am. V.).

God purposes and is in a process of accomplishing redemption for this earth. The sacred Scriptures reveal these divine truths and plans to man.

The kingdom is to be set up ON THIS EARTH (Isa. 62:1, 6-7). THEN men shall "learn war" no more. "The law shall go forth of Zion and the word of the Lord FROM JERUSALEM" (Micah 4:2). Redemption is not finished until this earth is placed back under the direct government of God. "For He must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet" (1 Cor. 15:25). "HE MUST REIGN." May our heavenly Father hasten the day.

IDENTIFICATION MARKS OF THE KING

We find the Old Testament closes its pages with the prophets proclaiming that God would be faithful to His "everlasting covenant," made with both David and Abraham; and that "the God of heaven" would yet, "set up" on this earth a grand and glorious kingdom; and that there would yet sit on the **throne of David**, a King who would be of "the seed of David" and of "the seed of Abraham," yet He would rule this kingdom forever.

The Old Testament prophecies were laid on the shelf, as it were, awaiting the fulfillment of God's promises and His oath-bound covenants. The years came and the years went, until four long centuries had rolled away. Had the great Father, God, forgotten? No! His messenger, the angel Gabriel, announced to Mary, "Thou hast found favour with God . . . thou shalt . . . bring forth a Son, and shalt call His name JESUS. . . . He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest: and **THE LORD GOD SHALL GIVE UNTO HIM THE THRONE OF HIS FATHER DAVID:** And he shall reign over the

house of Jacob (twelve sons, twelve tribes) for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end" (Lu. 1:30-35). At last, the Lord to whom the throne of David belonged (1 Chr. 29:23), **BECAME INCARNATE** and was ready to take "the throne of David." He was Son of God and Son of man. The **first** verse of the **first** chapter of the **first** book of the New Testament introduces you to "Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham." "For unto you is born this day in **THE CITY OF DAVID** a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord" (Lu. 2:11). "Is **BORN**," that is, "was made flesh, and dwelt among us" (Jno. 1:1, 3, 14). An **eternal** Being, "The Lord **FROM** heaven" (1 Cor. 15:47), "One like the Son of man" (Dan. 7:13-14), with a body of flesh which was of Davidic descent, had come to look after the affairs of God's kingdom. This is **THE VERY THING** that God, thru the prophets, had proclaimed would take place. And it fulfilled the conditions required by the covenant made with David and the prophecies made thru Daniel. See pages 27, 41. "**HE IS FAITHFUL THAT PROMISED**" (Heb. 10:23). "There hath not failed one word of all His good promise."

The "wise men" sought Him that was "**BORN King of the Jews**." David was a **called** king (Matt. 2:1-2). Wise men are still looking for the "born King."

The King was born in "**BETHLEHEM of Judaea**" fulfilling the prophecy as to the **PLACE** of the King's birth. And He was the "Governor, that shall rule (God's) people Israel," "whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting," "**FROM THE FOUNDATION** of the world" (Micah 4:6-8, 5:1-5; Matt. 2:6, 25:34).

Daniel prophesied that when the kingdom of heaven was "set up," the nations would be "broken to pieces together," and "become" like the chaff of the summer threshingfloor and the wind would carry them away (Dan. 2:35). This "born King of the Jews" qualified in this respect and the faithful Word of God sets Him forth as having the **power** to fulfil Daniel's prophecy: "He that cometh after me is mightier than I . . . Whose fan is in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire" (Matt. 3:11-12). The book of Revelation sets forth that this is what "this same Jesus," the King, actually does when the kingdom is "set up" (Rev. 4-20).

THE SAVIOUR, SATAN AND THE NATIONS

"The Lord hath a controversy with the nations" (Gentiles). "I (will) break in pieces the nations"; "The indignation of the Lord is upon **all** nations" (Jer. 25:31; 51:20; Isa. 34:2). Thus the Old Testament closed, setting forth that the nations, that had refused "to retain God in their knowledge" and that God therefore, "gave up," were still at enmity against God and under the sway of Satan. The New Testament opened setting forth that the nations were **still under Satan's power**. The "born King of the Jews," the "last Adam," was led "into the wilderness" where He was tested by the devil, as was the first Adam in the garden of Eden (Matt. 4:1-11; Lu. 4:1-13; 1 Cor. 15:45; Rom. 5:12-19). Satan's object in both cases was to defeat God's purpose to set up a kingdom of heaven on earth.

"And the devil . . . shewed unto him (Jesus) **all the kingdoms of the world** . . . And the devil said unto him, **all this power** will I give thee, and the glory of them: for **that is delivered unto me**: and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me,

Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve" (Lu. 4:1-13).

Satan claimed that all nations were under his sway. Jesus **never denied** but confirmed Satan's claim (Jno. 12:31). Jesus came to take the nations of the world out from under the dominion of Satan; to accomplish redemption. By disobedience, the first man, Adam, lost rulership. Obedience is the condition on which God allows man to regain rulership. Jesus was "obedient (even) unto death" (Phil. 2:5-8). The "Son of man" is **the ONLY** obedient man God has ever had. Therefore, **He, ALONE**, has a right to rule on this earth and God is under an oath-bound covenant to establish Him as King, thereon. "The government shall be upon his shoulder" (Isa. 9:6-7).

Satan well knew that, "Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and Him only shalt thou serve." If Jesus had worshiped Satan, He would have sinned against God and thus lost all right to rule the earth, as did the first man, Adam. The nations would, therefore, have **REMAINED UNDER THE SWAY OF SATAN**. Satan is no slouch of a stratagem. But Satan met the Master who refused to take "the kingdoms of the world" on these terms. Scripture sets forth that the nations remain under the sway of Satan till "the end" (2 Cor. 4:4; Rev. 11:15). It is true that during this age God is taking †"OUT OF THEM a people for His name" (Acts 15:13-18). Satan had taken Eden, God's unit kingdom and divided it into the nations at Babel and "scattered" them. "An enemy hath done this." "For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that He might **destroy the works of the devil**" (1 Jno. 3:8).

According to Scripture the present Babylon or world system is the work of Satan. It is the business of the Son of God, as Redeemer, to take this earth, torn by divided nations and disorder, and bring it back into unity, harmony and righteousness, under the direct government of the kingdom of God.



"The government shall be upon His shoulder" (Isa. 9:6-7).

"Babylon" leaders, both religious and commercial, are setting the Son of God and His program aside and deceiving "the world," setting forth that man is going to accomplish this without the Divine help of the Redeemer. These "enemies of God" and of the human race are leading men away from God, His Word and "the Light of the world"; out into the night they go without the Redeemer, "having no hope and without God." For them, "the blackness of darkness" is reserved "forever" (Jude 13). In the land of eternal midnight, into which the light of day **SHALL NEVER** enter, they will be awakened to the fact that this is a devil-looted world instead of an "evolved" world.

†The people thus being taken "out" are the invisible church of God, composed of all "born again" people. They are "now the people of God" and occupy a foremost place and position in God's plans. They have the very important work of witnessing to the world concerning Christ and His kingdom and occupying "till He comes." See pp. 289, 64.

"Say unto them, As I live, saith the Lord God, I have **no pleasure** in the death of the wicked; but that the wicked turn from his way and live: turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways; for why will ye die?" (Ezek. 33:11). "Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else" (Isa. 45:22).

Place yourself under the government of God, by receiving his Governor, the Lord, Jesus Christ, as your Saviour. "But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name" (Jno. 1:12). "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved." Who says so? God says so. Then let your good judgment prompt you to do so **at once**. There is **danger** and **death** in delay.

No kingdom was maintained by Adam; Satan defeated it.

No kingdom was maintained by Noah; Satan defeated it.

No kingdom was maintained by the Jews; Satan defeated it.

No kingdom will be "set up" by the church; Satan is the enemy.

The church has never been commissioned by God to "set up" the kingdom. The church is commissioned to preach "the kingdom of God" to a rebellious world, that will not have Christ to rule over it. Jesus Christ has been commissioned by God to set up the kingdom. Scripture teaches that the kingdom **NEVER** will be "set up" **UNTIL** its enemy, **SATAN**, is "**BOUND . . . A THOUSAND YEARS**" (Rev. 20). And this **doesn't take place** until **AFTER** the translation of the church. After the translation of the church, the "great tribulation" occurs, when Satan's masterpiece of iniquity, "the beast," "the man of sin" reaches his climax of iniquity in the "abomination of desolation" which was prophesied by Daniel.

"And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate. . . .

And arms shall stand on his part, and they shall pollute the sanctuary of strength, and shall take away the daily sacrifice, and they shall place the abomination that maketh desolate. . . .

And from the time that the daily sacrifice shall be taken away, and **the abomination that maketh desolate** set up, there shall be a thousand two hundred and ninety days" (Dan. 9:27; 11:31; 12:11).

Daniel's prophecy concerning the "abomination of desolation" was confirmed by Jesus Christ.

"When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand,)

Then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains:" (Matt. 24:15-16). And this prophecy of Daniel, and Christ's confirmation of it, is unfolded in Revelation (Rev. 5-19). At the close of the tribulation, **Satan is bound a thousand years**. Then the kingdom is "set up." Man is a failure and needs the King of heaven to govern the earth (Gen. 8:21; Rom. 3:10). God knows it and has revealed that He will crown Christ as King, so that God's will may be done "in **earth**, as it is in heaven" (Dan. 7:13-14; Rev. 19). For six thousand years human rulers have demonstrated their utter inability and unwillingness to do God's will on earth. This demonstrates that mankind is without hope from human rulers. Look away to Jesus. He is the King that the God of heaven is going to "set up" on this earth.

"THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN" "AT HAND"

After Satan failed to seduce Jesus, or cause Him to lose His right to govern the kingdom "prepared" from "the foundation of the world," then "Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand" (Matt. 4:17).

WHAT KINGDOM OF HEAVEN WAS AT HAND? Why, the one that "the God of heaven" had promised to "set up" and which was to "stand for ever." ["The God of heaven (shall) set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed" Dan. 2:31-45].

WHERE WAS THIS "KINGDOM OF HEAVEN" to be set up? On this earth! How do you know? Because the "God of heaven" came down to this earth to set it up (Lu. 2:11, "Christ the Lord"—"the Lord from heaven." "I came down from heaven," 1 Cor. 15:47; Jno. 6:38, 10:30; Matt. 4:17, 8-9).

WHAT KIND OF PEOPLE were to be in the "kingdom of heaven?" The kind described in Matt. 5:3-12—"Blessed are the meek: for they shall inherit the earth. . . . Blessed are the merciful: for they shall obtain mercy. Blessed are the pure in heart: for they shall see God" (Matt. 5:5, 7-8). This is a word picture of a perfect person in the kingdom. It is a picture of the Christ. The meek are to be **blessed by inheriting the earth**. What good would the earth do them, if the kingdom was not "set up" **on the earth**? Jesus taught them to pray, "Thy will be done **in earth**, as it is in heaven." Why pray this prayer, if the kingdom wherein God's will is to be done, is not to be set up **on this earth**? Do you think Jesus would teach them to pray for a thing that is never to happen? Jesus taught them to pray, "**THY KINGDOM COME.**" What kingdom come? Why, the one that the prophets revealed that "the God of heaven" promised to "set up." They have a right to expect this prayer to be answered. "The God of heaven" will not disappoint them. "He is faithful that promised."

THE KING'S POWER

"When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.

And, behold, there came a leper and worshipped him, saying, Lord if thou wilt, thou canst make me clean.

And Jesus put forth his hand, and touched him, saying, I will; be thou clean. And immediately his leprosy was cleansed. . . .

¶ And when he was entered into a ship, his disciples followed him.

And, behold, there arose a great tempest in the sea, insomuch that the ship was covered with the waves: but he was asleep.

And his disciples came to him, and awoke him, saying, Lord, save us: we perish.

And ye saith unto them, Why are ye fearful, O ye of little faith? Then he arose, and rebuked the winds and the sea; and there was a great calm.

But the men marvelled, saying, What manner of man is this, that even the winds and the sea obey him! . . .

And, behold, they brought to him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their faith said unto the sick of the palsy; Son, be of good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee" (Matt. 8:1-3; 23-27; 9:2).

Matt. 8-9 is a record of the demonstration made by the "born King of the Jews" that He had power on earth to forgive sins and to deliver them from dreadful diseases, dangers, defects, demons, death and the devil. "An enemy hath done this." Sin came by Satan and death

came by sin. The King demonstrated that He had power to bring to nought the works of Satan and to set up the kingdom. He declared, "All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth" (Matt. 28:18). He was either the greatest impostor of all the ages or He was God, incarnate. He demonstrated by His miracles, that He was **GOD AS WELL AS MAN**, both united in one Person. **THIS IS EXACTLY WHAT** the Old Testament prophesied that the Messiah or Redeemer would be.

THE KING "CAME . . . TO MINISTER"

The "born King of the Jews," "One like" "the Son of man came **not to be ministered unto, but to minister**" (Matt. 20:28).

(1) "Not to be ministered unto." It is a king's privilege to serve and bless his people. When Israel rejected the Lord of heaven as their King and chose human kings, God set forth in many-fold form, the fact that these kings would oppress them and take them and their possessions to minister to their kings (1 Sam. 8:6-22). Not so with the King of kings.

(2) He "came . . . to minister." He demonstrated this. See Mat. 8-9. Earthly kings live in marble palaces and wear golden, jewel-decked crowns and require the ministry of a multitude. Not so with Him who "came . . . to minister" to the multitude. "Foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay His head" (Matt. 8:20). "All things were made by Him; and without Him was not anything made that was made" (Jno. 1:3). He came to the world which He had made, yet He never kept for Himself even a place "to lay His head." He gave all, including His life, for others. The King of kings "came . . . to minister." And He "will come again" **to minister**. A sin-sick world certainly needs Him. "The Sun of Righteousness" shall "arise with healing in His wings."

THE MESSAGE OF "THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN" WAS PRIMARILY FOR ISRAEL

Matthew was written especially for the Jews, as its internal evidence and preceding prophecies disclose. It is the gospel of "the kingdom of heaven." The expression "kingdom of heaven" occurs in the book over thirty times. It **does not** occur elsewhere in the New Testament. These facts are significant. Matthew was written primarily for the Jew, as John was for the church. In Matthew the message is, the King is here ready to set up the kingdom, which is a Jewish program. In John the message is "Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of **the WORLD**," which is the church's world program. Matthew speaks of law and the Jew. John speaks of grace and the church. Contrast Matt. 19:16-26 (Law) with Jno. 6:28-29 (Grace). In harmony with this, we find that as soon as the King's credentials were established (Matt. 1-4) and He had outlined His kingdom program as in Matt. 5-7 and demonstrated He had the power to "set up" a kingdom of heaven (Matt. 8-9), then He sent His heralds with a kingdom message **confined to the Jews**: "GO NOT into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans **enter ye not**: But GO rather TO the lost sheep of **THE HOUSE OF ISRAEL**. And as ye go, preach, saying, The **kingdom of heaven** is at hand" (Matt. 10:5-7). They were not allowed to preach to the Gentiles, nor even to the Samaritans (who were Jews who had inter-bred with Gentiles), that the kingdom of heaven was at hand. He did not, **at this time**, allow them to preach that He was the Christ. "Then charged He His disciples that they should **tell no man** that He was

Jesus the Christ" (Matt. 16:20). Why was this? The Gentiles or nations had failed to govern the world for God. From the time of the sin and rebellion at Babel, on past the day of the call of Abraham, "They did not like to retain God in their knowledge," and "God gave them up." "In times past (God) suffered all nations to walk in their own ways" (Rom. 1:21-28; Acts 14:16). God's spirit will not always strive with man. So God set the Gentiles (nations) aside and chose a nation, the Jews. At the time of Christ's advent, the Jew was God's chosen instrument. Thru them, God purposed to set up a kingdom of heaven. God had made an unconditional, everlasting covenant with Abraham and later with David, descendant of Abraham, to establish a kingdom on earth that would not pass away—a Jewish nation that would be a "great nation"; "an holy nation," in which all the families of the earth would be blessed. Notwithstanding Israel's fearful sins and failures, God is bound by oath to fulfil His promises. "The gifts and calling of God are WITHOUT REPENTANCE"; that is, a change of mind (Rom. 11:29). God chose Israel to "set up" the kingdom and WILL YET BRING HIS ELECTIONS TO PASS. The time was at hand when God had promised that *Messiah, the Prince should come (Dan. 9:25-27 with Mk. 1:14-15). "The God of heaven" shall "set up a kingdom" (Dan. 2:44-45). So "the Lord from heaven" was here, FAITHFUL TO THE PROMISE, ready to set up the kingdom. The message of the kingdom of heaven was, of course, to and for the Jews. Therefore, the Lord commanded, "Go not into the way of the Gentiles"; tell no man that Jesus is the Christ (Matt. 10:5-7; 16:20).

In the foreknowledge of God, it was foreseen that the Jews would reject their King at His "first coming" and crucify Him. Then they would be scattered under curse until "the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled." And during this interval in the unrevealed plans of God, was His purpose to preach Christ crucified for the sins of the world, that the church might be called out and formed, that is, "God . . . did visit the Gentiles to take out of them a people for His name," for Himself (Acts 15:13-18). The word "visit" indicates a temporary call, after which He is to return to His "chosen" people. See page 88 for the purpose and position of the church.

Prophecy reveals that a "Jewish remnant" will eventually return to "the land" and there, chastened by God, they will repent and accept their King. See pages 31-2. From the time God "scattered" them until they "return," God has kept and will keep them a separated people. History records that NO OTHER RACE ON EARTH has remained a scattered, yet a separated people as have the Jews. Certainly the hand of God is upon them. He will yet set up the kingdom by and thru them. Their history and the prophecies of Scripture powerfully confirm the divine authorship of the Bible. Pages 32-6. The Jews rejected the kingdom program and crucified their King. Then the Jewish nation was temporarily set aside, as God's instrument. Only a Jewish remnant remained faithful to God. The crucified "King of the Jews" arose from the grave. THEN the risen Christ, crucified for the sins of the world, bade this faithful Jewish remnant go into all the world (Gentiles) and preach that Jesus was the Christ (Matt. 28:18-20). Then the church, now composed largely of Gentiles, was born.

Christianity is the result of a divine interposition by God and not the result of a human, evolutionary process as the modernist falsely teaches. God called the Jews. They were "His chosen people." (A result of

*The Hebrew for Messiah means anointed—the One chosen by divine anointing to be King.

Divine intervention, not evolution.) They sinned and were temporarily set aside. God turned to the Gentiles for a season. From among them, He forms the church, by regeneration. They are "now the people of God" (Jno. 3:3-7; Acts 2; 1 Pet. 2:9-10). The church is the result of divine intervention. It is a "new creation." It is not a product of evolution. It is the setting aside of the old and the bringing in of the new, and we have the Old Testament and the New Testament. Before the cross, it was Israel (Jews); since the cross, it is the church (Gentiles). When you see some modernist, with a D.D. after his name, learnedly discoursing from pulpit or press to an indifferent public on the evolution of the church, please keep these facts in mind.

The birth of the church in no wise makes null and void God's everlasting oath-bound covenant made with David and Israel, to set up for them a kingdom which shall never be destroyed. God promised them the kingdom. "He is faithful that promised." "There hath not failed one word of all His good promise."

ISRAEL IS NOT CAST OFF PERMANENTLY

"Thou, Israel, art MY SERVANT, . . . I have CHOSEN thee, and NOT CAST THEE AWAY" (Isa. 41:8-9). This Scripture was written as the Jews were going out into exile and their hope, from a human viewpoint seemed dead. "Hath God cast away His people (Israel)? God forbid" (Rom. 11:1). This Scripture was written after the church was born. Even when going into exile, they were still God's "chosen people," so far as the kingdom was concerned. Even centuries later, after the church had been called out, the Jew was and still is God's instrument by which He will set up the kingdom of heaven on earth. "Thy God loved Israel, to establish them forever" (2 Chron. 9:8). "I will make her . . . that was cast far off a strong nation: and the LORD SHALL REIGN over them IN Mount Zion from henceforth, even forever" (Mic. 4:7). "The Lord would not destroy the house of David, BECAUSE OF THE COVENANT that He had made with David" (2 Chr. 21:7). Christ, descendant of David, the "born" King of the Jews shall rule God's people, Israel (Matt. 2:1-6; Lu. 1:30-35). And thru the Jewish remnant (pp. 31-32, 94) God will yet bless all families of the earth (Gen. 12:1-3; Isa. 11). Remember that the nations rebelled and refused "to retain God in their knowledge" and were set aside at and after Babel. Eventually God chose a nation, the Jews, to be an instrument in re-establishing a reign of heaven over the earth, which reign had been lost at Adam's fall. The first man, Adam, headed up THE LOSS of the rule of heaven over the earth. The "last Adam" Christ, RESTORES the rule of heaven over the earth. (Rom. 5:12-19; 1 Cor. 15:24-47.) Just as by one man, Adam, came sin and by one man, Christ, came righteousness; so by one man, Adam, came the loss of earth's rule and by one man, Christ, comes the regaining of heaven's rule over the earth. Just as the Lord left heaven and was on earth for a season—personal and visible—to accomplish the first event, so the Lord will again leave heaven and be on earth—personal and visible—to accomplish the second event. The things of redemption are in balance divine. (Matt. 25:27-31; 26:29; Acts 1:9-11; Zech. 14:1-4).

"And God purposed through (Christ) to reconcile the universe to Himself . . . things on earth and things in heaven" (Col. 1:20, Weymouth translation).

THE JEWS REJECTED THEIR KING AT HIS FIRST COMING

God provided His own Son from heaven to be their King. Yet, they would "not have this man to reign over" them (Lu. 19:14; Matt. 12:14; Mk. 8:31). They preferred Caesar to the King of heaven, just as their forefathers preferred Saul to the King of heaven (1 Sam. 8:7, Am. Ver.). There could be no "kingdom of heaven" set up without the King from heaven to reign. He alone has been obedient; therefore, He alone has a right to rule. So God temporarily set aside and deferred the program to "set up" the kingdom. God is still bound by the same promises and oath-bound covenants that He made with David and Abraham, to "set up" the kingdom thru Israel. "He is faithful that promised."

THE "FIRST" AND THE "SECOND" COMING OF THE CHRIST

The Old Testament sets forth two major lines of prophecies concerning the promised and coming Christ. One was of a Christ in humiliation, who was to die to redeem the world. The other was of a reigning Christ, a King in His glory. Some of the ancient fathers were troubled about this and thought that perhaps God had promised two Christs. The Scripture discloses ONE Christ but *TWO SPECIAL COMINGS of that Christ; first as a "smitten," crucified Christ (Isa. 53); second as a smiting, reigning King (Dan. 2:31-45; Matt. 25; Rev. 19).

*In the Old Testament, it is usual to find both advents of Christ prophetically referred to in the same passage of Scripture. This is illustrated in Isa. 9:6-7. "For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder; and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this."

The dominant thot in this passage refers to the second coming of Christ, as King. Then, the government of the earth shall be upon His shoulder and He will reign as "Prince of Peace." These parts of this prophecy have not yet been fulfilled. This necessitates and awaits His second coming. But the expression, "child is born," clearly refers to His first coming and incarnation, when He was born of the virgin Mary.

Read Isaiah 11. Verse one clearly refers to His birth, as son of David and therefore, to His first coming. But verse four as clearly refers to His second coming, when He will take "vengeance on them that know not God" (2 Thes. 1:7-9). He has not yet taken vengeance. Therefore, the fulfillment of this prophecy awaits and necessitates His second coming.

If you will run thru the genealogies in the Old Testament and compare them with Matt. 1:1-17 and Lu. 3:23-38, you will find that the †"literal" ancestry of the Christ was prophesied ahead of time and these prophecies were literally fulfilled. It was also prophesied that He would be born in Bethlehem. This was literally

†The genealogy of Jesus Christ, as recorded and preserved by God in His holy Word, is the only genealogy in existence, that can be traced directly back to Adam. God laid His hand on a man and used the man as a medium to convey revelation from God to man. This prophet recorded the genealogy of certain persons. The written prophecy was laid away. Centuries later, God would again lay His hand on another man and raise him up as a prophet. This prophet would take up this same line of genealogy and bring it up to date. Then this written prophecy would be laid on the shelf. Later this process would be repeated and lo, and behold, in the fullness of time, you find this genealogy consummating in the birth and the bringing into the world of the Lord Jesus Christ. And the genealogy of no other person is carried intact thruout the Bible. This is evidence that the theme of the Bible centers in this Person, the Saviour.

It was prophesied that the Christ would be a descendant of David (2 Sam. 7:4-29; Ps. 89:3-4, 34-37; Acts 2:29-30); a descendant of Abraham (Gen. 12:5; 18:18; 22:18; Gal. 3:16); a descendant of Shem (Gen. 9:18, 27; 1 Chron. 1:1-2:15), who was a son of Noah. By maintaining the genealogy of Jesus Christ thru the prophets, God presents the evidence to demonstrate that "He is faithful that promised." Christ's genealogy, carried intact thruout the Bible, is all a matter of accident or design. A careful investigation of this fact will richly repay any honest seeker after truth, as to the inspiration of the Scriptures. It will convince any honest open-minded investigator that this genealogy of our Lord in the Bible is necessarily there by design, and that design is from the very nature of the facts in the case, necessarily divine. The Bible is "the Word of God." Who said so? Jesus Christ, who was God, incarnate!

DANIEL SETS FORTH BOTH "COMINGS": (1) "Messiah the Prince shall . . . BE CUT OFF, but not for himself" (Dan. 9:25-26; Isa. 53: 8; Jno. 1:29; 12:12-19; 19:16-22, 30). This prophecy had to do with the coming death of Christ for the sins of the world. (2) "One like the Son of man" came to the great Father, God, "and there was given

fulfilled (Mic. 5:2 cf Matt. 2:5-6). It was prophesied that He would be both human and divine. This was literally fulfilled (Isa. 7:14-15 cf Lu. 1:31-35; 2:10-11; Jno. 1:1-14). It was prophesied that He would bear the punishment for sinners (Isa. 53:6-12). This was literally fulfilled (Rom. 5:6; 1 Pet. 2:24). The place where He would die was revealed ahead of time. This was literally fulfilled (Gen. 22:2 cf 2 Chr. 3:1 cf Lu. 9:31). The manner of His death was revealed ahead of time. This was literally fulfilled. By comparing the following Scriptures, we have a few illustrations of this revelation, concerning the manner of His death and its fulfillment. "As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up" (Nu. 21:9; Jno. 3:14). "They pierced my hands and my feet" (Ps. 22:16). "They shall smite the Judge of Israel with a rod upon the cheek" (Mic. 5:1 cf Matt. 27:30). "They shall look upon me whom they have pierced" (Zech. 12:10 cf Jno. 19:37). "A bone of Him shall not be broken" (Ex. 12:46 cf Jno. 19:36). See Mk. 8:32; 9:31; 10:32-34. All of these details (and many others) altho written by different prophets in different countries and separated by centuries, were literally fulfilled in Jesus Christ and His death. Their prophecy and their later historical fulfillment prove, beyond a doubt, that the Bible is the inspired Word of God.

"The Lamb of God" prophecies of the Old Testament have their literal fulfillment recorded in the New Testament. Over twenty-four Old Testament prophecies concerning "the Lamb of God" were literally fulfilled within twenty-four hours of time, when Christ died on the cross. This is a matter of either accident or design. To get a glimpse of the practical impossibility of accident in all this, we call attention to six of these fulfilled prophecies. It can be demonstrated that the (1) year, (2) month, (3) day, (4) hour, (5) place, (6) and purpose of Christ's death were revealed in prophecy ahead of time. Dan. 9:25-26 and Mk. 1:14-15 with other Scripture and facts in history clearly and conclusively prove that God, thru the prophets, revealed ahead of time the very year in which "Messiah, the Prince" would be "cut off. . . . for the transgression of my people." Notice the expression "cut off" in Dan. 9:26 and Isa. 53:8 and study it in connection with its Scriptural context. The month, day and hour on which Christ was to die was symbolically revealed ahead of time and literally fulfilled. See Ex. 12:1-13 and pages 10, 13. It was prophesied that "the Lamb of God" would die on the first month of the Jewish revised calendar year. See Ex. 12:1-6. This would be their month, Nisan (parts of March and April). He was to die on the fourteenth day in the evening hour. It was prophesied that the place of His death would be on a prominence or hill near Jerusalem (Gen. 22:2 with context of chapter; 2 Chron. 3:1; Deut. 12:5-6; 16:2; Lu. 9:31, 51; Jno. 19:16-18). It was prophesied that the purpose of the death of the Christ would be to "make His soul an offering for sin," to "bare the sin of many" (Isa. 53:10-12).

It can be proven and demonstrated that Christ died in the exact year, month, day and hour that the prophets revealed that He would die. The year on which Christ died was revealed by Daniel over five hundred years ahead of time; so as far as the human element for chance goes, there would be only one chance in over 500 for Him to die on the year that He actually did die. It was prophesied that He would die on their first month and He did die on this month. Since there are 12 months in the year, there is only one chance in twelve that He would die in the Jewish month, Nisan. Therefore, there is at least only one chance in 500×12 or 6,000 that He would die on the year and the month on which He did die. There are 30 days in a month. Therefore, there was only one chance in 30 for Him to die on the fourteenth day. If you figure the Jewish day as divided into four periods or "hours" each, then there was only one chance in four for Him to die during the "evening hour." Therefore, there was at least only one chance in $500 \times 12 \times 30 \times 4$ or 720,000 for Him to die on the year, month, day and hour on which He did die. He was to die on a prominence near Jerusalem. It is self-evident that from a human viewpoint, there were more than 1,000 other places in the world where He could have died. Now $720,000 \times 1,000 = 720,000,000$. Therefore, there was less than one chance in 720,000,000 for Him to die on the year, month, day, hour and place where He did die.

Now how many chances were there for Him to die to "make His soul an

Him **DOMINION**, and **GLORY**, and a **KINGDOM**" (Dan. 7:13-14). See page 68. This prophetic vision reveals that Jesus Christ, as Son of man will come, a King in His glory and receive the kingdom.

PETER SETS FORTH BOTH "COMINGS": The prophets inquired and searched diligently as to "what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the **SUFFERINGS** of Christ, and the **GLORY** that should follow" (1 Pet. 1:10-11). The "sufferings of Christ" refer to His first advent and to His death on the cross. "The glory that should follow" refers to the time when He shall "come in His glory" and be crowned King.

offering for sin" to "bare the sin of many?" There have been countless millions of human beings on earth. Do you know of any of them that ever made his "soul an offering for sin?" Christ was the Lamb without blemish—the only sinless Man there ever was. See page 11. Then there must be only one chance in "countless millions" that He would be the one, Who alone could offer innocent blood in sacrifice for sin. Now multiply this figure by your last figure and what do you have as the figure for the element of chance? Now go on down thru the entire list of these more than 24 prophesied events that were literally fulfilled within 24 hours of time, when Christ died, and you may get some faint idea of the figures, which if written out, would express the element of mere chance in these prophecies and their fulfillment.

If you were on a jury and the evidence was ten times as great for the defendant as it was for the plaintiff, the "preponderating evidence" would oblige you to decide in favor of the defendant. Now if the evidence for the defendant was a thousand times greater for the defendant than for the plaintiff, then all thinking people would say the plaintiff didn't have any case at all. Now when the skeptic or modernist complains and strikes against the atoning death of Jesus Christ for the sins of the world, he is entirely ruled out of court on the ground that he is absolutely without evidence. When the element of chance is less than one in billions, or trillions or quadrillions, then you have long since passed the realm of chance and are standing on the ground of certainty. There is not even a probability of a chance that Jesus Christ is not the Saviour, that the prophets revealed would come. Facts themselves eliminate even the shadow of a chance and prove beyond question that the Bible is "the Word of God." It is a divine revelation to man. These prophecies are not in the Scripture by accident, **BUT BY DESIGN**, and that design is of necessity divine. The Bible is the Word of God. It is the Scripture which "cannot be broken." Why do men listen to the siren songs of blinded "scholars," who neither know God, nor His Word nor obey the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ? Why do men reject the redemption that God gave in Christ Jesus and go out into an eternal night, without a Saviour, without hope and without God?

"**BUT ALL THIS** was done, that the **SCRIPTURES OF THE PROPHETS MIGHT BE FULFILLED**" (Matt. 26:56). When the Old Testament prophesied concerning these things which had to do with Christ's first coming, it is decidedly evident that God intended for the prophecy to be understood in a literal sense (in the sense in which that term is properly used with reference to Scripture). There is a long line of Old Testament prophecies concerning Christ's coming to be crucified. The New Testament records their literal fulfillment. There is a long line of Old Testament prophecies concerning Christ's coming to be crowned King. The New Testament records the literal fulfillment of these events up to the time of the King's ascension into heaven. These two lines of Old Testament prophecies are commonly found associated in the same Scripture passages; they practically parallel each other up to the ascension of Christ and in **BOTH CASES** their prophecies were literally fulfilled. That is, the crucified Christ or coming King (one and the same person), was to be son of David, son of Abraham, son of Shem, son of Seth, and son of Adam, and He was to be born in Bethlehem. In each case, the Person was to be a Being, both Divine and human. In both cases, He was to be humiliated, rejected and killed. In view of facts and especially of the fact that the prophesied events of Christ's first coming were literally fulfilled and the prophesied events of Christ's second coming were literally fulfilled up to the time of His ascension, it is illogical, unreasonable and unsound for any one to refuse to accept the remaining prophecies concerning the King and His kingdom, as other than events that are to be literally fulfilled. God's program of redemption, as outlined in the Bible absolutely requires their

MICAH SETS FORTH BOTH "COMINGS": Before taking up Micah's presentation, let us note that Isaiah, unfolding the future, pictures Israel as a woman in the pangs of travail and states, "she was delivered of a man child" and in the next verse, we read, "shall a nation be born at once?" (Isa. 66:1-8). Israel, collectively, is referred to in Scripture as God's Son. "Thus saith the Lord, Israel is my son, even my firstborn" (Ex. 4:22-23). There is identity between the King and His people and in this, the nation, collectively, is figurative of Christ, the real and "only begotten son of God." As we shall see, these passages picture the rebirth of the Jewish kingdom during the

literal fulfillment. "Search the Scriptures" and see! Too many opinions are held by people who have no proper facts on which to base them. Too many theories are taught by men, who either do not know the Scripture or refuse to accept its teachings and authority. "To the law and to the testimony" of the Word of God.

There are two views held with reference to the remaining unfulfilled prophecies, concerning the King and His kingdom. There are those who accept them as "literal." There are those who accept them only in a "spiritual" sense; they "spiritualize" away the literal teaching of these passages. These views directly oppose each other. One of them is necessarily wrong. Do you hold the right view or the wrong view? It is evident beyond a reasonable question, that those who hold the "spiritual" interpretation are wrong. To hold this viewpoint, in view of the facts, is to do great violence to Scripture, to reason, and to the Bible's program of redemption. It is not intended to be said that the prophecies concerning both the first and the second coming of the Lord never have any spiritual significance or truth other than the literal. But it is evident from Scripture and from history, that God primarily intends for us to understand both of these lines of prophecies in a "literal" sense. Just as the King or Governor of God's people, Israel, was actually to be born in Bethlehem, so He is actually to reign in Jerusalem (Mic. 5:2 cf Matt. 2:5-6; Zech. 9:9 cf Matt. 21:1-17; Mic. 4:6-8; Matt. 23:38-39). The former has been literally fulfilled. The latter awaits literal fulfillment, which is evidently near at hand; for the Jews are going back to Jerusalem, there to found a kingdom. Past Jewish history (and Gentile history) discloses that a kingdom can be governed in righteousness only by the King of kings. It is, therefore, necessary for the King of kings to come back from heaven and "set up" a kingdom on earth and govern it for God. "Jesus Christ . . . whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution (restoration) of all things" (Acts 3:20-21).

We find the Old Testament contains a long line of prophecies concerning the King and His kingdom or the second advent of Christ. We find the New Testament records the literal fulfillment of this line of prophecies, until the King and kingdom were rejected and the King ascended into heaven. Not only this, but the New Testament recurs to some of these Old Testament prophecies that, as yet, are unfulfilled; adds details to them and re-asserts that they will yet be literally fulfilled. The Old Testament prophesied that when the Son of man was to be given the kingdom, He would come "in the clouds of heaven." The New Testament recurs to this prophecy, confirms it and asserts that it will yet come to pass. See proof of this in Dan. 7:13-14 with Acts 1:9-11 and Rev. 1:7 and page 68.

The Old Testament prophesied, that out of Bethlehem, the Messiah would "Come forth," Who is to be ruler in Israel (Mic. 5:2). The New Testament recurs to this same prophecy and records, "Thou . . . shalt call His name Jesus, He shall be great . . . and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David: And he shall reign over the house of Jacob" (Matt. 2:1-6; Lu. 1:31-35). Thus, we see that the New Testament recurs to this Old Testament prophecy, adds details to it, confirms it and asserts that it will yet come to pass. This Old Testament prophecy, before Christ's birth, revealed that He would be literally born in Bethlehem. History records that He was born there. Logic requires and prophecy demands that the balance of this prophecy shall be literally fulfilled. This necessitates and awaits the time when He "shall rule" God's "people, Israel."

The Scriptures, the condition of humanity and God's program of redemption require the literal fulfillment of the remaining King and kingdom prophecies. To attempt to "spiritualize" away their literal fulfillment, is manifestly unsound.

change from Church Age to Kingdom Age, which includes the tribulation period.

Micah, thru the Holy Spirit (3:8) sets forth that the "Lord . . . will make HER . . . that was cast far off a strong nation: and **THE LORD** shall **REIGN** over them **IN** Mount Zion . . . even forever." The condition under which this is to occur is then set forth in the figure, as when the "daughter of Zion" labours "to bring forth . . . like a woman in travail" (Micah 4:6-10). Revelation, which is the book of consummations and which records events in the great tribulation and the rebirth of the Jewish nation, records the fulfillment of these prophecies of Isaiah and Micah. Israel is pictured as "a woman clothed with the sun . . . upon her head a crown of twelve stars . . . being with child cried, **TRAVAILING** in birth . . . and she brought forth a man child." And Isaiah's question as to whether "a nation be born at once" is answered; for "the daughter of Zion" during the "great tribulation" suffers, is chastened, travails and turns to God and they are "born at once" into a nation; "and **the Lord** shall **reign** over **THEM** in Mount Zion . . . even forever" (Rev. 12:1-10, 17; Isa. 66:7-8, 22; Mic. 4:7).

The Jews were in Egypt, but God had chosen them to set up a kingdom. The terrible plagues occurred, followed by the initiation of the **Passover** at which time the Jews were "born at once" into a nation. See page 25. Prophecy reveals that at the "end time" "scattered" Jews throughout the world will "return" to "the land"; the great tribulation and plagues will occur and the Jews will again be "born at once" into a nation. (Gen. 12:1-3; Ex. 19:5-6; Isa. 66:7-8). **THE FORMER IS A TYPE OF THE LATTER.**

Micah momentarily, as it were, drops the subject of the travail of the daughter of Zion and refers to the travail of "the Judge of Israel"—"They shall **SMITE** the **Judge** of Israel with a rod **upon the cheek**" (Mic. 5:1). Christ revealed that He was "the Judge of Israel." "For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son" (Jno. 5:22). Since Christ is "the Judge," He is the One who prophecy revealed was to be smitten. In God's plan of redemption, "the Judge" takes the prisoner's place at the judgment bar and pays the penalty for sin (which is death), in the prisoner's place and stead. As Christ's death was approaching, He said, "A woman when she is in **travail** hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world" (Jno. 16:21). Jesus evidently had in mind "the **travail** of His soul" when He would be "smitten of God" and "make His soul an offering for sin," as Isa. 53:4-11 clearly sets forth. Matthew, which is the gospel of the kingdom, sets forth that after Christ was **REJECTED** as King and "Governor" over "God's people Israel" that "they spit upon Him, and took the reed, and **SMOTE** Him on the head" (Matt. 27:30). Thus, the prophet, Micah, clearly had in view the first coming and rejection of the Christ, when He prophesied, "They shall smite the judge of Israel with a rod upon the cheek." As we have

Brethren! Let us accept the facts; let us accept "the Word of God" in these matters. Why should the "modernist" reject the Scripture concerning the second coming of Christ, just as the scribes and Pharisees rejected the Scripture concerning the first coming of Christ? Why should it be that a thing incredible that the Christ, who came the first time, should also come a second time? Doesn't the world need a literal Christ—One who can deliver it from diseases, demons, dearth, defects, danger, death and the devil? He promised to come again—"I will come again" (Jno. 14:3). "There hath not failed one word of all His good promise."

seen, it is usual for the first and the second comings of the Christ **both** to appear in the **same** prophecy. This is the case in Micah, "They shall smite the judge of Israel . . . **THEREFORE** will He give them up, **UNTIL** the time that she (Israel) which travaileth **HATH brought forth**" a nation (Mic. 5:1, 3). We have just seen that Israel travails and brings forth a nation **AT THE SECOND COMING** of Christ and during the transition period, from the Church to the Kingdom Age. Micah, centuries before the birth of Christ, clearly sets forth that Christ would be smitten and crucified at His first coming and **because of this**, He would **THEREFORE GIVE THEM UP UNTIL**—Israel, in sorrow and travail, the tribulation being on, finally brings forth a chastened remnant, who will receive Him as King and "a nation" is "born at once." Numerous, marvelous prophecies like this and their literal fulfillment in history prove beyond question that the Bible is the Word of God and that the prophets wrote with heads and hands guided by God. "Search the Scriptures."

Jesus said, "O fools (dull-witted minds), and slow of heart to believe **ALL** that the prophets have spoken . . . **ALL** things **must** be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalms, concerning me" (Lu. 24:22-27; 44:45).

ISAIAH SETS FORTH BOTH "COMINGS" OF THE LORD. (1) Isaiah 53, presents Him in humiliation, crucified for the sins of the world, "He shall bear their iniquities." (2) Isaiah 11:11 represents that "The Lord shall set His hand again the **SECOND TIME** to recover the remnant of His people," Israel. After Christ, the King, was rejected and the end was drawing near, He said, "**I will come AGAIN.**" "Come . . . the **SECOND TIME** to recover the remnant." As Jesus was leaving Jerusalem, the scene of His rejection at His first coming and the site of His reign at His second coming, He said, "How **often** would I have gathered thy children together, **EVEN AS** a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and **YE WOULD NOT!**" (Matt. 23:37). **IF THEY WOULD HAVE NO CHRIST, THEY COULD HAVE NO KINGDOM.**

"Your house is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not **SEE** me henceforth, **TILL** ye shall say, Blessed is He that **COMETH** in the name of the Lord" (Matt. 23:38-39). Jerusalem will again **SEE** Jesus, her rightful King.

God does not force His government upon an individual or people. To reject Jesus Christ, God's chosen Ruler for this earth, is to refuse to go under the government of God. Israel is God's Son (Ex. 4:22). They are His "chosen" people, but they rejected Jesus Christ. They are in a state of rebellion. So the Father's hand, thru the years is chastening and punishing the Jew. Finally, a scattered remnant will return to "the land," become sick of their sin and turn to God and His King, the Lord Jesus Christ. Then, He will take them and set up the kingdom. If you will investigate facts and conditions in Palestine **as they are today** you will find plenty of evidence to indicate that this process is now going on. Scattered Jews from over the world are now returning to "the land" of their forefathers.

Recently the steamer "President Arthur" left New York harbor and sailed for the Holy Land. "This was the first voyage of the first ship of the American Palestine line; and on her funnels was the six-pointed star, the shield of David, and from her masthead the flag of Judea will fly on the high seas **for the first time** in 2,000 years. There were 500 Zionists on board, bound for the homeland."—Wichita Eagle.

"THE SIGN" OF HIS SECOND "COMING"

After Jesus and His disciples had left the temple and were ON THE MOUNT OF OLIVES, they asked, "What shall be **the sign** of thy COMING, and of the end of the world?" ("The consummation of the age?" or †the end of man's rule over the earth?) "And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. . . . Many shall come . . . saying, I am Christ. . . . Ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars, . . . **but the end is not yet.** . . . Nation shall rise against nation. . . . There shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes **in divers places.** . . . False prophets (teachers) . . . shall deceive many. . . . **INIQUITY SHALL ABOUND** (and) the love of **many** shall wax cold. . . . **AS** the days of Noah were, **SO** shall also the coming of the Son of man be. . . . **YE . . . SHALL SEE** the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet. . . . Then shall be **GREAT TRIBULATION**" (Matt. 24). Does this word picture, painted by the Son of man, of conditions which are "signs" that shall exist preceding His second coming, indicate that the world will be brought to Christ by the church? Jesus taught and the Scripture teaches that "the church" will not bring "the world" to Christ. "The world" is like the Jew **was**—they "**WILL NOT** have this Man to reign over" them (Lu. 19:14).

Studies concerning conditions at "the end of the world:" "The coming of our Lord Jesus Christ" **will not "Come, except** there come a ***falling away first**, and that **man of sin** be revealed, the son of perdition"(2 Thes. 2). This "falling away," of necessity, refers to the church, as the church is God's only visible representative. The process is now well under way. Some church leaders are now forsaking the Bible and Christ and are leading people out into a starless night without God and His Word. It is the "man of sin" or "the beast" who heads up the final "abomination of desolation" to which Christ referred. "This know also, that **in the last days** perilous times shall come" (2 Tim. 3:1-9). Be sure to read 2 Pet. 2:1-3. In Gen. 6, the two "seeds" mingled and the earth became corrupt before God: so will it be "when the son of man comes" (Matt. 24:37-39). The "church" is now mingling with "the world." "**A falling away first.**" With this compare Matt. 13:33. In Scripture symbolism, "leaven" typifies evil (Matt. 16:12; 1 Cor. 5:6-8). Mark 3:25 contains a lesson in view of present conditions in the church (2 Tim. 4:3-4; 3:13). Remember that "the abomination of desolation" is the climax of Satan's evil reign and marks the consummation of the age, or "the end" of "the world" or man's rule over the earth (Compare Dan. 9 with Matt. 24 and see "the world," pages 104-116).

THE KING CRUCIFIED AT HIS FIRST COMING

"Over his head His accusation written, **THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS**" (Matt. 27:37). They buried His body. He arose from the grave. "He is risen, **AS He said,**" "Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up." They could destroy the body that God had prepared, but they could not destroy "the Lord from heaven," the "I" ("I am"), the eternal Being, who was united in and with that body by the virgin birth method (Heb. 10:5; Lu. 1:31-35; 2:10-11; Jno. 2:19; 1:1-3, 14).

†According to prophetic Scripture, God will eventually bring man's corrupt rule of the earth to an end. God will then rule the earth in righteousness.

*See extensive footnotes or section on this important subject, pp. 117-131.

As we have seen, Scripture refers to the promised or coming Messiah or Saviour, as the "seed" (spermatzaoön) in a spiritual sphere.

"Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ" (Gal. 3:16). (Gen. 22:16-18; Matt. 1:1; Jno. 3:16). He had "life in Himself" (Jno. 5:26). Being a Spirit Person, coming "down from heaven" (Jno. 6:38), with "life in Himself," what the eternal Life (Seed) needed was a **body**. "A body hast thou (God) prepared" (Heb. 10:5). It's the mother function to embody the seed. He had "life in Himself." Therefore, He **never needed and did not have an earthly father**, but the Holy Spirit and the virgin Mary combine, functioning in motherhood or embodiment of the "SEED" (Lu. 1:30-35). "With God all things are possible." His life on earth in this "body" is referred to in Scripture as the "days of His flesh" (Heb. 5:7). He was God and man, **both, united in one Person**. **THIS IS THE CHRIST OF THE BIBLE.**

The typical modernist tells you, in substance, that Jesus Christ was simply man, who by superior evolution became a son of God, or a sort of god. Some teach that Jesus Christ is the only Person ever evolving to such perfection; others teach that many have equaled the Person of Jesus Christ. They teach that men with beast ancestors, thru a process of evolutionary progress have become sons of God or can become gods, and that this is a goal for which the human race is headed. They teach that the god of redemption is evolution instead of "the God of heaven." Evolution worship is encouraged. The worship of God is destroyed.

The Bible is diametrically opposed to modernism and teaches that God was Christ's "own Father" (Jno. 5:18, Am. Ver.); that Jesus was God's "only begotten Son" (Jno. 1:18), and that Jesus Christ was "the son of God" in a sense in which **no other man was ever the Son of God**. See pages 118, 124, and there you will note that both Professor McKeever and Rev. Campbell state in substance, that man himself is or can become deity or god. **The modernist school and church both teach the same thing.** This is a reversion to the man-made gods of the days of paganism, just as evolution itself is a reversion to paganism. Centuries before the birth of Christianity, the pagan, Empedocles and others, taught that the higher forms of life evolved from lower forms of life. Evolution, instead of being modern and up to date, **is out of date. It is revamped paganism**, which is as old as the hills. The Bible is not only "up to date," but it is **ahead of date**, as it reveals **the entire future course of the human race**. **THE TYPICAL MODERNISTS OR EVOLUTIONISTS ARE REACTIONARIES AND OBSTRUCTIONISTS. THEY INTERFERE WITH HUMAN PROGRESS** thru the enlightenment of the Christianity of the Bible. **THEY INTERFERE WITH THE ESTABLISHMENT OF THE KINGDOM**, that the "God of heaven" is going to "set up" on this earth. **THEY INSIST ON REVERSION TO THE DARK AGES AND IDEAS OF PAGANISM.**

The author read an article written by a modernist, who was defending Harry Emerson Fosdick's notoriously false, pagan and skeptic teachings. In this article, both Fosdick and his defender referred to Christ as the son of God, but they would deny that Jesus Christ was God, incarnate, by means of a virgin birth. To them, isn't Jesus Christ a mere man, the product of an evolutionary process, resulting in sonship with God? The Sacred Scriptures, which "cannot be broken" set forth that the

Lord Jesus Christ was a Divine Being, incarnate in and with humanity, for the purpose of accomplishing redemption.

HIS RESURRECTION AND ASCENSION ARE THE NECESSARY AND LOGICAL COUNTERPARTS OF HIS INCARNATION OR HIS VIRGIN BIRTH, AND OF THE OLD AND THE NEW TESTAMENT PROPHECIES AND PROMISES OF HIS RETURN TO SET UP "THE KINGDOM OF HEAVEN." He was God, Who "came down from heaven" to die for the sins of the world, and Who went back to heaven and Who is "coming again" as "King of kings" to rule the earth in righteousness.

"Jesus said, I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that sent me. . . .

I came forth from the Father, and am come into the world: again, I leave the world, and go to the Father" (Jno. 6:38; 16:28).

"And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight.

And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel;

Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven" (Acts. 1:9-11).

"For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this" (Isa. 9:6-7).

"And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. . . .

And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations; and he shall rule them with a rod of iron; and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, **King of kings, and Lord of lords**" (Rev. 19:11-16).

"Behold, a King shall reign in righteousness" (Isa. 32:1).

Scripture sets forth certain purposes of God in redemption, which affect both the individual and the entire earth. **The very nature of these plans and these promises of God necessitated and required a Redeemer, Who was a Divine Being.**

In Micah 4:1-5:5, we saw that the crucified Christ and the reigning King were both set forth in prophecy. See page 53-55. "But thou, Bethlehem Ephratah, though thou be little among the thousands (or families) of Judah, yet out of thee shall he come forth unto me that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting."

In Micah 5:2, we find that this Being, who **"is to be ruler in Israel,"** was to come forth both **"OUT OF"** Bethlehem and out of eternity ("from everlasting"). As descendant of David, Son of man, His "flesh" came out of Bethlehem. As God, the Son, He came out of eternity, for He was present with the Father back in eternity. Jesus said, "O righteous Father . . . thou lovedst me **before** the foundation of the world" (Jno. 17:24-25; 1 Cor. 15:47). Thus we see that centuries ahead of

time, Micah (5:2), prophesied both his Deity and His humanity. See pages 11 and 53-55.

The Bible is "the Word of God" and "shall stand forever." Turn to its Christ. Rest in Him, trust in Him, "believe . . . and thou shalt be saved." Who says so? God says so!

ONLY ONE PERSON has ever come out of Bethlehem, who also came out of eternity ("from everlasting"). And that person was the incarnate Son of God, the Lord Jesus Christ, the "**born King**" of the Jews (Matt. 2:1-6). The Word of God proclaims that this Person **shall be "ruler in Israel"** (Mic. 5:2). Nearly two thousand years have passed since Jesus was born in Bethlehem, yet He has never been "ruler in Israel," but God has promised that He **SHALL BE** and "**SHALL** reign over the house of Jacob (12 tribes) **forever**" (Lu. 1:33). It is the "shall" of Almighty God. "There hath not failed one word of all His good promise." Therefore, the time when He "shall be . . . ruler in Israel" is an event yet future **and awaits and necessitates** His "**second coming**," as "King of kings and Lord of" all. He is an eternal Being and therefore **He alone** qualifies in His ability to "reign . . . forever."

"Open mine eyes that I may see, glimpses of God in eternity."

THE KINGDOM IS YET FUTURE

Christ, **BEFORE** His death, gave them to understand that the kingdom would be an event yet future. You will find proof of this in Matt. 24:3-31; 25:31-34; 26:29, 64; also see pages 59-67. **AFTER** His death and resurrection and just **BEFORE** His ascension "When they therefore were come together, they asked of him saying, Lord, wilt thou at this time **restore** again the **kingdom TO ISRAEL**? And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power" (Acts 1:6-7). **THEY UNDERSTOOD**, and **CHRIST GAVE THEM TO UNDERSTAND**, that the kingdom the "God of heaven" had promised to "set up" **for Israel, WAS YET FUTURE**. Do you think **CHRIST**, who was God incarnate, would deceive them? "God, that cannot lie, promised" (Titus 1:2).

AFTER Christ ascended to heaven in the clouds, as recorded in Acts 1:1-11, Peter cut the enemies of the kingdom to the quick with the Word of God, "Repent . . . and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out. . . . And He (God) shall **SEND** Jesus Christ . . . whom **THE HEAVEN** must receive **UNTIL** the times of **RESTITUTION** (restoration) of all things, which God hath spoken **by the mouth** of all his holy **prophets** since the world began" (Acts 3:19-21). The Word of God teaches that the Jewish kingdom will be restored **AND THAT HEAVEN WILL AGAIN GIVE UP JESUS CHRIST**.

"He is coming again, He is coming again,
The very same Jesus, Rejected of men;
He is coming again, He is coming again,
With pow'r and great glory, He is coming again!"

—Mabel Johnston Camp.

STUDIES CONCERNING THINGS CHRIST SAID ABOUT HIS COMING AGAIN AND THE KINGDOM

Christ must "**BE KILLED**," but "**BE RAISED AGAIN**"

(1) "From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed and be raised again the third day" (Matt. 16:21).

Four outstanding things will be noted in this verse:

(a) Christ "must go unto Jerusalem." This is significant, as God foresaw and revealed thru the prophets that this would be the place of His death. See page 51.

(b) Christ must "suffer many things." Read the prophecies of Isaiah 53.

(c) Christ must "**BE KILLED.**" For it was ordained from the foundation of the world that He should die, a sacrifice, for the sins of the world (1 Pet. 1:18-20; Jno. 3:16).

(d) Christ must "**be RAISED AGAIN the third day.**"

And thereafter, "**The Son of man shall COME,**" "**again**"

(2) Christ said, "**The Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works**" (Matt. 16:27).

"Hereafter ye shall see heaven open, and the angels of God ascending and descending upon the Son of man" (Jno. 1:51).

(a) Christ "**shall COME**" in **glory**.

(b) Christ "**shall COME**" "**with His angels.**"

(c) Christ "**shall COME**" to "**reward.**"

This three-fold event, as yet, has never occurred in the life of Christ, **but it awaits and necessitates His "second" "coming."**

In Matthew 16:21 Christ revealed to them that He "**must be killed,**" **but immediately after this,** He reveals unto them the fact, that **after His death and after His resurrection,** and at some time in the future, He will **come again and COME in glory.**

(3) "And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the vision to no man, until the Son of man be risen again from the dead" (Matt. 17:9).

After the announcement that He would be killed and later "come in glory," then Jesus **recurs to His resurrection.** See page 66. His resurrection makes His coming again possible. His resurrection and His coming again were necessitated by the Word of God, in Old Testament prophecy, which promised, "Neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption" (Ps. 16:10), and that the Son of man would come in glory and receive a kingdom. See Daniel 7:13-14 and page 69.

(4) "And while they abode in Galilee, Jesus said unto them, **The Son of man shall be betrayed into the hands of men:**

And they shall kill him, and the third day he shall be raised again. And they were exceeding sorry" (Matt. 17:22-23).

It will be noted from the preceding Scripture that (**after** the announcement, that He would "come again"), Christ reverts to His approaching death.

In His last earthly hours, three of the outstanding things before the mind of Christ were:

(1) His **death.** (2) His **resurrection.** (3) His **coming again.**

(5) "And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel" (Matt. 19:28).

In the future there is to be a "regeneration," "the again-birth," **of the Jews,** as God's chosen **nation.** See pages 25, 54. "Jesus Christ . . . whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution (reconstitution) of all things" (Acts 3:20-21). **THEN** "the Son of man shall sit in the **THRONE** of His glory." "The Lord God shall give unto Him (Jesus)

the **THRONE** of His father David: And he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever; and of his kingdom there shall be no end" (Lu. 1:30-35).

Christ has never yet received "the throne of His father, David," neither has He reigned "over the house of Jacob forever." These "shalls" or promises of Almighty God, **await** and **necessitate** Christ's second coming.

(6) "And Jesus going up to Jerusalem took the twelve disciples apart in the way, and said unto them,

Behold, we go up to Jerusalem; and the Son of man shall be betrayed unto the chief priests and unto the scribes, and they shall condemn him to death,

And shall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to scourge, and to crucify him: and the third day he shall rise again" (Matt. 20:17-19).

While Christ had just talked about His "throne" and "glory" (See Matt. 19:28), yet, in the preceding Scripture, He again reverts to His approaching death and following resurrection.

(7) "Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children with her sons, worshipping him, and desiring a certain thing of him.

And he said unto her, What wilt thou? She saith unto him, Grant that these my two sons may sit, the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in thy kingdom" (Matt. 20:20-21).

In the preceding Scripture, Jesus converses about His future "**kingdom**."

(8) "Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many" (Matt. 20:28).

After talking about His "throne" and "kingdom," Jesus again reverts to His approaching death as "a ransom" for sinners.

(9) "And when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples,

Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose them, and bring them unto me.

And if any man say aught unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them; and straightway he will send them.

All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

Tell ye the **daughter of Sion**, Behold thy **King** cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass. . .

And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the Son of David: Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord; Hosanna in the highest" (Matt. 21:1-5, 9).

"Blessed be the **kingdom** of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord: Hosanna in the highest" (Mk. 11:10).

It was God's appointed **KING**, for "the daughter of Zion" (Jerusalem), that rode into Jerusalem that day. But Jerusalem rejected her King and purposed to kill Him (Matt. 21:12-23:36).

(10) "O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!

Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.

For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord" (Matt. 23:37-39).

The rejected King leaves their house "desolate" **till** they "shall say, Blessed is He that COMETH in the **name** of the Lord." "**Christ the Lord**" (Lu. 2:10-11), is the **only one** who can ever rightfully come "in the **name** of the Lord." Thus we see that the Lord Jesus Christ promised Jerusalem that He would **come again**.

(11) The following incidents and conversations took place at Jerusalem. It was Christ's last week and therefore a solemn time. The most serious and important things were before His mind. He was facing Calvary's cross and soon to leave His loved disciples.

"And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple; and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple.

And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.

And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet" (Matt. 24:1-6).

Christ's disciples knew that He had been promising them that He would **come** again, and teaching them that "the world" would "end," and that these two events had something in common. Christ also taught them to beware of the coming of false Christs. He gave them "**signs**" of His coming by which they could distinguish the approaching advent and be able to tell the difference between false Christs and **the** Christ (Matt. 24).

(12) "And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end (of the world) come. . . .

For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be" (Matt. 24:14, 21).

Scripture teaches that at "**the end of the world**" there "shall be **great tribulation**." Tribulation never abounds on earth, except where sin abounds. Therefore, at the end of the world, iniquity will abound. It will then be demonstrated that they are false teachers, who state that evolution is perfecting the world.

(13) "Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not.

For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.

Behold, I have told you before.

Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold he is in the secret chambers; believe it not.

For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be" (Matt. 24:23-27).

"For as the lightning, that lighteneth out of the one part of heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day,

But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation" (Lu. 17:24-25).

IN THE FUTURE, false Christs or antichrists will come, but be not deceived, for when the Son of man **comes**, it shall be "as the lightning cometh out of the east," and He "shall destroy (antichrist, "that wicked" one), with the brightness of His **COMING**" (2 Thess. 2:8). **Repeatedly** Jesus taught them that in the future He would "come again." "I will come again" (Jno. 14:3). "**BUT FIRST**" (Lu. 17: 24-25), He must suffer and die for the sins of the world.

(14) "Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken:

And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with the power and great glory" (Matt. 24:29-30).

"For whosoever shall be ashamed of me and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and in his Father's and of the holy angels" (Lu. 9:26).

"**AFTER** the tribulation (which occurs "at the end of the world," i. e., the end of man's rule over the earth) . . . **THEN** . . . They shall **SEE** the Son of man **COMING** in the clouds of heaven **with power and great glory.**" See pages 68-70.

(15) "Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass, till all these things be fulfilled (See Matt. 24:1-33).

Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away" (Matt. 24:34-35).

Christ taught them that †"this generation," that is, this line or race of people, the Jews, would not pass away till "the kingdom" was "set up." "This generation" whom Jesus was addressing were descendants of Abraham and David, with whom (and their posterity), God had made oath-bound covenants to establish them as a permanent kingdom. God has kept His hand on the Jew thru the ages. They have not passed away, but will remain a separated, chosen people, awaiting God's appointed time to "set up" the "kingdom." Christ, the coming King, assured the Jews that God, the Father, was still faithful to His promises and covenants. "Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's good pleasure to give **you** the kingdom" (Lu. 12:32). Since Christ made this statement, the Jews have never yet been given the kingdom. Christ's statement **necessitates** and **awaits** the setting up of the kingdom.

The words of Jesus Christ concerning His "coming again" and "the end of the world" "shall not pass away." They are the words of God (incarnate), which "shall stand forever."

"¶But of that day and hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the **coming** of the Son of man be.

For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark.

And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the **coming** of the Son of man be.

†The word "generation" in Scripture is applied to the Jews, as a particular line or stock of people. "O, faithless and perverse generation, how long shall I be with you?" (Matt. 17: 17. See Matt. 23: 33, 36).

Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

¶ Watch therefore; for ye know not what hour your Lord doth **come**.

But know this, that if the goodman of the house had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have suffered his house to be broken up.

Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man **COMETH**" (Matt. 24:36-44).

The time of the Lord's **COMING** to "set up" "the kingdom of heaven" will occur **in the future**, at a day and hour unknown to man, yet "signs" will indicate the advent (Matt. 24). In the preceding Scripture, note the **repeated statements** concerning Christ's **coming**.

(16) "**WATCH . . . (the) . . . Lord doth COME . . . watch . . . the Son of man COMETH**" (Matt. 24:42, 25:13). The word "watch" speaks of a future event—the Son of man is now "taking a far journey" (Mk. 13:32-37), but He is "**coming again**." "Be ye therefore ready!" Watch! It is the church's business to keep His "Second Coming" as a **live** issue and be in a **constant** expectant attitude. Who said so? Christ said so.

"And as they heard these things, he (Jesus) added and spake a parable, because he was nigh to Jerusalem, and because they thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear.

He said therefore, A certain nobleman went into a far country **to receive** for himself a kingdom, and **to return**.

And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, **Occupy till I come**" (Lu. 19:11-13).

"The kingdom of heaven" has not yet been "set up" on this earth. Marks of the setting up of "the kingdom of heaven" are, "The desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose"; "The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb"; and "A king shall reign in righteousness" (Isa. 35:1; 11:6; 32:1). They understood that "the kingdom of God" was not then set up, but they thot it "should immediately appear." Christ, by this parable, gave them to understand differently. He was first to go to the "far country" (take time to get back). **There**, He is "to receive for Himself a kingdom, **AND TO RETURN**" (Dan. 7:13-14), and the kingdom will then be "set up" ("appear," be a visible kingdom), and He will rule in righteousness. In the meantime, surrounded by "the world," which is the enemy of God (See pages 104-116), it is the business and commission of the church or Christians to "**OCCUPY TILL I COME**."

Only the minority have ever served God. All true believers constitute the church of God. The people of God are referred to as "the salt of the earth" (Matt. 5:13). Jesus said, "The world . . . I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil" (Jno. 7:7). In Noah's day, the earth, unrestrained, became "corrupt before God," and had to be destroyed. "The salt of the earth" keeps "the world" from entire corruption, and this remnant is to "hold the fort" against the enemies of God till Jesus comes back from the "far country" and destroys the evil world and sets up the kingdom. "**OCCUPY TILL I COME**."

"(17) ¶ When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory:

And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats:

And he shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

Then shall the King say unto them on his right hand, Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world: . . .

Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:" (Matt. 25:31-34, 41).

"The Son of man **shall** (1) **COME** in His **glory**," (2) with His holy **angels**, and (3) be seated upon His **throne**, and (4) separate **the nations** and then He, **as King**, will (5) dispose of His **kingdom** to those for whom it has been prepared, and banish his enemies under curse (Matt. 25:31-46).

"(18) And it came to pass, when Jesus had finished all these sayings, he said unto his disciples,

Ye know that after two days is the feast of the passover, and the Son of man is betrayed to be crucified" (Matt. 26:1-2).

Matthew 24 and 25 record repeated statements made by Jesus Christ, that He would come again; in glory; a King on His throne; and with a kingdom. **BUT AFTER "Jesus had finished all these sayings," He reverted to,** and set forth the fact that He was soon to "be crucified." "My time is at hand; . . . one of you shall betray me . . . the Son of man goeth as it is written of Him" in the prophecies of God. (Matt. 26:17-25; Isa. 53; Jno. 3:16).

"(19) ¶And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body.

And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it;

For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins.

But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom" (Matt. 26:26-29).

Christ had immediately in view the shedding of His blood for the remission of sin. **But looking on beyond this, He also has in view** the fact that He would come again with a **kingdom**, for He says, "I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, **UNTIL that day** when I drink it new with you in my Father's **kingdom**" (Matt. 26:29).

"(20) Then cometh he to his disciples, and saith unto them, Sleep on now, and take your rest: behold, the hour is at hand, and the Son of man is betrayed into the hands of sinners" (Matt. 26:45).

"The hour is at hand" when Christ must die, "that the Scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled" (Matt. 26:56). So He prepares to bid them farewell, **till** He comes again.

"(21) Jesus saith unto him, Thou hast said: **nevertheless** I say unto you, **Hereafter** shall ye see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven" (Matt. 26:64).

"But he held his peace, and answered nothing. Again the high priest asked him, and said unto him, **Art thou the Christ**, the Son of the Blessed?

And Jesus said, **I am**: and ye shall see the Son of man sitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven" (Mk. 14:61-62).

After recurring to His coming death (Matt. 26:26-29, 45), He also at once asserts that He is **the** Christ, the fulfillment of the Old Testament promises of God. He reminds them of the fact that according to these promises, He (in the future) is **coming again** "in the clouds of heaven,"

as the Old Testament had prophesied in Daniel 7:13-14 (See pp. 69-70).

"They crucified Him" . . . "and laid" . . . (His) "body" "in" (the) "tomb" (Matt. 27:35-61).

CHRIST'S RESURRECTION

"(22) ¶Now the next day, that followed the day of the preparation, the chief priests and Pharisees came together unto Pilate.

Saying, Sir, we remember that that deceiver said, while he was yet alive, After three days I will rise again.

Command therefore that the sepulchre be made sure until the third day, lest his disciples come by night, and steal him away, and say unto the people, He is **risen** from the dead: so the last error shall be worse than the first.

Pilate said unto them, Ye have a watch: go your way, make it as sure as ye can.

So they went, and made the sepulchre sure, sealing the stone, and setting a watch. . . .

In the end of the sabbath, as it began to dawn toward the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre.

And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the angel of the Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it.

His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow:

And for fear of him the keepers did shake, and became as dead men.

And the angel answered and said unto the women, Fear not ye: for I know that ye seek Jesus, which was crucified.

He is not here: for **he is risen**, as he said. Come, see the place where the Lord lay.

And go quickly, and tell his disciples that **he is risen** from the dead; and, behold, he goeth before you into Galilee; there shall ye see him: lo, I have told you.

And they departed quickly from the sepulchre with fear and great joy; and did run to bring his disciples word. .

¶And as they went to tell his disciples, behold, **Jesus met them**, saying, All hail. . . . All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.

¶Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:

Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world. Amen" (Matt. 27:62-28:9, 18-20).

Christ arose from the grave. This is a fact that has been established for centuries. He told them He would. They thought He was a deceiver, and to make sure that no fraud was imposed upon them about His resurrection, they took the Roman soldiers for a guard and placed the Roman seal (the breaking of which was punishable by death), on the tomb. Yet, God burst the bonds of the grave, in spite of all these precautions. And the care they took to prevent fraud, only establishes the fact of His resurrection.

†The author of this book was once a skeptic, but reasoned that if it could be established that Jesus Christ rose from the dead, then that would prove He was the world's Saviour. After searching and investigating the evidence extensively, the facts proved conclusively that Jesus Christ rose from the dead "as He said." This evidence is now reduced to writing, but unpublished.

JESUS CHRIST LIVES

“(23) ¶Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.

And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. . . .

¶So then, after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.

And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen” (Mk. 16:14-15; 19-20).

Christ is a living Saviour; He is now in heaven and seated on the right hand of God.

“Jesus led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them (the act of a priest).

And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven” (Lu. 24:50-51).

Stephen, when dying, having been stoned to death for witnessing for the Lord Jesus Christ “being full of the Holy Ghost, looked up steadfastly into heaven, and saw the glory of God, and Jesus standing on the right hand of God” (Acts 7:55).

“The God of our fathers raised up Jesus, whom ye slew and hanged on a tree.

Him hath God exalted with his right hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Israel, and forgiveness of sins” (Acts 5:30-31).

“God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets,

Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds:

Who being the brightness of his glory, and the express image of his person, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high” (Heb. 1:1-3).

God, the Father, hath appointed His Son Jesus “heir of all things,” and now has Him seated at His right hand “until I make thine enemies thy footstool” (Ps. 110:1; Heb. 1:13; 10:13). When Christ, as Redeemer, brings all enemies under subjection to God, then the ransomed, redeemed earth is turned back to God in righteousness (1 Cor. 15:24-28). See pages 101-103.

“Unto the Son he saith, Thy throne, O God is for ever and ever: a sceptre of righteousness is the sceptre of thy kingdom” (Heb. 1:8).

CHRIST IS NOW “THE BELIEVER’S” HIGH PRIEST

“Wherefore in all things it behooved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he (Jesus) might be a merciful and faithful high priest in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of the people.

For in that he himself hath suffered being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted” (Heb. 2:17-18).

“Seeing then that we have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession.

For we have not a high priest which cannot be touched with the feeling of our infirmities; but was in all points tempted like as we are, yet without sin.

Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need" (Heb. 4:14-16).

"Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jesus, that great Shepherd of the sheep, through the blood of the everlasting covenant,

Make you perfect in every good work to do his will, working in you that which is well pleasing in his sight, through Jesus Christ, to whom be glory for ever and ever. Amen" (Heb. 13:20-21).

We worship and serve the Lord Jesus Christ. **He lives.** He loves. He cares. He is our Shepherd, we shall not want. He is seated on a "throne of grace," where "mercy" and "grace to help" are now to be obtained, but He is coming again to reign.

"Christ was once offered to bear the sins of many; and **unto them that look for him shall He appear the second time**" (Heb. 9:28).

"Jesus Christ . . . whom the heaven must receive **until** the times of restitution of all things" (Acts. 3:19-21).

APOSTOLIC TEACHING CONCERNING CHRIST'S FUTURE "COMING"

PETER: "That the trial of your faith . . . might be found unto praise and honor and glory at the **appearing** of Jesus Christ" (1 Pet. 1:7; 5:4).

"For we have **not followed cunningly devised fables**, when we made known unto you the power and **coming** of our Lord Jesus Christ. . . . Knowing this first, that there shall come in the last days scoffers, walking after their own lusts, And saying, Where is the promise of **his coming**?" (2 Pet. 1:16; 3:3-4; Acts 1:11).

Peter (after Christ's death, burial, resurrection and ascension), taught that the Lord was **coming again** and that it was an event yet future and that "in the last days, scoffers" would arise, ridiculing the fact that Jesus is to come again. The "last days" and "scoffers" are both here and **at the same time**. How did Peter know this would be so? "God . . . spake . . . in time past . . . unto the fathers by the prophets" (Heb. 1:1). The Bible is "the Word of God." Believe in its Christ and "thou shalt be saved."

JAMES: "**Be patient** therefore, brethren, unto the **coming** of the Lord" (Jas. 5:7).

JOHN: "And now, little children, abide in him; that, when he (Jesus) shall **appear**, we may have confidence, and not be ashamed before him at his **coming**" (1 Jno. 2:28).

JUDE: "Behold, the Lord **cometh** with ten thousands of His saints" (Jude 14).

PAUL: "For as often as ye eat this bread, and drink this cup, ye do shew the Lord's death **till he come**" (1 Cor. 11:26). "That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the **appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ**: Which **IN HIS TIMES HE SHALL SHEW, WHO IS** the blessed and **only** Potentate, **THE KING OF KINGS**, and Lord of lords" (1 Tim. 6:14-15).

It will be noted from the above Scriptures that **after** the death, resurrection and ascension of Jesus Christ, that it was a common teaching of the apostles that Jesus was "**coming again.**"

The last lines in the New Testament contain a prayer for Jesus Christ to "come" "quickly."

"He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly: Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus" (Rev. 22:20).

So the next great event in redemption, awaited by the word of prophecy, is

THE COMING OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

The “**King of kings**,” “**the clouds**,” the “**golden crown**” and “**the Kingdom**”

“Moreover, brethren . . . all our fathers were under **the cloud**. . . . And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: **and that Rock was Christ**” (1 Cor. 10:1-4).

The Redeemer, Christ, **before His incarnation** led the children of Israel out of Egypt (typifies this evil world) and up to Canaan to set up a righteous kingdom (“an holy nation”).

“¶Then a **cloud** covered the tent of the congregation, and the glory of the **Lord** filled the tabernacle.

And Moses was not able to enter into the tent of the congregation, because **the cloud** abode thereon, and the glory of the **Lord** filled the tabernacle.

And when **the cloud** was taken up from over the tabernacle, the children of Israel went onward in all their journeys:

But if **the cloud** were not taken up, then they journeyed not till the day that it was taken up.

For **the cloud** of the **Lord** was upon the tabernacle by day, and fire was on it by night, in the sight of all the house of Israel, throughout all their journeys” (Exo. 40:34-38).

During these days when God was dealing with Israel, “the cloud” was the symbol of the Divine Presence to care for them and set up the kingdom. They so understood it, for “They journeyed not till (the cloud) . . . was taken up.” “The glory of the Lord” is a phrase significant with kingdom truth and looks forward to the time when “The Son of Man shall come in His glory” (Matt. 25:31-34).

“And **the LORD came down in the pillar of the cloud**, and stood in the door of the tabernacle, and called Aaron and Miriam: and they both came forth” (Nu. 12:5).

Bear in mind the fact that this was before the Lord’s incarnation or “the days of His flesh.” The Lord’s coming “down in the pillar of the cloud” was significant to Israel. They understood its portent. After the iniquity of Israel became full and God had revealed His purpose to “scatter” Israel among the nations until in the fulness of time when He would “regather” them to set up the kingdom, then we read:

“Then the glory of the **Lord** went up from the cherub, and stood over the threshold of the house; and the house was filled with **the cloud**, and the court was full of the brightness of the **Lord’s** glory. . . . Then the glory of the **Lord departed** from off the threshold of the house. . . . And the glory of the **Lord** went . . . and stood upon the mountain (Olivet—see Zech. 14:1-4), which is on the east side of the city” (Ezek. 10:4, 18; 11:23).

The first effort to set up the kingdom was at an end so far as “the God of heaven” was concerned. The symbol of His Divine Presence withdrew. But God raised up prophets who revealed that the Lord “would set His hand again the second time” to set up the kingdom (Isa. 11:11). Daniel records the future evil course of the nations and their destruction. He then reveals that when “One like the **Son of man** (**COMES**) **WITH THE CLOUDS** of heaven . . . (He is to be) given . . . dominion, **and glory**, and **A KINGDOM**” (Dan. 7:13-14). At the Son of man’s **first** coming He **did not** come “**with the clouds** of

heaven." Therefore, according to the foreknowledge of God, as revealed by Daniel, the Son of man was not to receive the kingdoms at His first coming and **NOT TILL He comes "with the clouds of heaven."** After Christ was rejected and He knew His death was at hand (Matt. 26:2) and after He had made known to them that He was coming again (Matt. 24:3-5), then He said, "ye" shall "see the **Son of man . . . coming in the clouds** of heaven" (Matt. 26:64). Jesus, therefore confirmed Daniel as a prophet and confirmed his prophecy that the kingdom was not to be set up till "the Son of man" comes "**with the clouds of heaven.**" Since He has never yet come "**with the clouds of heaven,**" the kingdom has not been "set up." The reign of Christ is an event yet future.

"And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and A CLOUD received him out of their sight. And while they looked stedfastly toward heaven as He went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel; which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? **THIS SAME JESUS** which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come **IN LIKE MANNER AS** ye have **SEEN** him go into heaven" (Acts 1:9-11).

Heaven's last notice to man, as Jesus was ascending **in the clouds** was that **this same Jesus** (personal, visible) would so come "**IN LIKE MANNER,**" that is, "in the clouds." Then He receives the kingdom. This was a recurrence to the prophecy of Dan. 7:13-14 and a confirmation of it. Over half a century after His ascension the last prophetic word was, "Behold, He cometh **with clouds**, and **EVERY EYE** shall **SEE** Him . . . I am . . . the Lord . . . which is to **COME**" (Rev. 1:7-8). It will be a personal, visible coming—"every eye shall see Him." Nothing could be plainer nor more definite than this language. It will be "literal," as God hath clearly revealed. The book of Revelation unfolds events which are to take place at His second coming and we read, "I looked, and behold a white cloud, and **UPON THE CLOUD** one sat like unto the **SON OF MAN**, having on His head a **GOLDEN CROWN**" (Rev. 14:14). **AND SO HE RECEIVES THE KINGDOM AND IS CROWNED KING, WHEN HE COMES WITH THE CLOUDS, AS THE OLD TESTAMENT AND THE NEW TESTAMENT, AND JESUS CHRIST HIMSELF PROCLAIMED.** Scripture is everywhere in divine harmony on the subject. Marvelous, consistent truths of this nature ramify **all thru the Bible.** They constitute a regular maze of a net-work, as it were, which is woven into the very fabric of the Scriptures. These truths are consistent and in divine harmony. No other book that was ever written is a duplicate of the Bible in this respect. †This stamps the Book as absolutely having a Divine Author. Facts, within the Bible, prove multiplied times over, that it is *the inspired "Word of God."

†Some men in high places in the educational and ecclesiastical world, "professing themselves to be wise" they have become "fools" and turned away from God and His Word, and substituted therefor their own "human traditions," and "tales." Multitudes are following these "blind leaders of the blind."

*The skeptic's and higher critic's method of picking flaws in the translation of individual words or in isolated statements of the Bible should make an ordinary Judas Iscariot blush with shame. Their method and its result is convincing evidence that they are blind as to the contents of "the Word of God"; blind to its matchless teachings; blind to its marvelous plan of redemption. "Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures" (Matt. 22:29). "Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel" (Matt. 23:24).

Dr. Hort, one of the masters in Bible translation has this to say concerning the integrity of the present text of New Testament Scripture: "What can in

Jesus said, "O fools ("dull-witted minds"), and slow of heart to believe **ALL** that the prophets have spoken . . . **ALL** things **must** be fulfilled, which were written **in the law of Moses**, and **in the prophets**, and **in the psalms**, concerning me" (Lu. 24:22-27; 44:45).

"SIGNS OF HIS COMING MULTIPLY"

"What shall be the **sign** of thy coming and of the end of the world?" (Matt. 24:3).

Christ prefaced His answer to the above questions by revealing that "false Christs" would make their appearance before His "coming." "Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many" (Matt. 24:4-5).

Scripture reveals that when the following things and conditions head up they will mark and indicate that the second coming of Christ, and ("the last days" or) "the end of the Age" are at hand:

(1) "Wars and rumors of wars." (2) "Nation shall rise against nation." (3) "Famines." (4) "Pestilences." (5) "Earthquakes, in divers places." (6) "Distress of nations." (7) "**In the last days** perilous times shall come." (8) "Ye (the Jews) shall be hated of all nations." (9) "False prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many." (10) "**In the latter times** some shall depart from the faith." (11) "**In the last days** . . . men shall be lovers of their own selves . . . men of **corrupt minds**, reprobate concerning the faith." (12) "Ever learning, and never able to come to the knowledge of the truth." (13) "**In the last days** . . . men shall be . . . covetous . . . blasphemers . . . heady, highminded, lovers of pleasure **more** than lovers of God: **Having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof: FROM SUCH TURN AWAY.**" (14) "**A FALLING AWAY FIRST,**" in the church. See pages 117-131. (15) "There shall come **in the last days** scoffers, walking after their own lusts, And saying, Where is the promise of His coming?" (16) "**INIQUITY SHALL ABOUND.**" (17) "The gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations (Gentiles) and **then** shall the end come." (18) The federation of "the nations" shall occur. See pages 38, 74. (19) "The times of

any sense be called substantial variations can hardly form more than a thousandth part of the entire text." Now if, in its translation, only one part in a thousand or one word in a thousand is subject to or a possible object of criticism, then it is evident that the skeptic or modernist is quibbling over a gnat, while they gullibly swallow (a camel) the monkey as easily as the whale swallowed Jonah. It is a matter of common knowledge that these so-called "variations" are of such a character as to affect, in no wise any vital fundamental doctrine of the Bible. We have before us half a dozen different translations of the New Testament. Some of them are far from being as good as others, yet you could take the poorest translation, study it all thru carefully and you should not go wrong on any fundamental or vital teaching of Scripture.

Now, if a copy of the constitution of the United States Government, was placed before these skeptics or critics and they found that the stenographer had been slightly defective in his transcription to the extent of one word in a thousand, and that one word of such a character as would not on its face be self-evidently vitally wrong, why then they would throw the whole thing aside and declare that we had no foundation on which the government could rest, wouldn't they? Whereas, a copy of the constitution that was only so slightly an object of question would be practically inerrant and safe to follow. If a hundred per cent American had a copy of the constitution as accurate and inerrant as this in his possession, you would have a hopeless task if you attempted to make him think that he did not have the identical facts on which the government's constitution was based. And the modernist has a hopeless task, when he undertakes to convince "the fundamentalist" that he doesn't have a Bible, whose every page is a direct revelation of redemption from God to man.

the Gentiles . . . (shall be) fulfilled." See pages 31, 38-40. (20) And the "regathering" of Israel to Palestine shall occur. See pages 32-36, 55. (Matt. 24; Mk. 13; Lu. 21; 2 Tim. 3:1-8; 2 Thes. 2; 1 Tim. 4:1; 2 Pet. 3:3-4).

As this manuscript is ready to go to press, we read: "Thousands of theosophists are journeying to India in anticipation of the 'second coming of Christ.' . . . Their leader, Mrs. Annie Besant . . . says that within . . . five months the Star of Bethlehem will burn over Adyar, India, and Christ will return to the earth in the body of J. Krishnamurti, a 30-year-old Hindu. . . . There will be no angelic trumpeting and no clouds of glory." Krishnamurti "is a handsome dark-eyed young man with Valentino sideburns and matinee features." He is reputed to have pronounced "beauty" and "spirituality." He wrote the book "At the Feet of the Master." He says, "God has a plan and that plan is **evolution.**" "Seven persons are being prepared as apostles; and the other five will be appointed in India. Modern publicity agents will herald the arrival of the 'new Christ' as he and his apostles journey through the world, proclaiming his message to humanity."

Christ said, "For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall show great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect. Behold, I have told you before. Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; **go not forth:** behold, he is in the secret chambers; **believe it not.** For as the lightning cometh out of the east, and shineth even unto the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be" (Matt. 24:24-27).

Jesus Himself said that He would come "in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory" (Matt. 24-25).

False Christs are here. The last few years the world has been torn with the worst wars in all history. Rumors of wars fill the air. Fearful weapons for destroying life are now perfected. Famines and pestilences have appeared in divers places. Nothing like the present world-wide earthquakes have ever been witnessed by man. Distress of nations and perilous times are at hand.

One writes: In the next "ten years" I expect . . . to see the Reds "governing" "bankrupt Europe" and "a world-wide apostasy" . . . "at present nothing seems firm, everything seems to be breaking up." The rising persecution of the Jews thruout the world is driving "the remnant" back to "their own land," thus resulting in the "regathering" of Israel.

Men are departing from the faith. "Damnable heresies" are being taught and many are deceived. Men deny the Lord Jesus who was crucified for them (2 Pet. 2:1). The "corrupt minds" are evidenced by those who are "reprobate concerning the faith," "ever learning" yet they never "come to the knowledge of the truth." "These, as natural brute beasts . . . speak evil of the things they understand not" (2 Pet. 2:12). "Which have **forsaken the right way and gone astray**" (2 Pet. 2:14).

"In the last days" men shall be "covetous." This is the day of the world's most colossal fortunes and combines. Are they determined to Shylock the last pound from the people? "In the last days . . . men shall be blasphemers . . . heady, highminded." It's the "scholars," the "highminded," who are blaspheming God and denying His Word. Doesn't the savage in the jungle have more respect for God than some of these corrupt, devil-directed, "modern minds" who love pleasure more than they love God? Isn't theirs a Pharisaic "form of godliness"; white, smooth, silk shirts covering black hearts of enmity against God? "**From**

such turn away." Who says so? God says so! The "falling away" from God, Christ, the Bible and the church is in full swing. "The last days" and "scoffers" have arrived at the same time. In derision, they enquire "where is the promise of His coming?" "Iniquity shall abound," at "the end of the age" (Matt. 24:12, 3). Lawlessness, lust and idolatry are wrecking the race and ruining the world. "The gospel of the kingdom" has been preached to about "all nations" (Gentiles). Scripture indicates that when this condition exists, "**Then** shall the end come." For centuries the federation of the nations on the site of the old Roman Empire was remote from the mind of the natural man. For centuries it looked as though the Gentiles would never cease to rule Palestine. Generations came and went, yet natural man didn't take any stock in Israel ever being regathered or becoming a new nation in the land of her forefathers. Today we find the league of nations taking form; "the times of the Gentiles" are fulfilling; and Israel is being regathered in her own land, which will evidently soon be free from Gentile dominion. See pages 38, 108, 31, 55.

"And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.

And he spake to them a parable; Behold **the fig tree**, and all the trees;

When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves that summer is nigh at hand.

So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand" (Lu. 21:28-31).

We have been reviewing a great line of prophecies. Centuries ago these revealed to man **the signs** of the coming of the Lord, and of "the last days." It is a **significant fact** and **of the greatest portent** that **ALL** of these things are **ALL** heading up progressively and occurring **at practically the same time**. How did the prophets know any of these things would ever come to pass? How did they know they would **all occur at the same time**? "**God . . .** at sundry times and in divers manners **spake** in time past unto the fathers **by the prophets**" (Heb. 1:1). "The Spirit of Christ which was in them when it testified" (1 Pet. 1:10-11). These prophecies made centuries ago and their evident fulfillment at this time are all a matter of accident or design. There is not one chance in millions for all these things to be occurring by accident **at this time**. Therefore, it's a "dull witted mind" that cannot recognize and see the hand of God in all this great host of facts. The Scriptures themselves prove multiplied times over that they are **necessarily** the inspired "Word of God."

"**We have not followed cunningly devised fables, when we made known unto you the . . . COMING of our Lord Jesus Christ**" (2 Pet. 1:16).

Truly, "Signs of His coming **MULTIPLY**, Morning light breaks in eastern sky, Watch, for the time is drawing nigh, What if it were today?"

"**WHEN THESE THINGS BEGIN TO COME TO PASS, THEN LOOK UP AND LIFT UP YOUR HEADS; FOR . . . THE KINGDOM OF GOD IS NIGH AT HAND**" (Lu. 21:28-31). Who says so? God says so!

WHEN WILL THE KINGDOM BE SET UP?

What time did the prophets testify? "In the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom" (Read carefully on p. 37, Dan. 2:31-45.) What kings? Those represented symbolically by the ten toes of Daniel's terrible image and by the ten horns of the beast, as in Daniel 7 and Rev. 17. As we have seen, Rome had but one king

until about 395 A. D. when she was divided into two empires, both of which were again subdivided by about the year 1453 A. D. Nothing happened between or since these dates to indicate that a kingdom of heaven has been set up. The plural form of the word "kings" evidently applies to the ten toe kingdoms. This is confirmed by the image being struck on the feet; that is, in the ten toe form. Therefore, the kingdom is still future. BUT a condition on earth exists which would indicate that the "God of heaven" would soon "break in pieces and consume" these nations. Wars, earthquakes, distress of nations, false teachers, and iniquity abounds. A "league of nations" is in the air and magazines and newspapers proclaim that the Jews are going back to Jerusalem.

Dan. 7 and Rev. 17 set forth that, during the process of the federation of the nations (the ten toe phase of the kingdom as per Daniel's image) that they become of "**one mind**" and agree to turn their power over to †"the beast," who heads civilization up into the wreck of the "abomina-

†At the end of this Age or in "the last days," Satan finally turns the dominion of the kingdoms of the world, which he once offered to Jesus (Lu. 4:1-13), over to "the beast" (Rev. 13:4-18). The beast takes this power and desolates the nations and wrecks "the world." God, in His omniscience has foreseen and revealed that a human devil, "the beast," "the man of sin," will eventually arise in the world, secure great power over the *federated nations and his earthly career will end by his governing the earth in utter ungodliness. "The beast" is the "little horn" of Daniel 7, and "the desolator" of Daniel 9. He is the exact opposite of Jesus Christ. He is Satan, incarnated as it were in "the man of sin" (2 Thess. 2:3-12), and the instigator of the "abomination of desolation" (Dan. 7:15-25; 9:27; Matt. 24:15) which climaxes "the world's" enmity against God. When the world's iniquity under the rule of "the beast" is "full," then "the harvest of the earth is ripe" (Rev. 14:15) and God strikes in fearful judgments on "the world" (Rev. 4-19). See "the world," which is "the enemy of God," pages 104-116.

According to Scripture, man was created in God's image, he sinned and fell and from that time on, the earth has been ruled by man, under the leadership of Satan, in rebellion and enmity against God. "This present evil world." At times, thru the ages, this enmity of man against God has reached climaxes of iniquity, which have been ended by God striking against His unrepentant, incorrigible enemies in fearful judgments, as at "the Flood." Scripture reveals that the reign of "the beast," "the man of sin," will end the rule of man over the earth. This event is referred to in Scripture as "the end of the world" (Matt. 24:3; 2 Pet. 3:9-13).

According to the revelations of Scripture, "the God of heaven" will at that time "set up" a government of heaven over the earth, which is to be ruled over by the Lord Jesus Christ, as "King of kings." This reestablishment of God's rule over the earth will be the setting up of "the kingdom of heaven" on earth. Things on earth will then be run on the same basis and governed by the same laws as the things in heaven.

Typical modernism or evolution denies the creation of man in God's image; denies the fall of man; denies man's need of Divine redemption; denies the Divine Person and work of Jesus Christ in redemption and denies this program and God's plan of redemption. Modernism asserts that man is an accident of a process of evolution; that man's history is a history of progress, ever upward, and will end by man establishing a human-made heaven on earth. Science and social service are to be the agencies. The "Word of God" is diametrically opposed to the words of these men. One of them is necessarily wrong. Which are you going to believe—"the Word of God" or the word of man, "the imagination of (whose) heart is evil from his youth?" (Gen. 8:21). Are you going to tie your hope for eternity and the hope of your loved ones for eternity to "the Word of God" or to the imaginations of perverted men? "Choose you this day!" "The night cometh!" It will then be "too late." "The wicked shall be turned into hell and all the nations that forget God." When the nations made their recent peace treaty, they forgot God and never even mentioned His name. So, "The Lord hath a controversy with the nations" (Jer. 25:31).

*The federation of the nations on the site of the old Roman Empire is the ground work, preparatory to the reign of "the beast" over them. Why should the United States join the federation or league?

tion of desolation" and the "great tribulation." When this happens "the Stone" smites in judgment against the enemy nations who are destroyed and Israel is set up as a nation—"born at once" (Matt. 25).

Before our eyes, the federation of the nations is taking form and AT THE SAME TIME, the Jews are "regathering" in the land of Abraham and David to found a nation.

Prophecy, combined with history, indicates that "the end of the world" or "the consummation of the age" is at hand, "When the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, In flaming fire taking vengeance on them ("the world") that know not God and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ" (1 Thes. 1:7-8). "O earth, earth, earth, hear the word of the Lord" (Jer. 22:29). It is a FEARFUL thing to fall into the hands of the living God" (Heb. 10:31). "Prepare to meet thy God" (Amos 4:12). "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved" (Acts 16:31). "He that believeth not shall be damned" (Mk. 16:16). Who says so? GOD SAYS SO. Away with modernism! It preaches "another gospel." The "Word of God" teaches that "the world" is in process of being devil-looted (evil-looted, instead of evolved) to its destruction and needs a divine Redeemer, whom God, in great love and grace has provided. Modernism teaches that man doesn't have and doesn't need a Divine Redeemer. Are you going to believe the Word of God, or the "traditions" of men?

REVELATIONS CONCERNING THE FUTURE KINGDOM

The book of Revelation pulls back the curtain of the future and sets forth the things of the transition period from Church to Kingdom Age and discloses events of the "great tribulation" and the following judgments (Rev. 4-19). The Lord is revealing to His beloved servant, John, "things which must be **HEREAFTER**." John is commanded to "**write** the things . . . which shall be hereafter" (Rev. 4:1; 1:19). John saw "a throne . . . set in heaven." Prophetic of the King and His kingdom! (Dan. 7:13-14). The preliminaries are entered into and we are **looking into the future**; and before us is John's prophetic vision of events in judgment and in redemption that will occur at "the end of the world." "After these things . . . four angels, to whom it was given to ***HURT THE EARTH**" (Rev. 7). (The earth that will again have become "corrupt before God" as it was in the days of Noah.) And when the **seventh** seal was opened **SILENCE** reigned in heaven (8:1).

*"The harvest of the earth is ripe" (Rev. 14:15). From the days of Adam, man has been a persistent sinner. "The imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth" (Gen. 8:21). Who says so? God says so. "He that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption" (Gal. 6:8). Corruption bears a harvest of judgment. Babylon, in Scripture is the symbol of the world's sin and corruption. "Babylon . . . yet a little while, and the time of her harvest shall come" (Jer. 51:33). God covenanted to give Abraham and his seed the land of Canaan, yet made them wait four hundred years for its possession because "the iniquity of the Amorites is not yet full" (Gen. 15). God's forbearance awaits the final day, before He executes judgment.

"Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap" (Gal. 6:7). This is true of individuals, nations and the world. The earth's corruption looks forward to "the harvest"—reaping what it has sown. Joel reveals the future "harvest" day of the sin of the nations.

"Let the nations bestir themselves, and come up to the valley of Jehoshaphat; for there will I sit to judge all the nations round about. Put ye in the sickle; for the harvest is ripe: come, tread ye; for the winepress is full, the vats over flow; for their wickedness is great" (Joel 3:12-13. Am. V.).

"The harvest is ripe . . . their wickedness is great." This "harvest" proph-

Prophetic! And God's **FIRST** judgment trumpet **SOUNDED FORTH ITS WARNING**. "And there followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth: and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up." God's **SECOND** judgment trumpet sounded and "a great mountain, burned with fire was cast into the sea; and the third part of the sea became blood." A third part of the fish and shipping was destroyed.

God's **THIRD** judgment trumpet sounded and "there fell a great star from heaven . . . called Wormwood." The waters became wormwood and many men died because of the bitter waters. God's **FOURTH** judgment trumpet sounds and a third of the sun, moon and stars are smitten and an angel flies "through the midst of heaven, saying with a loud voice, Woe, **woe**, **WOE**, **TO THE INHABITERS OF THE EARTH**." (Why all this "woe" if the earth is brought to Christ by Christianity?) God's **FIFTH** judgment trumpet sounds and locusts, from the bottomless pit, as scorpions, scourge the men of earth, who continue to remain in rebellion against the government of God. God's **SIXTH** judgment trumpet sounds and four angels are loosed and their armies slay the third part of men with fire, smoke and brimstone, and the rest of the men which were not killed by these plagues **yet repented not** of the works of their hands nor of their idol worship.

The seventh angel prepares to sound his trumpet and the hosts of Armageddon are gathered together for battle. God's **SEVENTH** judgment trumpet sounds and the seventh angel pours forth his vial of wrath, "and there came a great voice out of the temple of heaven, from the throne, saying, **It is Done**" (Rev. 8-16). "**It IS Finished!**" . . . "**IT IS**

ecy is recurred to in the New Testament and details are added. And we find that "The Lord of the harvest" is the Son of man (Matt. 9:38).

"Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn. . . . The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one;

The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels.

As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world.

The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just. . . . When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory: And before him shall be gathered all nations: and he shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats" (Matt. 13:30, 38-41, 49; 25:31-32).

Revelation pulls back the curtain and pictures "the end of the world" or "age," when "the harvest of the earth is ripe" (Rev. 14:15). When the world's "iniquity abounds," "the abomination of desolation" climaxes it. As it was in the days of Noah, the earth becomes "corrupt before God"; then according to the prophecies "the harvest of the earth is ripe" and "the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, in flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ" (2 Thes. 1:7-8). See Rev. 4-19. "The world" is not evolving to Eden, but being devil-looted to its destruction. Who says so? God says so.

†In the symbolism of the Bible, the number "seven" itself, expresses the thought of a completed and finished work. "It is done." It is when the seventh judgment trumpet sounds, that the kingdoms of this world, become the kingdom of our Lord and of His Christ. "It is finished," is the seventh and last recorded saying of Jesus Christ from the cross. The stamp of the divine authorship of the Bible is woven all thru its pages in numerous ways. It is "the Word of God." Who said so? God, incarnate, in the person of the Lord Jesus Christ (Mk. 7:13),

DONE!" (Rev. 16:17). What is done? **"The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ; and HE SHALL REIGN FOR EVER AND EVER"** (Rev. 11:15). **"It is done!"** What is done? **"I will set up THY SEED after thee, which shall proceed out of thy bowels, and I will establish HIS kingdom"** (2 Sam. 7:12). **"It is done!"** What is done? **"A living stone . . . a stone . . . cut out without hands,"** has smitten the nations (Dan. 2:34). **"I will break in pieces the nations"** (Jer. 51:19-20). **"The Son of man shall come in His glory . . . And before Him shall be gathered all nations and He shall separate them one from another"** (Matt. 25:31-32). **"It is done!"** What is done? **"The Lord shall be King OVER ALL THE EARTH"** (Zech. 14:9). **"A King shall reign in righteousness"** (Isa. 32:1). **"It is done!"** **"In the days of these kings . . . the GOD OF HEAVEN . . . shall . . . set up A KINGDOM, which shall NEVER be destroyed"** (Dan. 2:44). **"O Lord God . . . thou hast confirmed to thyself THY PEOPLE ISRAEL, to be A PEOPLE unto thee FOR EVER"** (2 Sam. 7:19-24). **"Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world."** **"It is done!"** What is done? **"One like the SON OF MAN came with the clouds of heaven . . . to the Ancient of days . . . and there was given Him dominion, and glory, and A KINGDOM"** (Dan. 7:13-14). **"The Lord God shall give unto Him the throne of His father David: And He shall reign over the HOUSE OF JACOB for ever"** (Lu. 1:32-33). **"I will make her . . . that was cast far off a strong nation: and THE LORD shall REIGN over them IN Mount Zion from henceforth, even FOR EVER"** (Mic. 4:7; See Isa. 66:22). **"It is done!"** What is done? **"A child is born . . . a son is given . . . THE GOVERNMENT shall be upon HIS shoulder: and His name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, THE MIGHTY GOD, The everlasting Father, THE PRINCE OF PEACE"** (Isa. 9:6). **"I will raise UNTO DAVID a righteous Branch, and a King SHALL REIGN and . . . EXECUTE judgment and justice IN THE EARTH"** (Jer. 23:5). **"It is done!"** What is done? **"FOR THIS PURPOSE the Son of God was manifested, that He might destroy the works of the devil"** (1 Jno. 3:8). **"It is done!"** **"It is done!"** **"IT IS DONE!"** **"The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ, and HE SHALL REIGN FOR EVER AND EVER"** (Rev. 11:15). Praise God, the Father! Praise God, the Son! Praise God, the Holy Ghost! **PREACH IT! TEACH IT! TELL IT WHEREVER YOU GO!**

**"Jesus is coming to earth again, What if it were today?
Coming in power and love to reign, What if it were today?
Coming to claim His chosen Bride, All the redeemed and purified,
Over this whole earth scattered wide, What if it were today?"**

Chorus:

**Glory! glory! joy to my heart 'twill bring:
Glory! glory! When we shall crown Him King;
Glory! glory! Haste to prepare the way;
Glory! glory! Jesus will come some day.**

**Satan's dominion will then be o'er, O that it were today!
Sorrow and sighing shall be no more, O that it were today!
Then shall the dead in Christ arise, Caught up to meet Him in the skies,
When shall these glories meet our eyes? What if it were today?"**

Faithful and true would He find us here, If He should come today?
 Watching in gladness and not in fear, If He should come today?
 Signs of His coming multiply, Morning light breaks in eastern sky,
 Watch, for the time is drawing nigh, What if it were today?"

—Mrs. C. H. Morris.

ALL OLD AND NEW TESTAMENT PROPHECIES CONCERNING THE KING AND KINGDOM TRUTH, POINT TO OR CLUSTER ABOUT THAT GREAT CLIMAX IN REDEMPTION, WHICH WILL RESULT IN THE REDEEMER BEING CROWNED KING OF KINGS. The typical modernist or evolutionist denies the Bible and this program of God's in redemption and teaches that sinful man will save himself and is evolving to Eden. One or the other is necessarily wrong. "The Word of our God shall stand forever" (Isa. 40:8). The "God of heaven" has promised to "set up" a kingdom and crown Jesus Christ, as King thereof. "There hath not failed one word of all His good promise." Time will demonstrate the falsity of modernism, and the truth of the Bible, for which fundamentalism stands.

STUDIES IN KING AND KINGDOM TRUTH: Gen. 12:1-3, "a great nation . . . (by which) shall all families of the earth be blessed." See Gen. 26:1-5; 28:10-15. Compare Gen. 14:17-20 and Isa. 32:1 with Ps. 110 and Heb. 7:1-3 and notice the word "King." Compare Ex. 3:8; 6:3-8; 14:14; 19:5-6 with Gen. 12:1-3 and Rev. 19. See Lev. 26:42-45. Compare Num. 24:17 and Gen. 49:10 with Lu. 1:32-33 and 2 Pet. 1:19. See Deut. 17:14-20; 28:1; 30:1-9. Compare Josh. 5:13-14 with Matt. 10:34 and Rev. 19:11-16 and notice the word "sword." Now compare Judg. 7:18 with the last three scriptures examined. Compare 1 Sam. 8:6-22, Am. V. with 2 Sam. 7:4-17. See 1 Kings 8:1-21 with Rev. 11:15-19 and notice the "ark of the covenant." Compare 2 Kings 8:19 with Lu. 1:32-33 and Matt. 1:1. See 1 Chr. 22:10; Ps. 2.

Section 5

THE PROPHETS AND THEIR PROPHECIES

God's oath-bound covenants to Abraham and David insured to Israel the kingdom and the blessing thru Israel of all families of the earth. **AFTER THE JEWISH KINGDOM DIVIDED**, and so far as human eyes could see, was doomed to fail and be forgotten, God raised up a series of sixteen prophets, who officiated between 860 B. C. and 400 B. C. See this period indicated by "Z" on "The Chart of the Ages" page 83. They prophesied in something like this order: Jonah, Joel, Amos, Hosea, Isaiah, Micah, Nahum, Zephaniah, Jeremiah, Habakkuk, Daniel, Ezekiel, Obadiah, Haggai, Zechariah and Malachi. **Two dominating themes** of these prophecies were the coming King and the future kingdom that the God of heaven was yet to set up in the promised land, by and thru His chosen people. Please note the prophecies concerning the King and kingdom, in the following Scriptures. Remember that during the centuries these prophecies were being recorded, that it was a settled fact that because of sin and rebellion, Israel would eventually be exiled from the land and "scattered" under curse. But the covenants God had made with Abraham and David bound Him to set up the promised kingdom. So the Holy Spirit reveals thru the prophets that "in the last days," when Israel is "regathered" **in the land**, **THEN**, this kingdom will be set up.

"For the children of Israel shall abide many days without a king, and without a prince, and without a sacrifice, and without an image, and without an ephod, and without teraphim:

Afterward shall the children of Israel **return**, and seek the **Lord** their God, and David their king; and shall fear the **Lord** and his goodness in the latter days. . . .

¶O Israel, thou hast destroyed thyself; but in me is thine help.

I will be thy king: where is any other that may save thee in all thy cities? and thy judges of whom thou saidst, Give me a king and princes?

I gave thee a king in mine anger, and took him away in my wrath.

The iniquity of Ephraim (Israel) is bound up; his sin is hid.

The sorrows of a travailing woman shall come upon him: he is an unwise son; for he should not stay long in the place of the breaking forth of children.

I will ransom them from the power of the grave; I will redeem them from death: O death, I will be thy plagues; O grave, I will be thy destruction: repentance shall be hid from mine eyes. . . .

O Israel, return unto the **Lord** thy God; for thou hast fallen by thine iniquity.

Take with you words, and turn to the **Lord**: say unto him, Take away all iniquity, and receive us graciously: so will we render the calves of our lips.

Asshur shall not save us; we will not ride upon horses: neither will we say any more to the work of our hands, Ye are our gods: for in thee the fatherless findeth mercy.

¶I will heal their backsliding, I will love them freely: for mine anger is turned away from him.

I will be as the dew unto Israel: he shall grow as the lily, and cast forth his roots as Lebanon.

His branches shall spread, and his beauty shall be as the olive tree, and his smell as Lebanon.

They that dwell under his shadow shall return; they shall revive as the corn, and grow as the vine: the scent thereof shall be as the wine of Lebanon.

Ephraim shall say, What have I to do any more with idols? I have heard him, and observed him: I am like a green fir tree. From me is thy fruit found.

Who is wise, and he shall understand these things? prudent, and he shall know them? for the ways of the **Lord** are right, and the just shall walk in them: but the transgressors shall fall therein" (Hosea 3:4-5; 13:9-14; 14:1-9).

"¶ Blow the trumpet in Zion, sanctify a fast, call a solemn assembly:

Gather the people, sanctify the congregation, assemble the elders, gather the children, and those that suck the breasts: let the bridegroom go forth of his chamber, and the bride out of her closet.

Let the priests, the ministers of the **Lord**, weep between the porch and the altar, and let them say, Spare thy people, **O Lord**, and give not thine heritage to reproach, that the heathen should rule over them: wherefore should they say among the people, Where is their God?

¶ Then will the **Lord** be jealous for his land, and pity his people.

Yea, the **Lord** will answer and say unto his people, Behold, I will send you corn, and wine, and oil, and ye shall be satisfied therewith: and I will no more make you a reproach among the heathen:

But I will remove far off from you the northern army, and will drive him into a land barren and desolate, with his face toward the east sea, and his hinder part toward the utmost sea, and his stink shall come up, and his ill savour shall come up, because he hath done great things.

¶ Fear not, **O land**; be glad and rejoice: for the **Lord** will do great things.

Be not afraid, ye beasts of the field: for the pastures of the wilderness do spring, for the tree beareth her fruit, the fig tree and the vine do yield their strength.

Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the **Lord** your God: for he hath given you the former rain moderately, and he will cause to come down for you the rain, the former rain, and the latter rain in the first month.

And the floors shall be full of wheat, and the fats shall overflow with wine and oil.

And I will restore to you the years that the locust hath eaten, the cankerworm, and the caterpillar, and the palmerworm, my great army which I sent among you.

And ye shall eat in plenty, and be satisfied, and praise the name of the **Lord** your God, that hath dealt wondrously with you: and my people shall never be ashamed.

And ye shall know that I am in the midst of Israel, and that I am the **Lord** your God, and none else: and my people shall never be ashamed.

And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the **Lord** shall be delivered: for in mount Zion and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance, as the **Lord** hath said, and in the remnant whom the **Lord** shall call.

The **Lord** also shall roar out of Zion, and utter his voice from Jerusalem; and the heavens and the earth shall shake: but the **Lord** will be the hope of his people, and the strength of the children of Israel.

So shall ye know that I am the **Lord** your God dwelling in Zion, my holy mountain: then shall Jerusalem be holy, and there shall no strangers pass through her any more.

¶ And it shall come to pass in that day, that the mountains shall drop down new wine, and the hills flow with milk, and all the rivers of Judah shall flow with waters, and a fountain shall come forth of the house of the **Lord**, and shall water the valley of Shittim.

Egypt shall be a desolation, and Edom shall be a desolate wilderness, for the violence against the children of Judah, because they have shed innocent blood in their land.

But Judah shall dwell for ever, and Jerusalem from generation to generation.

For I will cleanse their blood that I have not cleansed: for the **Lord** dwelleth in Zion" (Joel 2:15-27, 32; 3:16-21).

“¶ In that day will I raise up the tabernacle of David that is fallen, and close up the breaches thereof; and I will raise up his ruins, and I will build it as in the days of old:

That they may possess the remnant of Edom, and of all the heathen, which are called by my name, saith the **Lord** that doeth this.

Behold, the days come, saith the **Lord**, that the ploughman shall overtake the reaper, and the treader of grapes him that soweth seed: and the mountains shall drop sweet wine, and all the hills shalt melt.

And **I will bring again** the captivity of my people of Israel, and **they shall build** the waste cities, and inhabit them; and **they shall plant** vineyards, and **drink the wine** thereof; **they shall also make gardens**, and **eat the fruit** of them.

And I will plant them upon **their land**, and **they shall no more be pulled up out of their land** which I have given them, saith the **Lord** thy God" (Amos. 9:11-15).

“And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the **Lord's** house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it. . . .

¶ Enter into the rock, and hide thee in the dust, for fear of the **Lord**, and for the glory of his majesty.

The lofty looks of man shall be humbled, and the haughtiness of men shall be bowed down; and the **Lord** alone shall be exalted in that day. . . . In that day shall the branch of the **Lord** be beautiful and glorious, and the fruit of the earth shall be excellent and comely for them that are escaped of Israel" (Isa. 2:2, 10-11; 4:2).

Isaiah is the greatest of the prophets, as he prophesies concerning **the coming King**, the Redeemer. Seven is the number God uses to symbolically express covenanted, redemptive relationships, and the name “**King**” is significantly applied to the **Lord just seven times** in Isaiah's prophecies of redemption.

(1) “¶ Then said I, Woe is me! for I am undone; because I am a man of unclean lips, and I dwell in the midst of a people of unclean lips: for mine eyes have seen the King, the **Lord** of hosts. . . .

(2) Behold, a King shall reign in righteousness, and princes shall rule in judgment. . . .

(3) Thine eyes shall see the King in his beauty: they shall behold **the land** that is very far off. . . .

(4) For the **Lord** is our judge, the **Lord** is our lawgiver, the **Lord** is our King: he will save us. . . .

(5) Produce your cause, saith the **Lord**; bring forth your strong reasons, saith the King of Jacob. . . .

(6) I am the **Lord**, your Holy One, the Creator of Israel, your King. . . .

(7) Thus saith the **Lord** the King of Israel, and his Redeemer the **Lord** of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and besides me there is no God. . . ." (Isa. 6:5; 32:1; 33:17, 22; 41:21; 43:15; 44:6).

Now read a description of the coming King's future kingdom, as revealed in Isaiah, chapters 11 and 12.

"And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots:

And the Spirit of the **Lord** shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the **Lord**;

And shall make him of quick understanding in the fear of the **Lord**; and he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears:

But with righteousness shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and he shall smite the earth with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked.

And righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins.

The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them.

And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together and the lion shall eat straw like the ox.

And the suckling child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den.

They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the **Lord**, as the waters cover the sea.

¶ And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious.

And it shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall set his hand again **the second time** to recover the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria, and from Egypt, and from Pathros, and from Cush, and from Elam, and from Shinar, and from Hamath, and from the islands of the sea.

And he shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth. . . .

The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them; and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose" (Isa. 11:1-12; 35:1).

See Zephaniah 3:14-20. Jeremiah 30-31 touches upon the regathering of Israel and the incidents during the tribulation period. And Jeremiah 33 unfolds a view of the future kingdom. See Haggai 1:5-9. Ezekiel 40-48 contains a description of the temple, which is restored in splendor during the Kingdom Age, and of Israel in the land. See Zech. 12-14; Mal. 3-4.

The Old Testament closes its pages with God's assurance that "The Sun of righteousness (shall) arise with **healing** in His wings" (Mal. 4:2).

The New Testament closes its pages with God's assurance that "there shall be no night there"—eternal day (Rev. 21:25). "But the path of the just is as the shining light, that shineth more and more unto the perfect day"—the "eternal day" (Prov. 4:18), when redemption is in its finished, perfected state.

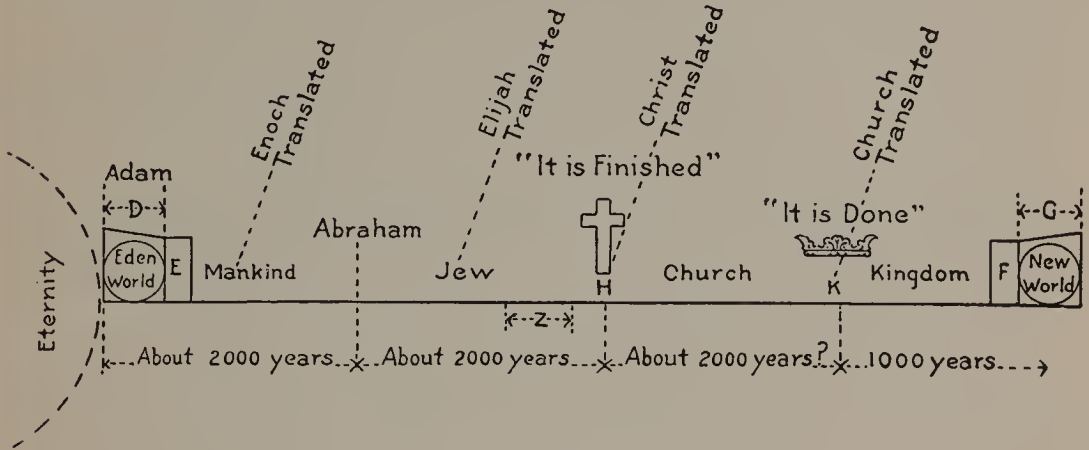


CHART OF "THE AGES"

See the chart, page 83. According to the Hebrew Old Testament chronology, the interval from Adam to Abraham appears to be a period of about 2,000 years; from Abraham to the cross is a period of about 2,000 years and it appears, from various sources, that it will be a period of something like 2,000 years from the crucifying of Christ to the crowning of Him as King. The Kingdom or Millennial Age will be 1,000 years.

"And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years" (Rev. 20:4).

Seven, in Scripture, is the number God uses to symbolically express covenanted, redemptive relationship, and in this relationship, carries with it the thought of completion or a finished work. There are reasons for believing that God will accomplish redemption (See its three climaxes, page 6), within a seven thousand year period. "A remnant shall be saved: For he will **finish** the work, and **cut it short** in righteousness: because a **short work** will the Lord make **upon the earth**" (Rom. 9:27-28).

Scripture teaches that man's career on earth has been brief, and that it will soon end—"A short work . . . upon the earth." Evolution teaches that man has been on earth for ages and will continue to be here for ages. There is practically no profane, human history prior to the year 2500 or 3000 B. C. Thus, history teaches that man's advent is **recent**. Therefore, history confirms the Scripture. See "Age of Man" in this Volume and in Vol. 2 of this work.

CHANGE FROM CHURCH AGE TO KINGDOM AGE

"And he informed me, and talked with me, and said, O Daniel, I am now come forth to give thee skill and understanding.

At the beginning of thy supplications the commandment came forth, and I am come to shew thee; for thou art greatly beloved: therefore understand the matter, and consider the vision.

Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make

reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the Most Holy.

Know therefore and understand, that from the going forth of the commandment to restore and to build Jerusalem, unto the Messiah the Prince, shall be seven weeks, and threescore and two weeks: the street shall be built again, and the wall, even in troublous times.

And after threescore and two weeks shall Messiah be cut off, but not for himself: and the people of the prince that shall come shall destroy the city and the sanctuary; and the end thereof shall be with a flood, and unto the end of the war desolations are determined.

And he shall confirm the covenant with many for **one week**: and **in the midst of the week** he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate" (Dan. 9:22-27).

The change from church to kingdom age includes Daniel's seventieth week, which is evidently a seven year period (Dan. 9:26-27). Its place on our Chart is indicated by "K." See page 83. Revelation 4:1-20:6 describes events of this transition period. This period is signalized by translation for the saints and tribulation for the living sinners (Lu. 17:26-36).

"But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

For as in the days that were before the flood they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark,

And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be.

Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

¶ Watch therefore, for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.

For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be" (Matt. 24:37-42, 21).

All thru the ages, God has been unfolding to man, by means of object lessons, the fact that God has ordained that the saint shall **be with Him**. Enoch lived during the "mankind" period from Adam to Abraham. What happened to Enoch? "Enoch walked with God: and he was not; for God took him" (Gen. 5:24). Then Enoch was "translated that he should not see death" (Heb. 11:5). Pagan perversions of this translation are to be found among the ancients, who were descendants of Enoch's day. What happened to Elijah during the "Jew" period, from Abraham to the cross? Elijah was translated. "Elijah went up by a whirlwind into heaven" (2 Kings 2:11). What happened to Christ after His resurrection? He was translated. Jesus "was parted from them, and carried up into Heaven" (Lu. 24:51).

It will be noted from our Chart (p. 83) that **just one example** or **person** out of **each** of these three great periods was taken by God in this way, to be with Himself. All of this was prophetic and taught men to look forward to the **great translation**, when all the dead in Christ shall rise to meet the Lord in the air, "so shall (they) ever be with the Lord." See the translation of the church indicated at "K" on the Chart.

The †church escapes the tribulation by being translated before it occurs.

"But I would not have you to be ignorant, brethren, concerning them which are asleep, that ye sorrow not, even as others which have no hope.

For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him.

For this we say unto you by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive and remain unto the coming of the Lord shall not prevent (precede) them which are asleep.

For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first:

Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord" (1 Thes. 4:13-17).

"When the cold breath of sorrow blights our joys,
Let us trust in our Father undismayed;
There is gladness no wint'ry grief destroys,
In the Land where the roses never fade.

Chorus:

In the land where the roses never fade,
Where no sin, neither sorrow can invade,
We shall meet our loved ones there,
And eternal glories share,
In the Land where the roses never fade.

When our hopes fall like leaves before the blast,
We should never be troubled, nor afraid,
For in Jesus we'll gather home at last,
In the Land where the roses never fade.

Working on, trusting ever in His love,
Let our hearts on our Saviour still be stayed;
For we know we shall see His face above,
In the Land where the roses never fade."

—E. E. Hewitt.

Thus we see that these sacred stories, such as the translations of Enoch and Elijah, are fraught with great meaning and are laden with the very breath of heaven. They are parts, thru the ages, in God's great plan of redemption, as He has revealed it to man. When these truths are assembled they are a complete, harmonious whole—Divine. Yet, some heretics or skeptics or modern, blasphemous Pharisees, who write histories or teach, are telling your children in the school-room and elsewhere, that God's precious Word, on which their hope of eternity rests, is a "myth" or "tale." If you are a tax-payer, or church supporter, is your good money being spent to pay the salary of these kinds of teachers or preachers, or to pay for this type of book in the school-room, or on the shelves of your church's publishing houses? If it is, it means that your money is assisting in destroying the faith of boys and girls, many of

†"I tell you, in that night there shall be two men in one bed; the one shall be taken, and the other shall be left.

Two women shall be grinding together; the one shall be taken, and the other left.

Two men shall be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. . . . And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh.

Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man" (Lu. 17:26-36; 21:28, 36).

"Because thou didst keep the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of trial, that hour which is to come upon the whole world, to try them that dwell upon the earth" (Rev. 3:10, Am. V.).

whom must of necessity, go out into a starless night—without hope and without God. It would be **INFINITELY** better for the boy or girl **NEVER** to **SEE** a high school or college, than to have their faith in Christ and the Bible destroyed. "He that believeth not, shall be damned" (Mk. 16:16). Education is for time, salvation is for eternity. Yet there are fathers and mothers who never move a muscle nor lift a voice, to put a stop to the destruction of the faith of their own sons and daughters. With folded hands they sit idly by, while their loved ones float over this Niagara of heresy and modernism to eternal midnight. Their death cry will pierce the gloom, as it reverberates against your ears when it's too late, **too late, TOO LATE!**

THE REIGN OF CHRIST AND THE KINGDOM AGE

The Reign of Christ

"The Lord shall be King over all the earth" (Zech. 14:9).

"The government shall be upon His shoulder" (Isa. 9:6).

"A King shall reign in righteousness" (Isa. 32:1).

HIS SECOND COMING: "The Lord . . . **WILL RETURN** and gather thee (Israel) from all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath scattered thee" (Deut. 28:58-68 cf. 30:1-10; Ezek. 43:1-7; Mal. 3:1-3; 1 Cor. 1:7-8; Philip. 3:20-21; 1 Thes. 1:10; Rev. 1:4, 7; 2:25; 22:7, 20). Jesus said unto them "I will come **again**" (Jno. 14:3).

(1) **The KINGDOM reign of Christ is to be AFTER the days of the apostles.** "Ye turned to God . . . to serve the living and true God; and to wait for his Son from heaven" (1 Thes. 1:9-10). "He shall reign over the house of Jacob forever" (Lu. 1:33). This promise **awaits** fulfillment and **necessitates** His future reign. "If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him" (2 Tim. 2:12). "I charge thee in the sight of God . . . that thou keep the commandment, without spot, without reproach, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: which in its own times **he shall show who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords**" (1 Tim. 6:13-15, Am. V.).

(See Rev. 1:4; 22:20). "YET a little while, and He that shall come will come" (Heb. 10:37). See 1 Thes. 4:15-16.

(2) **The reign of Christ is to be AFTER the days of the church.** The church is chiefly Gentile. **AFTER** He takes the church out of the Gentiles (world), He "**will return and will build again**" the kingdom, which was broken down and cast into exile (Acts 15:14-16; Jno. 18:36). "The Lord shall set his hand **AGAIN the SECOND** time to recover the remnant of His people" (Isa. 11:11). "Christ . . . shall . . . **appear the SECOND time**" (Heb. 9:28).

(3) **The reign of Christ is to be AFTER the great tribulation.** The "man of sin" is "the beast" who heads up sin during the tribulation. The "man of sin" is **first** revealed, then Christ comes to set up the kingdom.

"Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him,

That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.

Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come **a falling away first**, and that **man of sin** be revealed, the son of perdition;

Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.

And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming:" (2 Thes. 2:1-8).

(4) The reign of Christ is **contemporaneous** with the thousand years of imprisonment of Satan.

"And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand.

And he lay hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,

And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season.

And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness for Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and **reigned with Christ a thousand years**" (Rev. 20:1-4).

And Satan's thousand years' prison period occurs **after** the church's translation and **after** the great tribulation. During the Church Age, Satan is still "the prince of this world" and "the god of this world" (Jno. 14:30; 2 Cor. 4:4; Lu. 4:5-6). During the tribulation, Satan is **VERY** active (Rev. 12:3-17).

During the Kingdom Age, Satan is bound and powerless for a thousand years and there is then no tempter nor deceiver of the nations (Rev. 12:9-10). Hence, righteousness prevails during the Kingdom Age (Rev. 20:1-10; Isa. 32:1).

(5) **THE REIGN of Christ** is a **THOUSAND YEARS' REIGN**. "They . . . **REIGNED** with Christ a **THOUSAND years**" (Rev. 20:4). "They . . . shall **reign** with Christ a **thousand years**" (Rev. 20:6). It has been nearly two thousand years since He was crucified, so the Church Age is not the period of His kingdom reign.

(6) **The reign of Christ** is that of "a King in His glory" (Dan. 7:13-14; Matt. 25:31-44; 26:64; Rev. 19). Revelation, unfolding events that are to be accomplished in the future, records, "The Lamb . . . is King of kings" (Rev. 17:14). "A Lamb as it had been slain" becomes "King of kings" (Rev. 5:6; 19).

(7) **The reign of Christ** is the **REIGN OF "THE LAMB" WITH HIS BRIDE, THE CHURCH**. The following Scriptures set forth that the church is the Bride of Christ:

"Wives, submit yourselves unto your own husbands, as unto the Lord.

For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church: for he is the Saviour of the body.

Therefore as the church is subject unto Christ, so let the wives be to their own husbands in every thing.

Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it;

That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water by the word,

That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.

So ought men to love their wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his wife loveth himself.

For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the church:

For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones.

For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.

This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church" (Eph. 5:22-32).

"For I am jealous over you with godly jealousy: for I have espoused you to one husband, that I may present you as a chaste virgin to Christ.

But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ" (2 Cor. 11:2-3).

"And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude, and as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of mighty thunderings, saying Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth.

Let us be glad and rejoice, and give honour to him: for the marriage of the Lamb is come, and his wife hath made herself ready.

And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in fine linen, clean and white: for the fine linen is the righteousness of saints.

And he saith unto me, Write, Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, These are the true sayings of God" (Rev. 19:6-9).

As Christ, the Lamb, first suffers before He enters into His glory (1 Pet. 1:10-11; Lu. 17:24-25), so the bride or church first suffers before she reigns with Him in glory. The church is now in its suffering period. "All that will live godly in Christ Jesus, shall suffer persecution" (2 Tim. 3:12; Col. 1:24).

"If we suffer, we **shall also REIGN WITH HIM**" (2 Tim. 2:12). The "reign with Him" is here referred to as a **future event**. It's the Lamb's purpose that His bride shall be with Him. "That where I am, **there ye may be also**" (Jno. 14:3). "That whether we wake or sleep, we should **live together with Him**" (1 Thes. 5:9-10). "Thou . . . hast redeemed us to God by thy blood . . . we shall **REIGN ON THE EARTH**" (Rev. 5:9-10). Those who have "part in the first resurrection (see page 97) . . . shall **REIGN With Him** a thousand years" (Rev. 20:6). The bodies of the redeemed will be transformed "like unto His glorious body" "in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye" at the resurrection of the "dead in Christ." They will be adapted to their new spiritual life as they reign with Him (Philip. 3:20-21; 1 Cor. 15:20-58).

THE CHURCH'S CALLING: Thus we see that a purpose of God, in visiting "the Gentiles, to take out of them a people (the church) for His name" and to regenerate them, is to fit them for, and use them in re-establishing a reign of heaven over the earth. The church is the "bride" of the Lamb. The "bride" is "born of the Spirit" and the church's calling is spiritual and heavenly. "To an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you" (1 Pet. 1:4). The church's "citizenship is in heaven" and her citizens are of use to the "God of heaven" when the kingdom is "set up."

"Wherefore, holy brethren, **partakers of the heavenly calling**, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our profession, Christ Jesus" (Heb. 3:1).

"For we know that, if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, a house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.

For in this we groan, earnestly desiring to be clothed upon with **our house which is from heaven**:

If so be that being clothed we shall not be found naked.

For we that are in this tabernacle do groan, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be swallowed up of life.

Now he that hath wrought us for the selfsame thing is God, who also hath given unto us the earnest of the Spirit.

Therefore we are always confident, knowing that, whilst we are at home in the body, we are absent from the Lord:

(For we walk by faith, not by sight:)

We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord.

Wherefore we labour, that, whether present or absent, we may be accepted of him" (2 Cor. 5:1-9).

"But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, a holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light:" (1 Pet. 2:9). (See Jas. 2:5; Matt. 18:4).

The Jews' citizenship during the Kingdom Age is on earth and they are in and of the kingdom.

THE JEWS' CALLING: As we have seen, the Jewish remnant also, are elect of God in re-establishing a reign of heaven over the earth. But the Jews' calling is earthly and material. God promised Abraham "that he should be the heir of the world" (Rom. 4:13).

"For the **Lord** thy God bringeth thee into a good land; a land of brooks of water, of fountains and depths that spring out of valleys and hills;

A land of wheat, and barley, and vines, and fig trees, and pomegranates; a land of oil olive, and honey;

A land wherein thou shalt eat bread without scarceness, thou shalt not lack any thing in it; a land whose stones are iron, and out of whose hills thou mayest dig brass" (Deut. 8: 7-9).

They are called to "a good land" of plenty and peace. "Nation shall not lift up a sword against nation . . . they shall sit every man under his vine and under his fig tree" (Mic. 4:3-4). They are "re-gathered" and the kingdom is set up on earth and the Lord rules from Zion (Mic. 4:6-8; Zech. 14:8-21. See pages 92-4). The Jewish nation and the "sheep" nations (Gentiles) (Matt. 25: 31-46) are on earth "replenishing it," as Adam and Noah were commanded to do, while the church or bride is with the Lamb, reigning over all. Both events are contemporaneous in the Kingdom Age (Gen. 12: 1-3; Rom. 9:4-8; Ex. 19:5-6; Deut. 28:9-14). The relationship between heaven and earth during the Kingdom Age is more intimate than now, and indicates progress in the earth's redemption.

(8) **The reign of Christ** will be in "**THE LAND**," as promised.

"The earth is the Lord's." The Lord, by oath-bound covenants and promises has conveyed forever and deeded to Israel, as it were, a portion of the earth, which is referred to as the land of Canaan, the promised land or "**the land**."

(a) "**The land**" promised to Abraham:

"The Lord said unto Abram, get thee out of thy country unto a land that I will shew thee: And I will make of thee a great nation" . . . "and in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed."

. . . "All the land which thou seest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed forever." "I am the Lord that brought thee out of Ur of the Chaldees, to give thee **this land** to inherit it . . . And I will establish my covenant between me and thee and thy seed after thee in their generations, for an **everlasting covenant**, to be a God unto thee and to thy seed after thee.

And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an **everlasting possession**; and I will be their God" (Gen. 12:1-3:13:14-17; 15: 7-21; 17: 7-8).

Note that God made an "**everlasting covenant**" with Abraham to give him and "his seed," "**the land**" "for an **everlasting possession**." This covenant is **unconditional** and therefore, **irrevocable**. Therefore, its fulfillment **necessitates** and **awaits** the time, when God, according to the promises of prophecy, will **restore** Israel to "**the land**" and establish them there **forever**.

(b) "**The land**" promised to Isaac:

"Sojourn in **this land**, and I will be with thee, and bless thee; for unto thee, and unto thy seed, I will give all these countries, and I will perform the oath which I sware unto Abraham thy father . . . and in thy seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed" (Gen. 26:1-5).

This was a recurrence to and confirmation of the promises made to Abraham.

(c) "**The land**" promised to Jacob:

"The Lord . . . said, I am the Lord God of Abraham thy father, and the God of Isaac; the land whereon thou liest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed . . . and in thy seed shall all the families of the earth be blessed . . . And the land which I gave Abraham and Isaac, to thee I will give it, and to thy seed after thee will I give the land" (Gen. 28:12-13; 35:12).

Later, when Jacob was dying, he said unto his son, Joseph,

"Joseph, God Almighty appeared unto me at Luz in the land of Canaan, and blessed me,

And said unto me, Behold, I will make thee fruitful, and multiply thee, and I will make of thee a multitude of people; and will give **this land** to thy seed after thee for an **everlasting possession**" (Gen. 48:3-4).

Joseph believed the promises of God, about "**the land**." As he was dying,

"Joseph said unto his brethren, I die; and God will surely visit you, and bring you out of this land unto the land which he sware to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob" (Gen. 50:24).

(d) "**The land**," promised to "**the seed**" of Abraham, Isaac and Jacob "for an everlasting possession."

"And the Lord appeared unto Abram, and said, Unto thy seed will I give **this land**: . . . And the Lord appeared unto him (Isaac), and said . . . unto thy seed will I give all these countries, and I will perform the oath which I sware unto Abraham thy father." "And the Lord stood above it, and said (unto Jacob) . . . the land whereon thou liest, to thee will I give it, and to thy seed" (Gen. 12:7; 26:3; 28:13).

"I will give unto . . . thy seed after thee, the land . . . for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God" (Gen. 17:8).

(e) "**The land**" promise repeated to *Moses and confirmed.

"And God spake unto Moses, and said unto him, I am the Lord:

*While the present written revelations began with Moses, yet Scripture clearly sets forth that thru the centuries prior to the time of Moses, God had been unfolding and revealing redemption to man. See pages 8-12.

And I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the name of God Almighty; but by my name **Jehovah** was I not known to them.

And I have also established my covenant with them, to give them the land of Canaan, the land of their pilgrimage, wherein they were strangers.

And I will bring you in unto **the land**, concerning the which I did swear to give it to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob; and I will give it you for a heritage: I am the **Lord**" (Ex. 6:2-4, 8).

(f) "**The land**" temporarily dispossessed by Israel.

Israel's sin and rebellion caused them to be temporarily dispossessed of "**the land**." They were taken from **the land**, exiled and "scattered." But "God is faithful that promised" and He has revealed that He will "regather" them and "**plant them upon THEIR land, and THEY SHALL NO MORE BE PULLED OUT OF THEIR LAND**" (Amos 9:15). See the "scattering" and "regathering" of Israel, pages 32-36.

(g) "**The land**" to be repossessed by Israel as revealed by prophecy.

"Thy people also shall be all righteous: **they shall inherit the land for ever**, the branch of my planting, the work of my hands, that I may be glorified" (Isa. 60:21).

"Thus speaketh the **Lord** God of Israel, saying, Write thee all the words that I have spoken unto thee in a book.

For, lo, the days come, saith the **Lord**, that I will bring again the captivity of my people Israel and Judah, saith the **Lord**: and I will cause them to **return to the land** that I gave to their fathers, and **they shall possess it**. . . .

¶ And now therefore thus saith the **Lord**, the God of Israel, concerning this city, whereof ye say, It shall be delivered into the hand of the king of Babylon by the sword, and by the famine, and by the pestilence;

Behold, **I will gather them out of all countries**, whither I have driven them in mine anger, and in my fury, and in great wrath; and I will bring them again unto this place, and I will cause them to dwell safely

And they shall be my people, and I will be their God:

And I will give them one heart, and one way, that they may fear me for ever, for the good of them, and of their children after them:

And I will make an everlasting covenant with them, that I will not turn away from them, to do them good; but I will put my fear in their hearts, that they shall not depart from me.

Yea, I will rejoice over them to do them good, and **I will plant them in this land** assuredly with my whole heart and with my whole soul.

For thus saith the **Lord**; like as I have brought all this great evil upon this people, so will I bring upon them all the good that I have promised them.

And fields shall be bought in **this land**, whereof ye say, It is desolate without man or beast; it is given into the hand of the Chaldeans.

Men shall **buy fields** for money, and **subscribe evidences**, and seal them, and **take witnesses** in the land of Benjamin, and in the places about Jerusalem, and in the cities of Judah, and in the cities of the mountains, and in the cities of the valley, and in the cities of the south: for **I will cause their captivity to return**, saith the **Lord**" (Jer. 30:2-3; 32:36-44).

"For I will take you from among the heathen, and gather you out of all countries, and will bring you into **your own land**.

¶Then will I sprinkle clean water upon you, and ye shall be clean: from all your filthiness, and from all your idols, will I cleanse you.

A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you a heart of flesh.

And I will put my Spirit within you, and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments, and do them.

And **ye shall dwell in the land that I gave to your fathers:** and ye shall be my people, and I will be your God.

I will also save you from all your uncleannesses; and I will call for the corn, and will increase it, and lay no famine upon you.

And I will multiply the fruit of the tree, and the increase of the field, that ye shall receive no more reproach of famine among the heathen.

Then shall ye remember your own evil ways, and your doings that were not good, and shall loathe yourselves in your own sight for your iniquities and for your abominations.

Not for your sakes do I this, saith the Lord God, be it known unto you: be ashamed and confounded for your own ways, O house of Israel.

Thus saith the Lord God; In the day that I shall have cleansed you from all your iniquities **I will also cause YOU to dwell in the cities,** and the wastes shall be builded.

And the desolate land shall be tilled, whereas it lay desolate in the sight of all that passed by.

And they shall say, **This land** that was desolate **is become like the garden of Eden;** and the waste and desolate and ruined cities are become fenced, and are inhabited.

Then the heathen that are left round about you shall know that I the Lord build the ruined places, and plant that that was desolate: **I the Lord have spoken it, and I will do it"** (Ezek. 36:24-36).

¶In that day will I raise up the tabernacle of David that is fallen, and close up the breaches thereof; and I will raise up his ruins, and I will build it as in the days of old: . . .

And **I will bring again the captivity of my people of Israel, and they shall build the waste cities, and inhabit them; and they shall plant vineyards, and drink the wine thereof; they shall also make gardens, and eat the fruit of them.**

And **I will plant them upon THEIR LAND, and they shall no more be pulled up out of THEIR LAND** which I have given them, saith the Lord thy God" (Amos 9:11-15).

(9) **The reign of Christ will be OVER GOD'S PEOPLE, ISRAEL.**

"Saying, Where is **he that is born King of the Jews?** for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him . . .

And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for **out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel"** (Matt. 2:2, 6).

"He shall be great, and shall be called the Son of the Highest; and the Lord God shall give unto him the throne of his father David:

And **he shall reign over the house of Jacob for ever;** and of his kingdom there shall be no end" (Lu. 1:32-33).

"Now therefore, if ye will obey my voice indeed, and keep my covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto me above all people: for all the earth is mine:

And ye shall be unto me a kingdom of priests, and a holy nation. These are the words which thou shalt speak unto the children of Israel" (Ex. 19:5-6).

"When the Most High divided to the nations their inheritance, when he separated the sons of Adam, he set the bounds of the people according to the number of the children of Israel.

For the **Lord's** portion is his people; Jacob is the lot of his inheritance.

He found him in a desert land, and in the waste howling wilderness; he led him about, he instructed him, he kept him as the apple of his eye" (Deut. 30:8-10).

"He shall cause them that come of Jacob to take root: Israel shall blossom and bud, and fill the face of the world with fruit. . . .

¶And it shall come to pass in that day, that the **Lord** shall beat off from the channel of the river unto the stream of Egypt, and ye shall be gathered one by one, O ye children of Israel.

And it shall come to pass in that day, that the great trumpet shall be blown, and they shall come which were ready to perish in the land of Assyria, and the outcasts in the land of Egypt, and shall worship the **Lord** in the holy mount at Jerusalem" (Isa. 27:6, 12-13).

"Alas! for that day is great, so that none is like it: it is even the time of Jacob's trouble; but he shall be saved out of it.

For it shall come to pass in that day, saith the **Lord** of hosts, that I will break his yoke from off thy neck, and will burst thy bonds, and strangers shall no more serve themselves of him:

But they shall serve the **Lord** their God, and David their king, whom I will raise up unto them.

¶Therefore fear thou not, O my servant Jacob, saith the **Lord**; neither be dismayed, O Israel: for, lo, I will save thee from afar, and thy seed from the land of their captivity; and Jacob shall return, and shall be in rest, and be quiet, and none shall make him afraid.

For I am with thee, saith the **Lord**, to save thee: though I make a full end of all nations whither I have scattered thee, **yet will I not make a full end of thee**; but I will correct thee in measure, and will not leave thee altogether unpunished" (Jer. 30:7-11).

"In that day, saith the **Lord**, will I assemble her that halteth, and I will gather her that is driven out, and her that I have afflicted;

And I will make her that halted a remnant, and her that was cast far off a strong nation: and the Lord shall reign over them in Mount Zion from henceforth, even for ever.

¶And thou, O tower of the flock, the strong hold of the daughter of Zion, unto thee shall it come, even the first dominion; the kingdom shall come to the daughter of Jerusalem" (Micah 4:6-8).

"Simeon hath declared how God at the first did visit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name.

And to this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written,

After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down; and I will build again the ruins thereof, and **I will set it up:**" (Acts 15:14-16).

"Thus saith the **Lord**, your redeemer, the Holy One of Israel . . . I am the **Lord** . . . your King. . . . **This people** have I formed for myself; **they shall shew forth my praise**" (Isa. 43:14-21).

(10) **The reign of Christ** will be IN JERUSALEM.

"Awake, awake; put on thy strength, O Zion; put on thy beautiful garments, **O Jerusalem, the holy city** . . . ye shall be redeemed without money. . . . How beautiful upon the mountains are the feet of him that bringeth good tidings . . . that saith unto Zion, thy God reigneth! . . . Thy watchman . . . shall see eye to eye, ('every eye shall see Him') when the **Lord** returneth to Zion" (Isa. 52:1-8). "**The city**

of the Lord, the Zion of the Holy One of Israel" (Isa. 62:14). **"Jerusalem . . . is the city of the Great King"** (Matt. 5:35).

"I have set watchmen upon thy walls, O Jerusalem, which shall never hold their peace day nor night: ye that make mention of the LORD, keep not silence, And give him no rest, till he establish, and till he make Jerusalem a praise in the earth.

The LORD hath sworn by his right hand, and by the arm of his strength, Surely I will no more give thy corn to be meat for thine enemies; and the sons of the stranger shall not drink thy wine, for the which thou hast laboured:

But they that have gathered it shall eat it, and praise the LORD; and they that have brought it together shall drink it in the courts of my holiness.

¶Go through, go through the gates; prepare ye the way of the people; cast up, cast up the highway; gather out the stones; lift up a standard for the people.

Behold, the LORD hath proclaimed unto the end of the world, Say ye to the daughter of Zion, Behold, thy salvation cometh; behold, his reward is with him, and his work before him.

And they shall call them, The holy people, The redeemed of the LORD: and thou shalt be called, Sought out, A city not forsaken" (Isa. 62: 6-12).

"Afterward he brought me to the temple (at Jerusalem), and measured the posts, six cubits broad on the one side, and six cubits broad on the other side, which was the breadth of the tabernacle. . . . Afterward he brought me to the gate, even the gate that looketh toward the east:

And, behold, the glory of the God of Israel came from the way of the east: and his voice was like a noise of many waters: and the earth shined with his glory.

And it was according to the appearance of the vision which I saw, even according to the vision that I saw when I came to destroy the city: and the visions were like the vision that I saw by the river Chebar; and I fell upon my face.

And the glory of the LORD came into the house by the way of the gate whose prospect is toward the east.

So the spirit took me up, and brought me into the inner court; and, behold, the glory of the LORD filled the house.

And I heard him speaking unto me out of the house; and the man stood by me.

¶And he said unto me, Son of man, THE PLACE OF MY THRONE, and the place of the soles of my feet, where I will dwell in the midst of the children of Israel for ever, and my holy name, shall the house of Israel no more defile, neither they, nor their kings, by their whoredom, nor by the carcasses of their kings in their high places" (Ezek. 41: 1; 43: 1-7). Behold, the day of the LORD cometh, and thy spoil shall be divided in the midst of thee.

"For I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to battle; and the city shall be taken, and the houses rifled, and the women ravished; and half of the city shall go forth into captivity, and the residue of the people shall not be cut off from the city.

Then shall the LORD go forth and fight against those nations, as when he fought in the day of battle.

¶And his feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south.

And ye shall flee to the valley of the mountains; for the valley of the mountains shall reach unto Azal: yea, ye shall flee, like as ye fled from before the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah: and the LORD my God shall come, and all the saints with thee.

And it shall come to pass in that day, that the light shall not be clear, nor dark:

But it shall be one day which shall be known to the LORD, not day nor night: but it shall come to pass, that at evening time it shall be light.

And it shall be in that day, that living waters shall go out from Jerusalem; half of them toward the former sea, and half of them toward the hinder sea: in summer and in winter shall it be.

And the LORD shall be King over all the earth: in that day shall there be one LORD, and his name one.

All the land shall be turned as a plain from Geba to Rimmon south to Jerusalem: and it shall be lifted up, and inhabited in her place, from Benjamin's gate unto the place of the first gate, unto the corner gate, and from the tower of Hananeel unto the king's wine-presses.

And men shall dwell in it, and there shall be no more utter destruction, but Jerusalem shall be safely inhabited" (Zech. 14: 1-11).

"O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathered her chickens under her wings, and ye would not!

Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.

For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the name of the Lord" (Matt. 23: 37-39).

Scripture reveals that "Jerusalem . . . is the city of the great King," "the King of Kings." **"Pray for the peace of Jerusalem."**

(11) The reign of Christ thru the Jew, reaches out and blesses "all families of the earth."

"Now the Lord had said unto Abram . . . in thee shall all families of the earth be blessed" (Gen. 12:1-3).

"¶And in this mountain shall the Lord of hosts make unto **all people** a feast of fat things, a feast of wines on the lees, of fat things full of marrow, of wines on the lees well refined.

And he will destroy in this mountain the face of the covering cast over **all people**, and the vail that is spread over **all nations**.

He will swallow up death in victory; and the Lord God will wipe away tears from off all faces; and the rebuke of his people shall he take away from off **all the earth**: for the Lord hath spoken it.

¶And it shall be said in that day, Lo, this is our God; we have waited for him, and he will save us: this is the Lord; we have waited for him, we will be glad and rejoice in his salvation" (Isa. 25:6-9).

"Yet have I set my King upon my holy hill of Zion.

I will declare the decree: the Lord hath said unto me, Thou art my Son; this day have I begotten thee.

Ask of me, and I shall give thee **the heathen** for thine inheritance, and **the uttermost parts** of the earth for thy possession" (Ps. 2:6-8).

¶Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: he is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass.

And I will cut off the chariot from Ephraim, and the horse from Jerusalem, and the battle bow shall be cut off; and he shall speak **peace unto the heathen**: and his dominion shall be from sea even to sea, and from the river even to the ends of the earth.

As for thee also, by the blood of thy covenant I have sent forth thy prisoners out of the pit wherein is no water. . . .

And Judah also shall fight at Jerusalem; and the wealth of all the heathen round about shall be gathered together, gold, and silver, and apparel, in great abundance.

And so shall be the plague of the horse, of the mule, of the camel, and of the ass, and of all beasts that shall be in these tents, as this plague.

¶And it shall come to pass, **that every one that is left of all the nations** which came against Jerusalem, shall even go up from year to year to worship the King, the Lord of hosts, and to keep the feast of tabernacles.

And it shall be, that whoso will not come up of all the families of the earth unto Jerusalem to worship the King, the Lord of hosts, even upon them shall be no rain.

And if the family of Egypt go not up, and come not, that have no rain; there shall be the plague, wherewith the Lord will smite the heathen that come not up to keep the feast of tabernacles.

This shall be the punishment of Egypt, and the punishment of all nations that come not up to keep the feast of tabernacles.

¶In that day shall there be upon the bells of the horses, **holiness unto the Lord**; and the pots in the Lord's house shall be like the bowls before the altar.

Yea, every pot in Jerusalem and in Judah shall be holiness unto the Lord of hosts: and all they that sacrifice shall come and take of them, and seethe therein: and in that day there shall be no more the Canaanite in the house of the Lord of hosts" (Zech. 9:9-11; 14:14-21).

"After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down; and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will set it up:

That **the residue of men might seek after the Lord**, and **all the Gentiles**, upon whom my name is called, saith the Lord, who doeth all these things" (Acts 5:16-17).

"For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace.

Of the **increase of his government and peace there shall be no end**, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order

it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. **The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this**" (Isa. 9: 6-7).

The Kingdom Age

(1) There will be no tempter (Rev. 20:1-10). (2) Righteousness prevails (Isa. 32:1). (3) **It will be a reign of law** (Mic. 4:2). The church is under grace (Rom. 6:14). Therefore, the Church Age and the Kingdom Age are two different Ages. (4) "The knowledge of the Lord shall cover the earth" (Isa. 11:9). (5) The curse on creation will be removed and "the desert shall . . . blossom as the rose." The curse is not now removed (Rom. 8:18-23 cf. Joel 3:17-18; Isa. 35:1). This is further proof that the Church Age and the age of the reign of Christ are not one and the same. (6) Animals will lose their ferocity (Isa. 11:6-9; 65:25). (7) Men will again attain great ages, for sin which cuts life short will be largely done away with (Isa. 65:20-22). It is evident from these facts that the "kingdom of heaven" has not yet been "set up." But God has covenanted to re-establish a rule of the heavens over the earth, which Scripture sets forth as "the kingdom of heaven," i. e., the Kingdom Age—the Millennium.

"THIS SAME JESUS"

"Christ . . . shall . . . **appear** the second time" (Heb. 9:28). He appeared the first time, didn't He? He "shall . . . appear the second time." Who says so? God says so!

The King and kingdom prophecies look forward to the time when "this same Jesus" will come back from heaven to **this same mount of Olives** from which He ascended **into** heaven, to "set up" this **same kingdom** of heaven that He offered to "set up" when here.

"¶From that time Jesus began to preach, and to say, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand" (Matt. 4:17).

"The former treatise have I made, O Theophilus, of all that Jesus began both to do and teach,

Until the day in which he was taken up, after that he through the Holy Ghost had given commandments unto the apostles whom he had chosen:

To whom also he shewed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them forty days, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God: . . .

When they therefore were come together, they asked of him, saying Lord, wilt thou at this time **restore** again **the kingdom** to Israel?

And he said unto them, It is not for you to know the times or the seasons, which the Father hath put in his own power. . . .

And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight.

And while they looked steadfastly toward heaven, as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel;

Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? **This same Jesus**, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven. . . .

¶Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord;

And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you:

Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began" (Acts 1:1-11; 3:19-21).

"The day of the Lord cometh . . . his feet shall stand in that day on the mount of Olives" (Zech. 14:1-11).

"This same Jesus" will reign as King of kings.

"And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war.

His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself.

And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called **The Word of God** (See Jno. 1:1, 3, 14).

And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean.

And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations; and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.

And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, **King of Kings, and Lord of Lords**" (Rev. 19:11-16).

SATAN'S LAST STAND

"And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand.

And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,

And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should **deceive the nations no more**, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. . . .

And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison,

And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea.

And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.

And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever" (Rev. 20:1-3, 7-10).

God tests free moral agents. He, in a sense, over-rules Satan and uses him for this purpose. At the end of Christ's thousand years' reign and as the end of all redemption draws near, mankind is given a final test by Satan. It ends quickly in fearful judgment on those who would be rebels. Satan is banished forever from God's presence under the curse of the "lake of fire." These events are represented on our Chart, by "**F.**" See p. 83.

THE TWO RESURRECTIONS

Death is the work of Satan. Death came by sin and sin came by Satan—"him that had the power of death, that is, the devil" (Heb. 2:14). "For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, that he might destroy the works of the devil" (1 Jno. 3:8). Jesus destroys or undoes death by the **general resurrection** of all the past dead, "All that are in the graves shall hear his voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the **RESURRECTION OF LIFE**; and they that have done evil, unto the **RESURRECTION OF DAMNATION**" (Jno. 5:28-29). Jesus,

who is "the resurrection and the life" taught that there would be **two** distinct resurrections—that of the **saved** and that of the **lost**. Rev. 20:4-6 discloses that the resurrection of the "damned" will occur a **thousand years AFTER** the resurrection of the "dead in Christ."

"And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years.

But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection.

Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years" (Rev. 20:4-6 with 1 Thes. 4:13-18).

THE JUDGMENT OF THE SAVED

Those who have part in the first resurrection are **under the blood**. They are within the government of God and are saved because they have received the Lord Jesus Christ, by faith, as their Saviour. As their Substitute, He has borne the punishment for their sins "in His own body on the tree" (1 Jno. 1:7; 1 Pet. 2:24; Acts 16:31; Jno. 3:16; Rom. 3:24-25). All of their sins have been forgiven (Acts 13:38-39); "Who-soever believeth in Him shall receive remission of sins" (Acts 10:43), and they go before God to be **REWARDED** according to **their works**. "Thou shalt be **recompensed** at the resurrection of the just" (Lu. 14:14). The **amount** of reward each receives depends upon the extent and character of the individual's "good works" (1 Cor. 3:12-15; 2 Cor. 5:10). God invites the believer or saved person to a life of "good works," and promises **rewards** (Rom. 12:1-2; Rev. 2:7, 17, 26). Salvation is a **gift** of God, by grace thru faith.

"For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God:

Not of works, lest any man should boast (Eph. 2:8-9).

Rewards have to be **earned** by "good works." Salvation is possessed **now**.

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me **hath** everlasting life" (Jno. 6:47).

Rewards are possessed **hereafter**.

"**Henceforth** there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous judge, shall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them also that love his appearing" (2 Tim. 4:8).

We'll work till Jesus comes or we be gathered home. "The night cometh, when no man can work." The day is far spent. How many lost have you already let perish? Go! Preach the gospel! God saved you for service.

This judgment for reward occurs **after** the translation of the dead in Christ, and **before** they come back to reign with Him (Jude 14-15). It is indicated on our Chart by the point "K," page 83.

THE GREAT WHITE THRONE JUDGMENT

"And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them.

And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works.

And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.

And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire" (Rev. 20:11-15).

The **saved** dead NEVER GO before the great white throne judgment. They have been raised from the dead and reigning with Christ a **thousand years BEFORE** this judgment occurs (Rev. 20:4-6 and see page 97-8). The wicked dead **ALL** go before the **great white throne judgment**. They are **banished forever** from God's presence under **eternal curse** (Rev. 20:15, 10; 22:11).

"But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death" (Rev. 21:8).

They are lost and damned **because they have rejected** the Saviour, and therefore, have no substitute to bear the punishment for their sin. "He that believeth not shall be damned" (Mk. 16:16; Jno. 16:8-9; 3:36). It was not God's will that they should perish. "God so loved the world, that He gave his only begotten Son, that **WHOSOEVER BELIEVETH** in him **SHOULD NOT PERISH**, but have everlasting life" (Jno. 3:16; 2 Pet. 3:9; Jno. 5:40). They are **each** punished "according to **their** works." Other things being equal, the **vilest** sinner receives much more severe punishment than the "**moral**" sinner (Lu. 12:47-48). This event is indicated on our Chart by "F," p. 83

Section 6

CHRIST WILL CREATE ANEW OR

THE NEW HEAVEN AND THE NEW EARTH

Sin started in heaven with the rebellion of Satan and angels (Ezek 28:11-17; Matt. 25:41). It defiled heaven, then came to earth and defiled the earth. So both have to be made new. We find when the **great white throne judgment** occurs that the defiled heaven and earth are unable to stand in the presence of a holy God.

"And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat upon it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them" (Rev. 20:11).

At this judgment, all sin is forever banished from God's presence and redemption is nearing its completion. At the **FIRST** cardinal climax in redemption, Christ bore the penalty for the sin of the world (Jno. 1:29; 19:30; 1 Jno. 2:1-2). At the **SECOND** cardinal climax in redemption the kingdoms of this world, formerly under Satan, become the kingdoms of our Lord and of His Christ (Rev. 11:15; 16:17). And at the **THIRD** and final cardinal climax in redemption the defiled heaven and earth are cleansed and made new and holy. See this indicated on the chart, at "G," p. 102, by the expression, "It is Done." It is the final "It is finished" in redemption.

"While the earth remaineth"

Genesis 3 records the defilement of the earth by sin. Genesis is the book of beginnings and Gen. 8:22 early indicates that some day this defiled earth must pass away. "While the earth remaineth, seedtime and harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease" (Gen. 8:22). The clause "**While the earth remaineth**" is clearly germinal truth and prophetic of the re-creation of the defiled earth by God at the close of redemption.

"They shall perish"

"Of old hast thou laid the foundation of the earth: and the heavens are the work of thy hands.

They shall perish, but thou shalt endure: yea, all of them shall wax old like a garment; as a vesture shalt thou change them, and they shall be changed:" (Ps. 102:25-26).

"I create new heavens and a new earth."

The prophet, Isaiah, lifted the veil that hid the future and disclosed the coming blessedness of God's people, and that He would create for them a new earth. "Behold, I create new heavens and a new earth" (Isa. 65:17).

"Heaven and earth shall pass away."

Of Jesus, it is recorded "All things were made by Him; and without Him was not anything made that was made" (Jno. 1:3). He is "the Lord from heaven" (1 Cor. 15:47) and when He was here on earth, He recurred to and confirmed the Old Testament prophecies concerning the heaven and earth "perishing" or passing away. "Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away" (Matt. 24:35). Jesus

was God, incarnate. He assures us that His own word **shall not** pass away but that this old sin-cursed "earth **shall pass away**." Yet the world continues in sin as if there was no God and never would be a day of judgment. "O earth, earth, earth, hear the word of the Lord" (Jer. 22:29).

"The earth . . . and the works . . . therein shall be burned up."

"But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.

Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, what manner of persons ought ye to be in all holy conversation and godliness,

Looking for and hasting unto the coming of the day of God, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat?

Nevertheless **we**, according to his promise, **look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness**" (2 Pet. 3:10-13).

As redemption has progressed, its revelations have become fuller and more complete. And so, in this Scripture, we see that more details are added, concerning the making of the new heaven and the new earth.

"Behold, I make all things new"

The book of Revelation unveils events that are yet to occur in redemption. In it the curtain is pulled back and we look into the future. We see the course of the church and its translation, the great tribulation and following judgments pass in review, and these are followed by the thousand years Kingdom Age. Satan makes his last stand, then the great white throne judgment occurs and the unrighteous dead of all the ages are finally and forever banished from God's presence. Then One speaks forth from the throne saying, "Behold, I make **all things new**." And again He speaks **from the throne** saying, "It is done" (Rev. 21:6). "**It is finished**." "**IT IS DONE**." What is done? "The earth: and the heavens . . . they shall perish" (Ps. 102:25-26). "It is done." What is done? "I create new heavens and a new earth." "It is done." What is done? "Heaven and earth shall pass away" (Matt. 24:35). "It is done." What is done? "The earth . . . and the works . . . therein shall be burned up" (2 Pet. 3:10). "It is done." What is done? "I saw a new **heaven** and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away" (Rev. 21:1). "It is done." What is done? "Behold, I make **ALL THINGS NEW**" (Rev. 21:5). "It is done!" "**It is done!**" "**IT IS DONE!**" Praise God the Father, praise God the Son and praise God the Holy Ghost! Preach it! **Teach it! TELL IT WHEREVER YOU GO**. The Saviour's work of redemption is a **COMPLETE** work. Sin's penalty is borne and the Lamb cries forth, "It is finished." Jesus is crowned King of kings and the government of the earth is placed back under the direct government of God, and heaven declares, "It is done." Then all things are made new and the Redeemer cries forth, "It is done." **REDEMPTION IS FINISHED**. The condition on earth is again that of Eden or Paradise. (See the "Chart of Finished Redemption," p. 102).

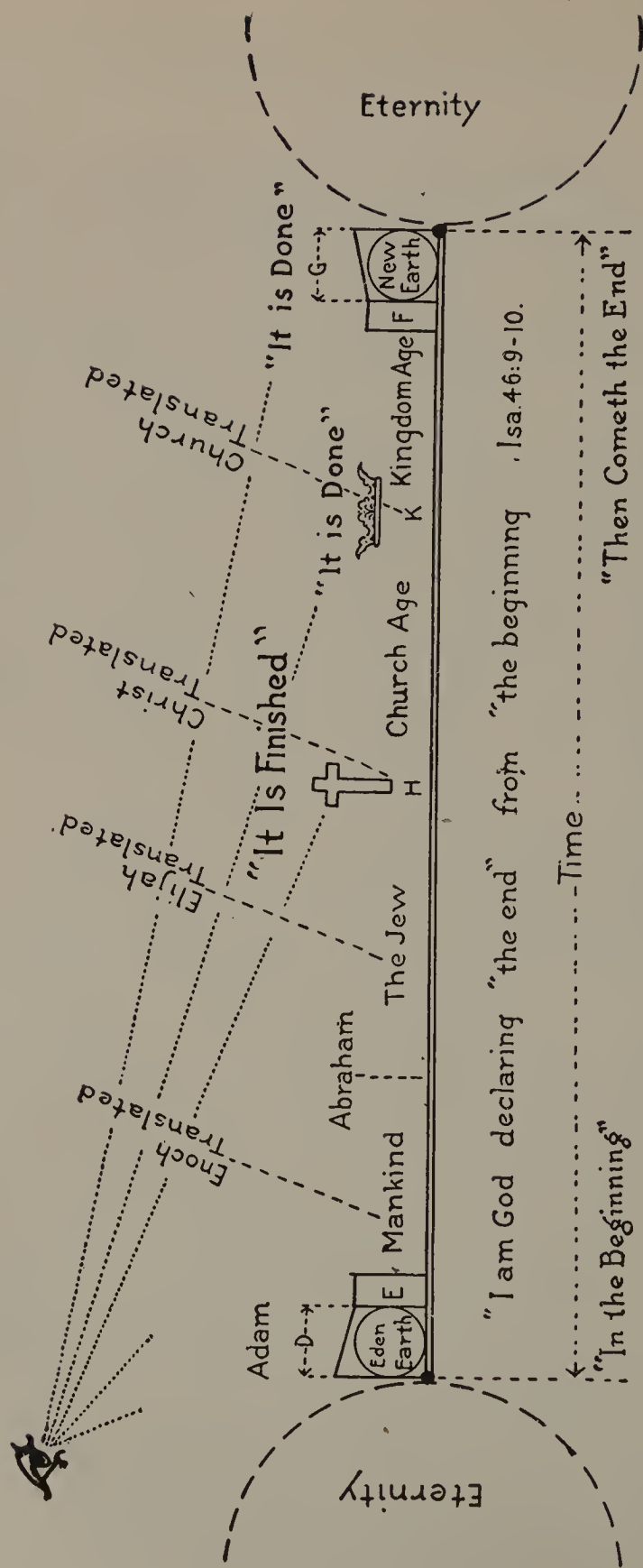
THE CHART OF "FINISHED REDEMPTION"

or

**A bird's-eye view of God's plan of redemption
from its "beginning" to its "end"**

"D" represents the Eden condition in which the earth left God's creative hands and "G" represents the Paradise condition in which the

GLIMPSES OF BIBLE CLIMAXES



The Chart of Finished Redemption

or

A bird's-eye view of God's plan of redemption from its "beginning" to its "end"

"new earth" is again placed back into God's hands by its Redeemer, the Lord Jesus Christ. See the chart on p. 102.

"THEN COMETH THE END"

"Then **cometh the end**, when he (the King of kings, Rev. 11:15) shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule, and all authority and power.

For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet.

The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death. . . .

And when all things shall be subdued unto him, then shall the Son also himself be subject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all" (1 Cor. 15:24-26, 28).

THEN COMES ETERNITY

The first earth came, as it were, out of eternity; and now the ransomed, redeemed earth swings back **OUT INTO ETERNITY**. (Examine the chart, p. 102.)

"And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God" (Rev. 21:2-3).

There shall be (1) "no more curse," (2) no more "hunger," (3) no more "crying," (4) no more "sorrow," (5) no more "pain," (6) no more "death" and †(7) "**NO NIGHT THERE.**" And the "servants" of God and of the Lamb "shall serve Him: And they shall **see** His face and **HIS NAME** shall be in their foreheads . . . and **THEY SHALL REIGN FOR EVER AND EVER**" (Rev. 21-22). Amen. Praise God the Father! Praise God the Son! Praise God the Holy Ghost! Hallelujah! What a Saviour! Hallelujah! What redemption! Away with modernism or evolution, which preaches "another gospel," "the gospel of death." Away with modernism, which preaches the gospel of antichrist, instead of the gospel of Jesus Christ!

"We journey to a city, Which eye hath never seen;
We journey to a country, Whose shores are ever green.
Far, far away it lieth, Beyond the valley low,
Beyond the chilly river, Beyond its waves of woe.

Chorus:

We journey to a city, Which eye hath never seen;
We journey to a country, Whose shores are ever green.

No eye hath seen its glories, Its joys have not been told:
No cloud of sorrow passes Above its streets of gold:
And strains of sweetest music Float on the balmy air,
The voices of the harpers Who sing their triumphs there.
They sing the name of Jesus, Who washed them with His blood;
The Lamb who went before them, Through desert, fire and flood.
No more the far off vision, With open face they see
The King in all His beauty, Who died to set them free.
We journey to a city, Its gates are open wide,
And angel voices greet us beyond the swelling tide.
A little while of battle, And then the endless calm;
A little while the battle, And then the victor's palm."

—Rev. H. Burton, M.A., D.D.

†"Seven" is the number used in Scripture, which significantly speaks of a finished redemption, covenanted by God.

Section 7

STUDIES CONCERNING "THE ENEMY" OF GOD'S PROGRAM OF FINISHED REDEMPTION

Introduction: William Adams Brown, former President of **Union Theological Seminary**, New York, after pointing out that the liberalism which he defends had disowned "the outworn standard" of an infallible Bible, as well as the authority of Jesus, says: "When one has once deserted the shores of absolutism and launched one's bark upon the sea of relativity, there is **no harbor**, however small, in which one may hope to find a refuge."* Away with evolution and its evasion of truth! Away with modernism and its midnight! It is without hope and offers no heaven. Back to the Bible and God! The "false teachers," entrenched behind the stone walls of protecting colleges and seminaries are piercing the souls of your loved ones with the devil's darts of death, while you sit idly by and never lift a hand. Does Union Theological Seminary shelter a smooth, side-stepping, silver-tongued, satanically sophistic Fosdick? Is he so exceedingly crafty and cunning that in his misinterpretation and perversion and rejection of the Scriptures, he would deceive the very elect, if it were possible?

Dr. Augustus Hopkins Strong says: "THE THEOLOGICAL SEMINARIES of almost all our denominations are becoming so infected with this grievous error † (modernism) that they are not so much organs of Christ as **they ARE ORGANS OF ANTICHRIST.**"§ And are not Union Theological Seminary and Chicago University two of the chiefest among these "organs of Antichrist?"

It was the scribe, "the scholar" of his day, and the Pharisee, the church leader of his day, who rejected Jesus Christ and the Word of God. Read what Jesus had to say about them, as recorded in Matt. 23; page 114.

"THE WORLD" "THE ENEMY OF GOD"

Jesus said, "The world . . . I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil" (Jno. 7:7).

Scriptures and history disclose the fact that all thru the ages, **ONLY A REMNANT OR MINORITY** of mankind **HAVE EVER** worshipped and served God or been "children of God." The vast majority of mankind have ever been enemies of God's program of finished redemption. See chart, page 102. James 4:4 sets forth that **this enemy of God is called "the world."** What! Is "the world" the enemy of God? Yes. This is the plain, repeated teaching of Scripture. Scripture sets forth that humanity is divided into †two diametrically opposed groups: that vast majority of mankind "the world" who have never known nor received

* John Horsch in "Modern Religious Liberalism," page 227. § Page 248.

† Parenthetical material and emphasis are by the author.

† This modernistic social service song about the "Fatherhood of God" and the "Brotherhood of man" is satanic sophistry. "The scribes and Pharisees" claimed God as their Father, but Jesus Christ told them, "Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do" (Jno. 8:1-3, 41-44). Scripture refers to the "sons of God" and "the children of the wicked one" (Matt. 5:9; 13:38). Do you think a child of God is a brother of a son of the devil? God commands, "Come ye out from among them and be ye separate." "Have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness."

Jesus Christ as Saviour and Master; and that small minority who have placed themselves under the government of God, by receiving Jesus Christ as Saviour and Lord. Many in the former group, glibly talk of God and their worship of Him, yet deny Jesus Christ. But the Word of God exposes the fallacy of their claim: "He that honoreth not the Son honoreth not the Father" (Jno. 5:23).

Jesus Christ came "from heaven" into the world, sent by God the Father, as His representative (Jno. 6:38). Part of His business is to set up a kingdom of heaven on earth. The mass of humanity referred to in Scripture as "the world" has constantly been an enemy of this redemptive program. "The world" is "the enemy of God." Not "the world" of forests, fields and flowers, but "the world" of mankind that Jesus referred to as hating both Him and His Father—"the world" that is the enemy of God's program to re-establish an earthly reign of righteousness and true holiness—"the world" that demands that it be allowed to continue in lust, license, lawlessness, greed and ungodliness—"the world" that denies the Word of God and refuses to submit to the moral laws of heaven—"the world" of which Jesus said, "**I am not** of this world" (Jno. 8:23)—"the world" of which Jesus said, "**My kingdom is not** of this world" (Jno. 18:36)—"the world" of which Jesus said when He spoke to His disciples, "**Ye are not** of the world" (Jno. 15:19)—"the world" of which Scripture proclaims: "The **WHOLE** world lieth in the evil one" (1 Jno. 5:19, Am.V.)—"the world" which Scripture designates as "This **present** evil world" (Gal. 1:4, 10)—"the world" which Scripture charges with having Satan for its god—"The god of **this world** hath blinded the minds of them which believe not" (2 Cor. 4:4).

Satan claimed that "the world" was under his leadership and Jesus confirmed it (Lu. 4:1-13; Jno. 14:30; 1 Jno. 3:8). If you have not received Jesus Christ as your Saviour, Scripture declares that you are in "the world" and of "the world," that Satan is your "god" and that you are "the enemy of God." If you are not doing what God wants you to do, you are certainly doing what the devil wants you to do. "Ye cannot serve God and mammon." "He that is not with me is against me" (Matt. 6:24; 12:30). If you are serving the devil, then you worship the devil—he is your "god." Hence, Scripture refers to Satan as the "god of this world"—"this present evil world." And he truly is, for "the world" serves and therefore, worships Satan. Scripture correctly teaches that if you haven't taken Jesus Christ as your Saviour, that Satan is your "god." "All that is in the world" is of the evil one (1 Jno. 2:16-17; 5:19). Not only this class of mankind, but all "the things that are in the world" belong to Satan and his system. They must "pass away," for they are opposed to God and His moral government. "The world" hates "the child of God" (Jno. 15:19). "The world" hates Christ (Jno. 15:18). "The world" hates God (1 Jno. 2:22-23). "The world **heareth**" antichrist (1 Jno. 4:1-5), and refuses to listen to Christ's "Follow me."

"The world" is composed of all unbelievers (or unregenerated persons) and they are under the wrath of God (Jno. 3:36; Mk. 16:16). Scripture sets forth that all that they are and do is displeasing to God, even tho' their unbelief and enmity against God are wrapped about by a screen of scholarship, morality, religion, respectability or good works. "He that believeth not the Son . . . the wrath of God abideth on him" (Jno. 3:36). "Without faith it is **IMPOSSIBLE** to please" God. There is no use for you to claim that you worship or serve God or that you are "just as good as anybody" if you reject God's Son and refuse to believe in Him and take Him for your Saviour. Scripture charges you with belonging to

"the world," whose "god" is Satan, and which is rebelling against God's program to place the government of the world back under the direct government of God, where holiness and righteousness may be maintained. "The world" is not concerned about God's program, but is concerned about its stocks, bonds, gold, greed, lusts, pleasures, man-made social programs and pre-eminences. Jesus said, "The world . . . I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil" (Jno. 7:7). "The earth also and **the works that are therein** shall be burned up." Who says so? God says so! (2 Pet. 3:10).

After the dispersion of the nations ("the world"), God "gave them up" and "called" the Jew, that they might be "a peculiar treasure unto (God) . . . an holy nation" (Ex. 19:5-6). God separated them from "the world" (Egypt), first by the "blood" line (Ex. 11-12), then by the Red Sea, then by the wilderness and then by ordinances of cleanliness and righteousness. Surrounded by idolatrous, adulterous, sinful nations on every hand, the Jew was called out to a separated, holy life, "as He which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy **IN ALL** manner of living." "Ye shall be holy; for I the Lord your God am holy" (1 Pet. 1:15, Am.V.; Lev. 19:2. A holy Father should have and wants a holy child). They were not allowed to do the things that the ungodly Egyptians or the Canaanites did. The Christians are a called out people, (The Greek for "church" means "the called-out ones"—Ekklesia). "Come out from among them ("this present evil world") and be ye separate" (2 Cor. 6:17). The Christian is not allowed to do the things "the world" does, for to participate in the things of "the world" is rebellion against God's program of redemption and enmity against God. The Christians are called to separate themselves from God's enemies that they may be "a royal priesthood, a holy nation, **A PEOPLE FOR GOD'S OWN POSSESSION**, that ye may show forth the excellencies of Him who called you" (1 Pet. 2:9, Am.V.). Why should anyone love "the world" when God is calling him for His "**own possession**," "to an inheritance incorruptible, and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reserved in heaven for you?" (1 Pet. 1:4).

"Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father **is not** in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world" (1 Jno. 2:15-16).

"All that is in the world . . . is not of the Father"—is not of God. This is a broad and inclusive statement, yet it is God's viewpoint and His Word. If you rebel against His statement, then talk it over with Him. If you will line up your life with God and His plan and purpose for the earth, you will probably have to forsake much that you now indulge in and defend, and that is enmity both to God and to His purpose for man.

The "popular" preacher, who "whoops her up" for all the popular sports of the day; who condones or sanctions dancing, the theater, movies, and **the things of "the world;"** who is playing to the galleries for the approval and support of "the world" and who perverts and makes light of what the Bible has to say about "hell," "fire" and "brimstone," is certainly an enemy of God, to the extent to which he does this. Who says so? God says so! "Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father **is not** in Him. For all that is in the world . . . is not of the Father" (1 Jno. 2:15-16) "**Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God**" (Jas. 4:4).

The newspaper that publishes articles that make light of God; that encourage doctrines that oppose the Bible; that take a slap at a clean, righteous life, and refer to godly men and women as "prudes" or "sissy-bills", etc.; that encourage loose living and sensuality; that oppose the punishment of the wicked by appealing to morbid sentimentality, are all enemies of God, His kingdom and the good of mankind to just the extent they do these things. This practice lowers the moral standard of young men and women. It results in lawlessness, immorality and ruined lives. It defeats the enforcement of law and the maintenance of good government. Isn't a newspaper that follows this practice a poor thing to have in your home?

When Jesus was about to leave this world, He prayed for his disciples: "I pray not that thou shouldest take them from the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil one" (Jno. 17:15, Am.V.). The "child of God" is surrounded by "the world" system. God is obscured. The consciences of many are seared or dead. Sin, gilded and refined, as it were, has become so common, so subtle and fascinating that it blinds the natural mind to its uncleanness and to God's viewpoint of what constitutes holiness. When Daniel, the mighty man of God, was brought into the light of God's holiness, he was forced to exclaim, "My comeliness was turned in me into **corruption**" (Dan. 10:8). Wouldn't your boasted comeliness very soon turn into corruption if every sin of your life had to pass in review before God in the light of His holiness? "All our righteousnesses are as filthy rags" (Isa. 64:6). "Prepare to meet thy God." "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved." "He that believeth not shall be damned."

"All that is in the world" is summed up under three general heads: (1) "The lust of the flesh"; (2) "The lust of the eyes" and (3) "The pride of life." This is the trinity of evil avenues by which "the world" manifests its enmity against God and His plan of redeeming the earth to righteousness. According to Scripture, everything that "the world" has produced, promotes or participates in, can be lined up under one of these three heads.

(1) "THE LUST OF THE FLESH:"

WAR—that thing in human hearts which causes men to lust for the blood of their fellowmen. War is a product of "the world" system which governs the earth contrary to the laws of heaven. When the "kingdoms of the world" are destroyed and the Lord sets up His kingdom, men will learn war no more (Rev. 11:15; Mic. 4:1-8). The prophecies reveal that as long as the world system exists, there will be wars and desolations (Dan. 9:26 with Matt. 24:4-14). So it is useless to talk of no more war until "the world" system ends and the millennium is ushered in. Six thousand years of human history are simply the recitation of a practically continuous condition of war and bloodshed. History has confirmed the prophecies made centuries ago, that wars will continue until the end of the present world system. The prophecies set forth that the most fearful wars will yet occur **in the future**, as the world system nears its awful end (Matt. 24:3-21). "Ye shall hear of wars and rumors of wars: **see that ye be not troubled**: for all these things **must** come to pass." Some militant pacifists would do well to heed this command of God's, "see that ye be not troubled." Yet, in the face of history, prophecy and God's command, some men and some church denominations are exceedingly "troubled" and talk of doing away with war and refusing to fight for their country. They allege in substance, that God doesn't know what He is talking about when He says, that "wars and rumors of wars

... **must** come to pass." Are such men familiar with history, the nature of man and the commands and prophecies of God?

Christ said, "I came not to send peace, but a **sword**" (Matt. 10:34). That **sword** was unsheathed at Eden, when rebellion against God's government entered the world. "So he drove out the man: and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden cherubim, and a **flaming sword** which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life" (Gen. 3:24). That **sword** is to be wielded against "the world" system which is the enemy of God and it will never be permanently sheathed until the world-system is done away and Christ is crowned King. Read the book of Joshua, which recites the battles of the Lord against the nations, which were enemies of God. Note in 5:13-15, that the "captain of the host of the Lord" has "his sword drawn in his hand." Read Judges 6-8. Here we find Gideon fighting against the enemies of the kingdom and note "The sword of the Lord, and of Gideon." Read Rev. 19:11-21. Here you find the King of kings riding forth to do final battle against the enemies of God. Note that "out of His mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations." The enemy must be destroyed, then "peace" which Christ purposes to accomplish will be a reality. Let us not beat our swords into plowshares until God establishes the Millennium. Neither Christ nor the Christian wants war. Its horrors are incalculable. Yet, in view of past history, present prospects and the prophecies, **WE KNOW WE ARE GOING TO HAVE WAR**. Let us avoid it as much as possible, yet **be prepared**. †Away with this human program that would out-run God's program. It's a deception. Executed, it will make us an easy prey for plunder and destruction. See pp. 75-78.

As this book is in final preparation for the press we read that the "Locarno Pacts" are being signed. It's heralded as a "New Era Among Nations." It appears to be simply a phase of the federation of the nations. Time will disclose that the prophecies of God are true, and that when they "shall say, Peace and safety: then sudden destruction cometh upon them." Let's have peace as much as possible and practical, but let's not be blind to the signs of the times and to their portent.

When Paul, in prophecy unfolds conditions that shall exist at the time of "the day of the Lord," He discloses that when false teachers and leaders "shall say, Peace and safety: then sudden destruction cometh upon them" (1 Thes. 5; 2 Thes. 2). Men, who are familiar with their Bibles are quite well agreed that "the end of the world" and "the day of the Lord" are imminent. And true to prophecy, made centuries ago, we find false teachers crying "Peace" when there is no peace, nothing but destruction awaiting an ungodly world, that will not have Christ to rule over them. Time will disclose that those who are now crying "Peace and safety" are false teachers, and that the Bible is the Word of God, and that wars and destruction await "the world." How do you know? God says so. "The Word of our God shall stand forever."

MODERN BUSINESS:

"Commerce has become a breaker of the entire decalogue. Commerce under Satan has become a Godless thing—a despiser of all restraint, divine and natural, and is rapidly growing Satanic in its aims and ends. . . . Gain, and the getting of gain, have become the paramount object." —Richard Hayes McCartney.

† In 1918 and 1919 two editions of a pamphlet were printed entitled "World Reconstruction and Permanent Peace." The author of that pamphlet is the author of the book which you are now reading. At that time he had but little light on the prophecies of God. As a result, the "World Reconstruction" booklet presents a man-made Millennium instead of the Kingdom Age of God.

If all the business firms in the world, which this day gave their customers short weights or short measures, or which misrepresented their goods or propositions, or exacted ungodly profits or otherwise deceived or defrauded their customers, either as a whole or in part, were forced to go out of business tomorrow, how many of these places would be open for business in the morning? All crooked business is of "the world" system that Scripture refers to as being the enemy of God. The awful deeds of human devils at Herrin, Illinois during the miner's strike, were products of "the world." The Harry Sinclair-Senator Fall oil scandal is simply "the world" in action. Most business men, who are masters of "the world" system, live in fine palaces and feast in luxury while those they grind under their heels live in comparative squalor and sorrow—do they not? "All that is in the world" is not of God. Jesus said, "The world . . . I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil" (Jno. 7:7). A system that produces present curses is certainly not that which is referred to in Scripture as "the kingdom of heaven." When the kingdom is set up, God strikes in awful judgment against the present world's system of business and destroys it—"this present evil world."

"And he cried mightily with a strong voice, saying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul spirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird. . . .

Therefore shall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and she shall be utterly burned with fire: for strong is the Lord God who judgeth her. . . .

And the merchants of the earth shall weep and mourn over her; for no man buyeth their merchandise any more:

The merchandise of gold, and silver, and precious stones, and of pearls, and fine linen, and purple, and silk, and scarlet, and all thyine wood, and all manner vessels of ivory, and all manner vessels of most precious wood, and of brass, and iron, and marble,

And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men.

And the fruits that thy soul lusted after are departed from thee, and all things which were dainty and goodly are departed from thee, and thou shalt find them no more at all.

The merchants of these things, which were made rich by her, shall stand afar off for the fear of her torment, weeping and wailing,

And saying, Alas, alas, that great city, that was clothed in fine linen, and purple, and scarlet, and decked with gold, and precious stones, and pearls!

For in one hour so great riches is come to nought. And every ship-master, and all the company in ships, and sailors, and as many as trade by sea, stood afar off,

And cried when they saw the smoke of her burning, saying, What city is like unto this great city!

And they cast dust on their heads, and cried, weeping and wailing, saying, Alas, alas, that great city, wherein were made rich all that had ships in the sea by reason of her costliness! for in one hour is she made desolate.

Rejoice over her, thou heaven, and ye holy apostles and prophets; for God hath avenged you on her.

And a mighty angel took up a stone like a great millstone, and cast it into the sea, saying, Thus with violence shall that great city Babylon be thrown down, and shall be found no more at all" (Rev. 18:2-21).

In Scripture, Babylon stands for the divided cities of sin and confusion, as opposed to the united city of God and righteousness, the new Jerusalem.

ADULTERY. This sin so engulfed the ante-diluvian world that "every imagination of the thoughts of (man's) heart was only evil continually" (Gen. 6:1-5). And **God's Son disclosed that adultery would AGAIN abound at the close of this age** (Bible scholars agree that the age is now closing), and that God would again destroy the ungodly world, with fearful judgments as set forth in Revelation.

"But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart.

And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.

And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell" (Matt. 5:28-30).

If all the living men and women, who have committed physical or mental adultery in some form at some time in their lives had to be electrocuted before morning, how many of them would live to see tomorrow's sun? Adultery is a product of "the world," and when the King of kings puts all enemies under His feet, adultery will be banished forever from the face of the earth. It is enmity against the holy government of God. "This present evil world."

THE MODERN DANCE. Isn't it based on a sex attraction, fostered by the lustful contact and position of the male and female bodies?

"If one were to enter a New York ballroom today for the first time after ten years absence he would be struck dumb with disgust and astonishment at the degeneration which has come to pass" (Rabbi Wise of New York, in Literary Digest, p. 210; 1-31-14).

"Dancing today, even among our so-called 'best people' is indecent . . . Nowhere in our social life today is there such evidence of degeneracy as on the dance floor . . . the dressing immodest, and the dances brutally sexual" (Dr. John Hayes Holmes, Unity, p. 21; 9-23-20).

Do you think God's Son would defend the round dance, much less your modern "jazz," "bunny hug," "fox trot," "Charleston," etc.? If every man or woman who has danced round dances and yet has never committed any form of physical or mental adultery with any of their partners was obliged to go to hell tomorrow—hell wouldn't be full of folks, would it?

Sin has its kindergarten stages. Are not many "folk" and aesthetic dances simply the kindergarten phase of that type of dancing which will be banished from God's presence, when the King reigns in righteousness? You say this is narrow? God confirms that the way which leads to life eternal is narrow and if you are broader than the narrow way, you are on the way to hell (Matt. 7:13-14). See pages 7-16 for the ground and means of salvation. Scripture discloses that God is going to destroy and banish from His presence, the entire present world-system (Matt. 24:4-14). "Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of God" (Jas. 4:4). "Take heed, that no man deceive you"—"this present evil world."

A modernist Sunday School teacher informed his class, in substance, that any one who claimed that the present naked-leg-exposing method of dress now used by some women, or the wiggling, close embracing method of dancing, promoted lust and adultery, had a "dirty mind." The writer was once in a Sunday School class of some three hundred men being taught

by that noble man of God, Rev. T. C. Horton of Los Angeles. Horton asked for every man who had danced at some time in his life to raise his hand. Nearly every hand went up. Then he asked that every man, who had never danced with anything but a pure mind to raise his hand. Not a hand was raised in that great audience of some two-hundred ninety-nine of as fine men as ever sat in a Sunday School class. They stood consciously guilty "before God." Now, the formerly mentioned "modernist" Sunday School teacher claims, in effect, that they were "dirty minded," while his own "modern mind" was untainted by the dust of lust by such things. Our belief is that if his thoughts could have been placed on a screen, that he would have taken a blue ribbon prize in a show of "dirty" minds.

When the accusers of the woman taken in adultery took her before Christ to be stoned to death for her sin, Jesus invited any of her accusers who were without sin to cast the first stone. Not a stone was cast. "One by one" they slunk away until her last accuser was gone (Jno. 8:1-11). God almighty charges that "the heart (of man) is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked" (Jer. 17:9), and that "the imagination of man's heart is evil **from his youth**" (Gen. 8:21). Man is "born in sins" (Jno. 9:34; Ps. 51:5). "All our righteousnesses are as filthy rags" (Isa. 64:6). "All have sinned." When the mighty Daniel was made to stand in God's holy presence, he confessed, "my comeliness was turned in me into corruption" (Dan. 10:8). When Isaiah, the saint of God, proclaimed the truths of God, he confessed, "We are all as an unclean thing" (Isa. 64:6).

A certain man has a social service institution for boys. He claims there is nothing wrong on the inside with the boy. He claims that sin and wreckage to the boy's life comes from his environment. This man is "whooping her up," taking boys into his institution and giving them an ideal environment and thus saving and making them. This is all very good as far as it goes. But Adam had perfect environment, yet he sinned and fell fearfully. What all boys need is a Saviour and a "new nature." All boys are "born in sin" and are evil from their youth up. The natural man is "enmity against God" (Rom. 8:7), "earthly, sensual, devilish" (Jas. 3:15). Who says so? God says so. Environment may suppress this inborn sin, but it will never cure it. The boy needs to be "born again," and needs Jesus Christ to deliver him from the power and habit of sin. "He is able to keep you from falling" (Jude 24), and "will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able" to bear (1 Cor. 10:13). Isn't this man's modernistic institution substituting social service for salvation? "Take heed that no man deceive you" (Matt. 24:4). "**This present evil world.**" The "things of the world" are covered with a cloak of virtue, calculated to deceive, yet God says they are evil: "**This present evil world.**" "I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil."

(2) "THE LUST OF THE EYES"—MOVIES. Are not the modern movies a gallery of shame and a stream of pollution? If you want to know what the movie morals are, just watch the scandal columns of the newspapers for three years and see how many of the leading lights of the movie world decorate its columns. "The lust of the eyes" of "the world" feasts on the productions of this kind of people—does it not? Concerning the movies, the following has been said: "The most insidious suggestions of evil in the land today."—A Pinkerton detective. "In every performance some ignoble suggestion."—Dr. Winfield Hall, a leading authority on social ethics. "The worst said has not been strong

enough.”—Judge Landis of the United States District Court.—(The Moody Monthly, May, 1923).

NEWSPAPERS AND MAGAZINES. The eyes of “the world” are ever on the red headlines and the deeds of the “red light” and kindred districts. Not one in a dozen of them has ever read the Word of God thru. Will not the majority of modern newspapers publish all manner of attacks against the Bible, yet seldom publish a good defense of or presentation of its teachings? Don’t their Sunday editions have a multitude of pages setting forth the things of “the world,” yet precious little bearing on God or His proposed kingdom and isn’t much of that little an emasculation of the Word of God and its teaching? Are not their pages conducted as tho God and His Word were of about the least consequence of anything in existence? The name of God was never mentioned in the peace treaty that theoretically ended the present world war. Yet the Bible sets forth that wars will never cease until God ushers in the Kingdom Age. How many peace treaties and newspaper sheets would be allowed to enter a “kingdom of heaven?”

Couldn’t the newspaper and magazine, under right leadership, be made one of the most effective weapons for God and the kingdom that He is going to set up on this earth? The Bible, which sets forth this kingdom program, is practically a closed book to “the world.” Its pages are largely untouched by its fingers.

DRESS. A few years ago the short, tight dress, which permitted naked limb and form exposures, and the painted face were the marks of the harlot, were they not? What are they the marks of now? Hasn’t corruption gotten to the place where, if a woman wants to win a “beauty contest,” she must practically expose her naked body to the world? “The world” says it’s healthy for them, yet it’s far more apt to be “hell” for them.

Would God’s Son commend the modern attire of girls and the nearly nude bodies of young men as they play their athletic games and loll and mentally lust on the bathing beaches?

Paris has the reputation of being one of the wickedest cities in the world. Wicked cities are so because of evil people in them. Is the devil designing the dresses for your daughters? How many of these he-devil designers and women of “the world,” who wear these suggestive dresses, will ever enter the celestial city where righteousness and true holiness reign? Don’t most of them care as little about God, His Word and His house of worship as the pagans do? A woman detective says, “There is too much lure in the way women dress nowadays. **Immodesty is prevalent** in many affected styles” (The New York Sun, reprinted by Kansas City Star, Nov. 17, 1924).

“Doctor Yamei Kim, of the Pei-yang Woman’s Medical School in China . . . says: ‘In big social gatherings in America and Europe I see many ladies wearing “fast” dress. These ladies are vainly trying to show off their physical beauty, or suggest that they have it. It would be impossible for an Eastern woman of fine taste to wear the dress I often see in America and Europe.’ Dr. Winfield Scott Hall, a well-known Chicago physician, says . . . ‘Girls in their daily work, as well as women on the ballroom floor have squelched their consciences and modesty to adopt the sensuous dress, with the result that immorality exists where otherwise there would have been decency and cleanliness’” (Horsch’s “Modern Religious Liberalism”).

“Roger Babson, the statistician, stated that he attended a meeting of the manufacturers of women’s clothing at one time, and he could not

but note how some of the most sensual and lewdest of men were the ones who were chosen to be a committee who should decide what the fashions should be for the coming season. He noticed how heavily they were drinking, and how they were joking over their task. He published a strong protest against men such as these setting the fashions for the women of our land. It is no wonder that **the fashions of today are so glaringly immodest**. A friend sends us two clippings showing that even the Roman Catholic priests are asking the women to cease to show bare arms." Isn't this age of modernism getting to be the age of the armless waist, the skirtless dress and the invisible stocking? These he-devil designers that Babson refers to are "enemies of God." They promote lust and adultery, and destroy and damn human lives. Are they not "an abomination unto God?"

The shores of time are strewn with the wrecked lives of girls and women, who have indecently exposed their bodies to the lustful gaze of men, who have therefore chosen them for their victims. One year it's **the fashion** to expose the female limbs; the next year it is likely to be the fashion to so dress as to expose or emphasize the female hips; and the next year it's apt to be the fashion to expose the female breast. God has written that "the imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth" (Gen. 8:21). "But I say unto you, That whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart" (Matt. 5:28). No wonder, God in Scripture, charges "the world" with being "this present evil world." Scripture further charges that "Satan . . . deceiveth the whole world" (Rev. 12:9). "The world" demands that it be allowed to continue headlong in its present evil career. **It will end as Scripture has revealed, by iniquity abounding and the earth becoming "corrupt before God."** Then God strikes "the world" with fearful judgments (Matt. 24:12, 29-30, 37-39, with Gen. 6:5-13). In those days, they won't be pointing the finger of scorn at the man of God, saying "preacher," "old fogey," "sissy-bill," "ignoramus," "bigot," "fanatic." They will be crying for the rocks and the mountains to cover them and hide them from an outraged, avenging God. "This present evil world." Who says this present "world" is evil? God says so! "Who gave himself for our sins, that he might deliver us from **this present evil world**, according to the will of God and our Father" (Gal. 1:4).

"The woman shall not wear that which pertaineth unto a man, neither shall a man put on a woman's garment; for all that do so are **abomination** unto the Lord thy God" (Deut. 22:5). He is "the same yesterday, and today, and forever." "Choose you this day whom ye will serve." "Ye cannot serve God and mammon."

(3) **"THE PRIDE (OR VAIN GLORY) OF LIFE."** When Christ came, He announced that the "kingdom of heaven (was) at hand." And He didn't go to the colleges and universities nor to the "scientists" and "scholars" to get people to become members of or to proclaim His kingdom. Neither will He, when He comes again to set up the kingdom. He is "the same yesterday, and today, and forever" (Heb. 13:8). "Not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called" (1 Cor. 1:26). It has been the common practice all thru the past ages for the majority of "wise men after the flesh" to turn their backs on God and His Word. "Knowledge puffeth up." No man knows anything as he ought to know it. Solomon was the wisest man the world has ever known, yet he was foolish enough to ruin the latter part of his life. God never has called the puffed up ones. They are enemies of God.

The Scribes and the Pharisees were the "scholars" of their day, yet "Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools." They read the Scriptures some and talked glibly about God and the law and righteousness. They were the "modernists" of their day, whom Christ charged with having made void the Word of God by **their** traditions and with having the devil as their father (Mk. 7:13; Jno. 8:44). To Christ, who was God incarnate, and therefore knew all things, the Bible was the Word of God and was the Scripture which "cannot be broken" (Jno. 10:35). To these "wise men after the flesh," it was of **less value** than their own traditions. So, today we have the counterpart of the old scribe and Pharisee in some of our "modernist" college, seminary and university "scientists," "scholars," "evolutionists" etc. **TODAY THEY ARE DOING MORE TO DESTROY CHRISTIANITY AND FAITH IN GOD'S WORD AND, THEREFORE, CIVILIZATION THAN ANY OTHER SINGLE AGENCY**, just as the scribes and Pharisees did in Christ's day. They are making void the Word of God by **THEIR OWN** traditions and tales. According to the judgment of "the world," they are "wise men after the flesh"; yet, when weighed in God's scale of balances they are "fools" and "found wanting." "The wisdom of **THIS WORLD** is **FOOLISHNESS** with God." Who says so? God says so (1Cor. 3:19). You talk God's statements over with Him.

A man who really has a good mind realizes that he knows nothing of value, apart from God. He is not prating around about how full his head is of education and of wonderful "scientific" knowledge, to which he assumes that the average man is an entire stranger. "The wise men after the flesh" have always, eventually, led every nation in "the world" to ruin. They are doing the same now. Every nation that forgets God is to be cast into hell (Ps. 9:17). What reason have you to believe that any one who makes void the Word of God by the traditions of men will ever guide any nation to success or any individual to heaven?

Jesus arraigned the scribe and Pharisee (modernists and heretics), who made void the word of God by their own traditions and tales, with this language:

"All their works they do for to be seen of men . . . (they) love . . . the chief seats in the synagogues (house of learning) . . . (they love) to be called of men, Rabbi" or teacher ("scholar"). . . . But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! (modernists) for **ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in. . . . Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves. . . . Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the law, judgment, mercy, and faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. . . . Ye blind guides, which **strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel. . . . Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men's bones, and of all uncleanness. Even so ye also outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity. . . . Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?"** (Matt. 23).**

Yes, these are the words of the gentle Jesus, but they are judgment words. They are addressed to the religious leaders and scholars of Christ's day, who had insidiously worked their way into the prominent

places in religious and educational life and were making void the Word of God by their traditions and myths, and leading their followers away from God, away from the Bible and away from Christ. Christ condemns them using fearful language. The "world" of Christ's day pointed with pride and approval to these deceivers and enemies of the cross, while they abused and persecuted God's Son, rejected His Word, and derided His little band of faithful followers. It is the same old world and about its same old practices.

When Christ comes back to set up the kingdom and execute judgment on all them "that know not God and obey not the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ" (2 Thess. 1:8), He will arraign the "wise men after the flesh" in exactly the same way that He did when here (See Matt. 23), for He is "the same yesterday, and today, and forever."

There are those who revel in their own words, yet revile God's Word. They are of "the world" which is the enemy of God and His Word. "All that is in the world . . . is not of the Father"—God. "WHOSOEVER therefore will be a friend of the world is the **enemy** of God." Are you a friend of any or all of these things which are "in the world?" If so, God charges you in this Scripture with being "the enemy of God." If you have good judgment, you will at once cease your friendship for the world, won't you? "Love not the world, **NEITHER THE THINGS THAT ARE IN THE WORLD**" (1 Jno. 2:15).

There are those who say, "I can't give up the things of the world." "What shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?" (Mk. 8:36). God is a loving Father and wants the child's cup of joy not only to be full but running over. God desires to eliminate only those things from the life which work harm. "Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world," for "the world is the enemy of God" and of Christ who died to save you. Now if you can love God's enemy and the things of God's enemy and can't love God nor the things of God, then you will have to go to hell where all of God's enemies go. "Love not the world, **neither the things that** are in the world" for "the world is the enemy of God." Who says so? **God says so!** "Pure religion and undefiled before God and the Father is this . . . to keep (**oneself**) **UNSPOTTED FROM** the world" (Jas. 1:27).

The church, instead of keeping itself unspotted from "the world," is mingling with "the world." An internationally known Methodist divine recently said in Chicago, that he did not believe half of the present members of the church had ever known Jesus Christ, as Saviour, or God by regeneration. And since these "worldly" church members are usually not Christians but enemies of God, you can expect them and such leaders as they in their majority may choose to elect, to be in varying degrees enemies of Jesus Christ and the Bible. Nineteen hundred years ago God prophesied thru His holy Word that in "the last days," "grievous wolves" would enter the flock (church) and destroy its members. "For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock" (Acts 20:29). True to prophecy, "the last days" and "grievous wolves" in the form of the modernist, evolutionist, etc. are both here at the same time. They are intrenched within the walls of the church just as the Pharisees were and are making void the Word of God by their own traditions. They are substituting "myths" and "tales" for the established facts of the Bible. They are preaching "**another gospel,**" and thus wrecking and destroying the church **from the inside**. What is left is too frequently a great worldly church with only a minority of its members regenerated or real Christians. The

visible church is being devil-looted, not evolved. The preachers of **"another gospel"** are under the curse of God. "As we said before, so say I now again, If any man preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received, let him be accursed" (Gal. 1:9).

God prohibits His "born again" children from mingling with "the world." "Come out from among them, and be ye separate" (2 Cor. 6:17). "Be ye holy; for I am holy" (1 Pet. 1:16). "Ye must be born again" (Jno. 3:7). "Up, sanctify the people, and say, Sanctify yourselves against tomorrow: for thus saith the Lord God of Israel, **There is an accursed thing in the midst of thee, O Israel; thou canst not stand before thine enemies, until ye take away the accursed thing from among you**" (Josh. 7:13).

STUDIES: It will be profitable, indeed, for the student to study the Bible and these "Glimpses of Bible Climaxes" until he has thoroughly in mind the great climaxes that God is going to accomplish in redemption; that he be able to see that God's program for this earth has to do with the elimination of all ungodliness and unrighteousness and the setting up of a kingdom **on this earth**, wherein dwelleth righteousness and true holiness. Carefully investigate what the Scripture has to say about "the world" and "the things that are in the world" as they are opposed to and at enmity against God in this program of redemption.

Satan is the "god of this world." "The world's" chief objects of hatred are "the Jew" and "the church." Both "the Jew" and "the church" are instruments in God's hands in setting up the Kingdom. See pages 88-9. When the kingdom is set up, Satan's rule over "the world" will be brought to an end by judgments. Therefore, it is easy to see why "the world," whose god is Satan, hates "the Jew" and "the church."

In the days preceding the judgment of the flood, the two seeds, "the sons of God" and of "the world" mingled. The result was that the earth became corrupt before God. "As the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be." Bible students generally admit that the end of the age is at hand, and again we find the earth corrupting itself before God. "The church" has so mingled with "the world," that in many if not in most instances, you will find little or no difference between the church member and a person of "the world." And this worldly church, led by so-called modernists (yet they are older than the Pharisee) attacks the Word of God and the children of God, and is therefore an enemy of God and of the best interests of humanity.

See Matt. 13: 38-40; 18:7; 24:3 (the end of "the world" of mankind that is opposed to God); Mk. 16:15; Lu. 4:5; 16:8; Jno. 1:29; 3:16-17; 4:42; 6:51; 8:12, 23; 12:31; 15:19; Jno. 16:8 (God will reprove the world of sin. Why? Because it is a rebel against God); Jno. 17:6-26; Acts 17:31; Rom. 3:19; 5:12-19; 12:2; 1 Cor. 3:18-19; 11:32; 2 Cor. 5:19; Gal. 1:4; 6:14; Eph. 2:2; 6:12; Philip. 2:15; Col. 2:20; 1 Tim. 1:15; 2 Tim. 4:10; Titus 2:12-14; Heb. 11:7, 38; 2 Pet. 1:4; 1 Jno. 3:1; 4:4-6; 5:4-5; 2 Jno. 7. See Rev. 3:10; 11:15; 17 and notice what fearful judgments finally fall on "the world's" merchandise and commerce.

Many readers will find it profitable to carefully review this book even seven times, looking up and prayerfully studying the Scripture references. "Search the Scriptures."

GOD'S LOVE FOR HIS ENEMY, "THE WORLD"

"For God **SO LOVED** the world, that he **GAVE** his only begotten SON: that **WHO-SOEVER BELIEVETH** in him **SHOULD NOT PERISH**, but **have EVERLASTING LIFE**. For God **sent not** his Son into the world to **condemn the world**; but that **the world THROUGH HIM might be SAVED**" (Jno. 3:16-17).

"It is Finished"



"Having made peace through the Blood of His Cross"

Jno. 19:30; Col. 1:20

Section 8

THE UNMASKING OF MODERNISM

or

"A falling away first," in the church, precedes Christ's "coming"
(2 Thes. 2:1-5)

"Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him,

"2. That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand.

"3. Let no man deceive you by any means: for **that day shall not come**, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition;

"4. Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.

"5. Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things?"

As we have seen, this "falling away" is one of the signs of the end of the Age and it refers to the prophesied apostasy in the church at "the end of the world." Re-reading page 56 will prepare you better for the following section of this book.

A prominent modernist says "ours is a time of religious confusion and upheaval." The "falling away" is in full swing, as this modernist testifies. Liberalism, rationalism, modernism or evolution (name it what you will) and Christianity of the Bible type are two different things, as the modernists admit.

"Professor Gerald Birney Smith, of the University of Chicago, a prominent liberalistic leader, editor of 'The Journal of Religion,' shows in a review that in the well known book 'Christianity and Liberalism,' by Professor J. Gresham Machen, it is claimed that modernism 'is not Christianity at all,' and that 'it is fundamentally different from Christianity.' Then Professor Smith makes this remarkable admission: 'If this can be made out, the absurdity of permitting liberals to go on claiming the name of Christianity (and likewise claiming the right to remain in an evangelical church) is apparent.' The fact is that this can indeed be made out. The outspokenly liberalistic editor of 'The Christian Century,' says frankly that 'Christianity according to fundamentalism is one religion and Christianity according to modernism another.' There can be no doubt but that other fair-minded modernists will admit the rightfulness of Professor Machen's claim that liberalism is fundamentally different from Christianity and is not Christianity at all. In fact, the most advanced modernists assert that the Gospels are unreliable and we do not know what Christ taught or what Christianity really is. That the difference between modernism and historical Christianity is chasm-deep, no serious thinker will deny. All this means, in the language of Professor Smith, that it is an absurdity to say that modernism is Christianity." *

Modernism claims to have as its basis a right "**social**" relationship to man. Christianity is based on a right "**soul**" relationship to God. The one has to do with **reformation**, the other with **regeneration**. The one is a **human effort** at redemption, the other a **Divine**. The

* John Horsch in "Modern Religious Liberalism," pages 16-17.

essential difference is that the **one fails**, while **the other saves**. The one has to do with **the things of time**, the other with **the things of time and of eternity**.

Modernist college professors, who "educate" American sons and daughters, are teaching such things as the following:

"Professor Josiah Royce, of Harvard University, taught that Christianity is simply a sentiment of loyalty. Professor Edward Scribner Ames says, 'Religion is an extraordinary enthusiasm for a cause.' Professor Roy Wood Sellars, of the University of Michigan, gives this definition: 'Religion is loyalty to the values of life.' †

A number of liberalistic, theological writers have come forward with the assertion that Robert G. Ingersoll, since he advocated moral betterment and reform, was mistaken in his own opinion of himself as concerns his religious position and his relationship to Christianity. Among those who have expressed themselves on this point is Dean Shailer Mathews, of the theological department of the University of Chicago, who remarks in a magazine article that the times are past when a man like Ingersoll can be regarded as a veritable anti-Christ. President Faunce of Brown University, in an article on 'Religious Advance in Fifty Years,' says, the attacks of Robert Ingersoll 'which made our fathers shiver and quake' would today be out of date and have no such effect." ‡

Any ten-year-old boy who lived during the days of Robert G. Ingersoll knew that Ingersoll was notoriously against Jesus Christ. He was therefore, an anti-Christ and Jesus Christ Himself says so: "He that is not with me is against me" (Matt. 12:30). Now, it becomes a very pertinent question as to what class these men should be assigned, who are now defending the anti-Christ, Bob Ingersoll.

"What is the effect of the new theology methods upon our theological seminaries?" asks Dr. Augustus Hopkins Strong. He answers: 'The effect (of modernism) is to deprive the Gospel message of all definiteness and to make professors and students disseminators of doubts. The theological seminaries of almost all of our denominations are becoming so infected with this grievous error, that they are not so much organs of Christ as they are organs of antichrist.'" §

"'I worship God through man,' says Professor William A. McKeever, of the University of Kansas. 'To know God is first to know Man and to know Man is to worship the divinity in him. Man is my best expression of Deity, and so I bow reverently at this shrine.'"* In other words doesn't McKeever say that he, himself, is divine in the same sense in which Jesus Christ was Divine? Talk about the blasphemy of the modernist; isn't this it? Would a University that houses men who teach such devil doctrines as this be a good or safe place to send your son or daughter to be "educated"? What good would it do your son to become "educated" and even induced to quit smoking cigarettes, if his faith is destroyed in Jesus Christ, as a Divine Redeemer, and his soul lost thereby? Christianity is not fundamentally a code of morals and "good works," desirable as these things are. It is a new or regenerated life in Christ Jesus (Jno. 3:3-8). And the ultimate end of this new life, is a life like the life of Christ's (Philip. 3:20-21; Gal. 4:19). **It is a work of divine grace** (Philip. 2:13).

"'Let us not deceive ourselves,' says Professor John Gresham Machen, of Princeton Theological Seminary, 'the Bible is at the founda-

† John Horsch in "Modern Religious Liberalism," page 34. ‡ Page 9. § Page 247.

* Page 69.

tion of the church. Undermine that foundation, and the church will fall. It will fall and great will be the fall of it.' " †

The foundation of the church is being undermined by modernism. This is and will result in "the falling away" from God, the Bible, law and government. It is resulting and will result in a reign of lust and lawlessness, which will ultimately wreck all nations and ruin the world, **as God has clearly revealed thru the prophets.**

George Burnham Foster (Chicago University) has asserted, "the sacred Book was found a human book" and "had no right to rule over man." † (He teaches that man rules over God.) Translated and applied, Foster's statement is, "God's law, 'Thou shalt not kill' has no right to restrain man." Recently Loeb and Leopold, two young men of wealthy families, whose minds and morals were being trained at Chicago University, killed young Franks in Chicago. The murder was premeditated and one of the most devilish, brutal and degenerate crimes of all times. Didn't they justify their crime with this kind of Chicago University, satanic sophistry, "the sacred Book . . . had no right to rule over man?"

Dr. Hargett, pastor of the Grand Avenue Methodist Episcopal church of Kansas City, Mo. urged hanging for these murderers of Robert Franks and said: "Godless college professors who teach atheistic theories and hypotheses and scoff at the Bible and Christian teachings are turning out young men and women like the murderers of Robert Franks. It is far more important to educate the moral than the mental man. Colleges, whose curricula leave out God, the Bible, Christianity and prayer are doing far more damage than Monte Carlo or any hundred bootlegging joints. . . . I believe the United States is tonight the most lawless nation on the face of the earth. In England, two out of every three murderers are convicted and punished. In the United States the ratio is only one to every sixty-five."—The Kansas City Times, June 9, 1924.

A leading newspaper recently ran this headline, "Seventeen murders in the United States for one in England."

The following statistics from New York state are another index of how the modernist-college-professor's "world" is "evoluting" and "getting better." And New York state, a center of modernism, is bearing the kind of fruit indicated in the following article: "The statistics for six years, show the losses from burglary alone to have a rapid and constant increase. In 1910 the loss through burglary was \$886,045; in 1913 it was \$1,298,588; in 1918 it was \$2,964,090; in 1919 it was \$5,660,305; in 1920 it was \$10,189,853; in 1921 it was \$11,500,000, and in 1922 and 1923 it was still greater. Here then, is an increase in burglary in twelve years of at least twelve hundred per cent. That means as far as burglars are concerned in New York, that the world is twelve times worse than it was twelve years ago."

The following are headings or extracts from recent publications:

"More crime in Kansas City, than in Klondike in its palmy days, says former Dawson newspaper man."

"The administration of criminal justice is flat on its back here (in Chicago) and elsewhere in the country, and criminals are on top of it, sticking their fingers in its eyes. Our murderers, paners, rapists, pick-pockets, and thugs walk out of court, out of jail, out of the penitentiary. The police cannot hold them. The law cannot punish them. They are bosses in this state."

† John Horsch in "Modern Religious Liberalism," page 30. ‡ Page 25.

"Federal statistics indicate alarming growth (of crime) in last decade."

"More police needed to combat London's growing crime wave."

"Neither life nor property is safe anywhere."

Tea Pot Dome Scandal—"The New York World has a cartoon showing Denby, Fall and Sinclair as angels, each with a halo over his head and in a prayerful attitude. Fall is smoking a cigar."

"New Russian Law: . . . only one wife can be registered, but men may have as many others as desired : . . some to retain harems . . . a divorce for the asking."

"Charges Vice Is Rampant at the University of Illinois. Declares orgies such as savages would not tolerate are held. . . . Better burn Universities to the ground . . . than pay them money if our sons and daughters attend them to learn immorality."

"Taking the wiggle out of the Charleston." Accompanying this heading was the picture of a couple dancing in a most sensual, obscene fashion.

"Complete female nudity on the stage is more satisfactory to the public than three-fourths or seven-eighths nudity" so says Dr. Albrecht Claus who has supervision over Berlin theaters."

"Every sixth person has a 'social' disease."

"Murders no longer big stuff, killings are too common."

"Two children out of every three are growing up totally uninstructed in spiritual things."

"America, says the 'Literary Digest' (July 19, 1924), is threatened with a 'revival of Paganism.' Quoting another, it declares that (we are on the brink of that corruption and sensualism which preceded the crash of the Roman world and the emptying of her temples.' Suicide, passion, hoodlumism, social immorality, divorce, leniency of juries, are among the 'appalling increase' of evils mentioned."

For two generations the doctrines of modernism and evolution have been rampant. They have undermined the church, school and government. The modernist claims our present civilization is the product of evolution. Look it over. Isn't it a sorry, sordid, savage, satanic fruitage? The fruit of evolution should be an index of how anxious a Christian father or mother is to have some school board hire some son of the devil to chuck this doctrine down the throat of their boy or girl.

New York City was once a place where men commonly worshipped God, believed in the holy Scriptures, kept the Sabbath and lived Christian lives. Today, she is the hub of modernism, evolution, rationalism, liberalism and every foul bird that is in enmity against the Christianity of Scripture and the Lord Jesus Christ. Her scribe and Pharisee leaders boast that her civilization is the product of evolution.

"Dr. Walter Laidlaw," recognized in church circles as an authority, says, † "New York is the greatest Mission Field in the world." Translated, doesn't this mean that she is the deepest down in sin and the farthest away from God? Shelly said that hell was a place like London. A commission appointed to investigate New York City, reported that the vice and moral conditions were such that the city "ought to be abolished." "Lower and lower the great city is sinking into sin." See pp. 267-268, 272-276.

The following statements appeared in the Dearborn Independent:

"There are one million young people in this city (New York) who are growing up with no more religious education than if they were reared in the jungles of Africa; 800,000 never see a Bible. Chief Magistrate

†Dearborn Independent, Sept. 19, 1925, Pages 5, 27.

McAdoo says, 'The criminal youth of this city brought before me have no religious training; there is absolutely no basis for character.' " . . .

New York, the mecca of America's finance, literature, art and fashion has become the graveyard of Protestant churches. . . .

New York is now on the Mission Map of the great Protestant denominations—along with India, Zululand and Turkey. . . . Presbyterians, Baptists, and Methodists have all sent out S O S calls for help. They have dipped deeply into their World Mission funds to support New York churches that are slowly dying. . . . "It is more difficult to make progress here (in New York) even than it is in India, or China." . . .

Dr. Reisner (and no man in Manhattan knows the city better than he) said, "let me call your mind to the fact that from 114th street to 260th street, a distance of seven miles, between Harlem and Hudson rivers, with a population of 400,000, there are only four churches, Jewish, Catholic, or Protestant, which seat as many as a thousand people.

"Go into the real residence section, in the Washington Heights region, where more than 200 apartment houses have been erected within a year and a half, and where is **located the largest high school in the world**, and where the Columbia University Medical Center will be located—this residence section has only one completed church! The rest are only chapels or roofed-over foundations, with basements. There is one section that has **50,000 persons without even a Sunday school** of any denomination. . . .

"There are only four self-supporting Methodist churches in Manhattan and the Bronx," . . . "I mean by that, the larger churches. . . . But thirty-eight churches are receiving help either from Missionary money or endowments."

Hasn't Liberalism, Evolution, Modernism, etc. of the Harry Emerson Fosdick, Dudley Malone, Charles Francis Potter type robbed New York of the Redeemer, the Lord Jesus Christ, and taken away the Bible, the Word of God? Without God and without a guide, are not New York's vice and moral conditions such that she "ought to be abolished"? "Lower and lower the great city is sinking into sin." Farther and farther away from God she goes. What will the end be? Wouldn't God destroy her now, if it were not for the regenerated remnant still within her?

Would you expect a great city with a history and a condition like New York, to gather within her educational and religious institutions a gang of skeptic, agnostic and apostate preachers and teachers? Would it be any wonder, if Columbia University of New York City radiates a defiling, blasting wave that would help crucify Christianity and help degrade, undermine and destroy the nation if permitted to continue? See page 114. Is it any wonder the Christian fathers and mothers of Tennessee objected to Scopes chucking this devil's doctrine of evolution down the throats of their sons and daughters? Isn't Scopes sheltered today behind the protecting walls of Chicago University? Why did he take refuge there? Why did they take him in? Will he not be sent forth from there with his devil's doctrine of evolution perfected, that he may the more skilfully rob boys and girls, who are in his school-room, of their faith in God and in the holy Scriptures? Are you going to permit the principal of your school or your board of education to give his kind a job? Do you want your city to be turned into a second New York? "Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead." Back to the Bible and God, before it's **too late!** The writer in the Dearborn Independent refers to New York as "the Babylon of the western world." Babylon,

in Scripture, stands as the source and propagator of every foul form of iniquity. She is referred to as "The mother of harlots and the abomination of the earth . . . come out of her my people that ye be not partakers of her sins" (Rev. 17:5; 18:4).

Is it any wonder that Tennessee sent Dudley Malone back to New York City in defeat, to wallow in her devil's broth? Is it any wonder that the God-fearing men and women of Tennessee are determined to prevent their sons and daughters from being robbed of faith in the Bible and its Redeemer, the Lord Jesus Christ?

The review in the Dearborn Independent charges that "pagan New York" . . . "has become the graveyard of Protestant churches."

"At Columbia (University in New York) (I learned this from a Baptist preacher), a professor began his course in geology by telling his class to throw away all that they had learned in the Sunday school"—Bryan, "In His Image."

†"William Adams Brown, former president of Union Theological Seminary, New York, . . . disowns 'the outworn standard' of an infallible Bible, as well as the authority of Jesus."

Harry Emerson Fosdick denies the Deity, the virgin birth, and the atoning blood of the Lord Jesus Christ in the sense in which Scripture sets Him forth, and **therefore denies redemption, as set forth in the holy Word of God.**

The Boston Herald said: "From the beginning the overwhelming majority of liberals in the orthodox churches have dodged the issues—have hedged, evaded, qualified and compromised. They have comforted their congregations with assurances that nothing was really happening in the world of religious thought, and that they need not therefore be disturbed. Black they have blithely called white, and error truth. For one man in the liberal camp who has the courage of his conviction, there are a thousand like Harry Emerson Fosdick, who shift and shuffle on every question. Now come the fundamentalists to demand a 'show down.' They make their position clear and they ask that their opponents do as much!"

Booze has wrecked and destroyed countless thousands of American boys, yet President Nicholas Murray Butler of Columbia University, would turn booze loose again, thus opening the avenues for an increased wreckage and destruction of human lives.

Dudley Malone of New York would chuck modernism and evolution down the throats of the sons and daughters of America's Christian fathers and mothers.

Protestantism has stood for God, the Bible, the Lord Jesus Christ, the church, the home and a consistent Christian life. Hasn't New York, not only become "the graveyard of the Protestant church," but the graveyard of the Bible, the Christian home, and the Christian life? No wonder that the vice commission reported that she "ought to be abolished." Is Chicago much, if any, better? The great cities have become the great centers of sin and apostasy.

Dean Shailer Mathews (of Chicago University), says, ‡¹ "The times are past when a man like Ingersoll can be regarded as a veritable anti-Christ." Scripture refers to the "false teachers" and "antichrists." If Ingersoll was not an antichrist, who is? Chicago University has clustered around her, a gang who state or teach as follows: Professor Everett Gates, ² "Christianity is now compelled to reshape its message

†Horsch, "Modern Religious Liberalism," page 227 *Page 259.

‡Horsch, "Modern Religious Liberalism," pages 19, 211.

and re-define its essence." Professor George Burnam Foster: ³ "Not supernatural regeneration, but natural growth; not divine sanctification, but human education; not supernatural grace, but natural morality; not the divine expiation of the cross, but the human heroism—or accident—of the cross; . . . not Christ the Lord, but the man Jesus who was a child of his time; not God and His providence, but evolution and its process without an absolute goal—that all this, and such as this, is the new turn in the affairs of religion at the tick of the clock." Professor Edward Scribner Ames states that "in his views," ⁴ "Tennyson and Whittier and Bryant and Lowell and Phillips Brooks and Shakespeare and Maeterlink and Kepler and Darwin and John Locke and William James should be included in the sacred canon of Scripture." ⁵ "The mental state of peace, exultation, and resolution which issue upon the exercise of prayer are due to the release of conscious tension," says Professor Theodore Gerald Soares of the University of Chicago.

† "On the occasion of the publication of Professor George Burnam Foster's principal work a Chicago daily newspaper made the following editorial comment on the situation in the Divinity School of the University of Chicago: 'We are struck, also, with the **hypocrisy** and **treachery** of these attacks on Christianity. . . . Is there no place in which to assail Christianity but a divinity school? **Is there no one to write infidel books except the professors of Christian theology?** Is a theological seminary an appropriate place for a general massacre of Christian doctrine? . . . We are not championing either Christianity or infidelity, but only condemning infidels masquerading as men of God and Christian teachers.'"

If you wanted your son or daughter to lose faith in the Bible, and in Christ, don't you think that either Chicago University or Columbia University would be a good place to send them?

No wonder the common people are becoming disgusted with some men, who swagger under "degrees" and who impose on the public as "scholars," or "scientists." Much of what they have to say about certain things is sheer nonsense. The terms they use, the statements they make about the things of God only indicate a pitiable state of paganism and a woeful lack of a knowledge of God and of the Word of God. "Godless college professors who teach atheistic theories and hypotheses and scoff at the Bible and Christian teachings are turning out young men and women like the murderers of Robert Franks."—Dr. Hargett.

The scribes and Pharisees were the "scholars" and religious leaders of their day. Insidiously they worked their way into the leadership of the educational and religious institutions. They set the Word of God aside and denied and crucified the Lord Jesus Christ. Christ called them "hypocrites," "serpents" and sons of the devil (Matt. 23; Jno. 8). If Christ were on earth today wouldn't He still point them out as sons of the devil? "He is the same yesterday, and today, and forever." Haven't the great centers of education, as "organs of antichrist," become the graveyard of Christianity, just as the great cities have become the "graveyard of the Protestant church"? And the end is not yet. The worst is yet to come. "Premier Lloyd George, of England, . . . said: . . . 'The task of the churches is greater than that which comes within the compass of any political party. Political parties may provide the lamps, lay the wires, turn the current on to certain machinery, but the churches must be the power stations. **If the generating stations are destroyed,** whatever the arrangements and plans of the political parties

*Horsch, "Modern Religious Liberalism," pages 315, 425, 576. †Pages 267-8,

may be, it will not be long before the light is cut off from the homes of the people. The doctrines taught by the churches are the only security against the triumph of human selfishness, and human selfishness unchecked will destroy any plans, however perfect, that politicians may devise."—Horsch, "Modern Religious Liberalism," Page 188.

"The shamelessness of the conduct of young women in American cities cannot be made public. . . . Nothing worse was witnessed during the last days of Pompeii and Herculaneum. . . . Viscount Bryce, late British Ambassador to the United States, said, to American businessmen, . . . 'you cannot go on twenty-five years more in your great cities as you have been doing.' . . . Throughout the world there is evidence of brute violence such as was unknown in the ancient empires." (Prof. Luther T. Townsend, D.D., S.T.D., M.V.I. in his C. of E. See p. 272—.) Lust and lawlessness mark the Age in which we live.

"When I was judge of the district court," said Judge Hutchinson, "the persons who were brought before me on criminal charges were mature men. Statistics show that at the present time 71 percent of the crime of the country is committed by boys under 21 years of age, and that in the past twenty years the average of women brought in to criminal courts has been reduced from 28 years to 18 years." Judge Hutchinson addressed his remarks on the subject particularly to the teachers and urged that the moral development of boys and girls should not be subordinated to intellectual development in the schools or in the homes. The above is another illustration of the way the evolutionist's world is "getting better."

The †modern criminal is a product of modernism, evolution, etc., which has entered the churches, seminaries, schools, colleges, publications etc., and destroys faith in God, Jesus Christ and the Bible. No God and no Bible means no law and no restraint—out into sin they go. Keep it up and you will wreck the nation. In Russia they have gone so far as to burn God in effigy. "Opposed to all forms of religious worship, but particularly inimical to Christianity, the bolshevist government of Russia is carrying on a determined campaign to wipe out the faith of its people in divine guidance."—The Kansas City Star. This anti-christ force and effort is finding an open door in other lands, with similar results. See "Russia," pp. 125, 197, 269—, 274.

"A Unitarian writer says, 'Materialistic science and Biblical Criticism have brought multitudes to the brink of despair.'"—The Christian Register, Aug. 26, 1920. And he might have added that it is wrecking the nations once called Christian. **Time will complete the work of ruin.** Deny God and you deny the Bible; deny the Bible and you deny Jesus Christ; deny Jesus Christ, and man and "the world" are absolutely without hope or redemption.

"The British liberal theologian, R. J. Campbell, says, 'God is my deeper self and yours too.' Take away God and man is driven to idol worship, which in reality is devil worship and the worship of man is a form of it." "Thou shalt worship the Lord, thy God, and Him only shalt thou serve."

† At the Dayton trial, Bryan pointed out that the crime of Leopold and Loeb was a product of modernism or evolution in the schools. After Bryan closed his eyes in death, Darrow countered and referred to a church pastor, who had committed an awful crime, and stated this was the product of the church. The church of Jesus Christ does not produce criminals, but the same modernism and spirit of antichrist, that is in the school and produces lawlessness, is also in the church and produces lawlessness. The Bible and fundamentalism are both against modernism, whether outcropping from the school or church.

Typical modernism and typical Christianity are diametrically opposed to each other. One of them is necessarily wrong. "By their fruits ye shall know them." Modernism **rejects** the word of God and begets **lawlessness**. Christianity **accepts** the Word of God and begets **righteousness**. Where modernism, evolution, etc., abound, sin abounds. Russia and New York City are illustrations. **ACCORDING TO THE REVELATIONS OF GOD**, the rise of modernism ("the falling away" in the church) will eventuate in a reign of lust and lawlessness that will wreck "the world." America now revels in lust and lawlessness as she never did before. We have parted far from our Puritan ancestors, who worshipped and served God and placed their faith in His holy Word.

GOD FORESAW AND PROPHESED THE PRESENT APOSTASY

Centuries ago, the Bible revealed that modernism, heresy and apostasy would mark the end of the age and that there would be a "falling away" in the church. New York church statistics demonstrate that she has "fallen away." Does New York need a few more Fosdicks, Potters and Malones or does she need the Lord Jesus Christ and the "Word of God"?

The Word of God authorizes the statement that "the Spirit of Christ" was in the prophets when they testified (1 Pet. 1:9-12). "Now the Spirit speaketh expressly, that **in the latter times** some shall **depart from the faith**" (1 Tim. 4:1). "There shall be **false teachers** among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, **even denying the Lord that bought them**" (2 Pet. 2:1). "**In the last days . . . men shall be lovers of their own selves . . . men of corrupt minds, REPROBATE concerning the faith**" (2 Tim. 3:1-8). "Know this . . . **grievous wolves . . . shall . . . enter in among you, not sparing the flock**" (church) (Acts 20:28-29).

These prophecies warn the church and prepare her for her warfare. The true church or body of Christ is composed of all regenerated people. It is good and was founded by God and has its mission to perform in God's plan of redemption. It fails to fully accomplish God's desire for it, because mankind refuses to be governed by God and because the church itself has failed to fully place itself at God's service.

"**Many DECEIVERS . . . confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh**" (deny His virgin birth or incarnation, in the scriptural sense) (2 John 7)—they "subvert whole houses, **teaching** things which they ought not" (Titus 1:11) and they "pervert the gospel of Christ" (Gal. 1:7) and preach "**another gospel**," which is under the "curse" of God (Gal. 1:6-9), because it is not "gospel" at all, but anti-gospel. "**Many false prophets (teachers) shall rise, and shall deceive many . . . false prophets . . . if it were possible . . . shall deceive the very elect**" (Matt. 24; 2 Tim. 3:1-9).

The evidence from God's Word and present world conditions, indicate that the end of man's rule over the earth is near and that humanity is now wrecking itself on the rocks of sin and apostasy. Many false teachers have arisen in the form of the modernists, liberalists, rationalists, or evolutionists, etc. They vary in kind and degree. The typical modernist or evolutionist denies the account of creation, the fall of man, the need of salvation, the authority of the Holy Scriptures, and the person and work of Jesus Christ as Redeemer, as set forth in the Bible. These men are filling prominent places in the ecclesiastical, educational and publicational world. They deny "the faith once for all delivered unto the saints." They preach "another gospel" and "pervert the gospel of Christ." They claim to have a more marvelous mind than other men have or than the

mighty men of God have had at any time during the last nineteen hundred years.

The Greeks, at one time, were the most brilliant men that the world has ever known. They denied Jesus Christ, in the sense in which God has set Him forth in Scripture; wrecked their nation and went out into the night. Men, who "professing themselves to be wise" have become "fools" (Rom. 1:22), are now doing the same thing. Gladstone, the mental peer of any modernist said, "All the wonders of Greek civilization heaped together are less wonderful than the single book of Psalms." In derision, the modernist would declare the sacred Scriptures to be a "tale," a "myth," "an allegory." To Gladstone it was the wonderful Word of God. In derision, the modernist declares that Gladstone and his kind are "unlearned," "ignorant," "bigots" and "fanatics," while they themselves exceed in knowledge and brilliance, all men of the past ages. "Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus" (Philip. 2:5).

"But though we, or an angel from heaven, preach **any other gospel** unto you **than that which we have preached** unto you, **let him be accursed**" (Gal. 1:8).

That modernism, liberalism, rationalism or evolution is preaching "another gospel" is self-evident, from the fact that they deny and denounce the fundamental doctrines of Christianity as set forth in the sacred Scriptures. God has written of any one who preaches "another gospel . . . let him be accursed." If they deserved any better treatment than this, God would see that they received it. God does not bid us to go to or have fellowship with these "unfruitful works of darkness." **"Let him be accursed."** Who says so? God says so! "Come out from among them, and be ye separate" (2 Cor. 6:17).

The Christian Work, a magazine published in New York City and devoted to modernism, has in its Dec. 13, 1924, issue, on pages 683-5 an article labeled a sermon on "The Great Invitation." In this sermon (?), hasn't this man preached "another gospel" and "perverted the gospel of Jesus Christ"? He says: "Jonathan Edwards had his whole congregation quivering in terror as he described the fate of a sinner in the hands of an angry God. The same sermon today would leave the mass of hearers cold, or send them away in revolt. Every sermon, every appeal, every statement the Christian preacher offers today is met with the disconcerting question, 'Just what do you mean?' Past ages took everything for granted. The mind of our day takes nothing for granted." The perverted, diseased, devil-directed mind of the typical modernist does not even take "the Word of God" for granted. This learned man inquires "Just what do you mean?" when you preach that sinners shall quiver in terror in the hands of an angry God. Our answer is, we mean just what Jesus Christ meant when He said, "He that believeth not shall be damned" (Mk. 16:16), and when He said, "Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels" (Matt. 25:41). And we mean just what the Lord's apostle, John, meant when he wrote, "And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire" (Rev. 20:15). We mean just what Jude meant, when he wrote about false teachers, who were "turning the grace of our God into lasciviousness, and denying the only Lord God, and our Lord Jesus Christ" (Jude 4), and when he said, "the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints, to execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have

spoken against HIM" (the Lord Jesus Christ) (Jude 14, 15). And we mean just what Paul meant when he said, "But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath and revelation of the righteous judgment of God" (Rom. 2:5).

It is not "out of date" to preach that God will strike in awful judgment against the unrepentant sinner. God is "the same yesterday, and today, and forever." God delivered "the gospel," **"once for all"** "unto the saints." "The faith which was **once for all** delivered unto the saints" (Jude 3, Am. V.). **The preacher who "PERVERTS the gospel" of Jesus Christ** is the one who is "out of date." He is a modernist. A modernist is one who has departed from the age-old fundamental teachings of the holy Scriptures. **"Let him be accursed."** Who says so? God says so! This D. D. with the master "modern mind," speaking to poor, uninformed, "out of date" Jonathan Edwards and his kind, wants to know "Just what do you mean?" Well, my dear sir, Jonathan Edwards meant just what the gentle Jesus meant and that is, that the unrepentant sinner is "going to hell." "The wages of sin is death." "The soul that sinneth, it shall die." Eternal banishment from God, under eternal curse. Heaven wouldn't be a proper place for him, would it? The God, who struck in judgment against the wicked, sensual, idolatrous cities of Sodom and Gomorrah, still strikes in judgment against the unrepentant sinner, who will not turn to the Christ of the Bible.

Sin never touches a human life, but that it blights it; mars it, scars it, drags it down, defiling and blackening it. Sin produces the robber, the whoremonger, the drunkard, the murderer, the scarlet girl with a "harlot's forehead," and the beast-faced man with a wrecked body, foul and loathsome with venereal disease. The wretched wrecks of the human race are all traveling in the trail of sin. **The fearful consequences of sin are sufficient evidence that God prohibits sin and that the human race is desperately in need of redemption and a Saviour.** Yes! "Sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death" (Jas. 1:15). "Turn ye, turn ye from your evil ways; for why will ye die?" (Ezek. 33:11). "Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts; and let him return unto the Lord, and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon" (Isa. 55:7).

The "deceivers" and "false prophets," let men go to hell while they preach "the gospel of death," which is "another gospel" than the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ. The typical modernist is not preaching the gospel of the Bible. The gospel of the Bible is the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ, which is the same gospel that the apostles preached, which is the same gospel that Jonathan Edwards preached and which is the same gospel that the mighty men of God have preached all thru the past gospel ages. **And it is the gospel, which the fundamentalist is still preaching.** "The faith which was **once for all** delivered unto the saints." It is not a gospel which is a chance product of or in a process of evolution. The Gospel was ordained from the foundation of the world. Evolution and Modernism both deny the Word of God on this subject.

"Forasmuch as ye know that ye were . . . redeemed . . . with the precious blood of Christ . . . who verily was **foreordained before** the foundation of the world" (1 Pet. 1:18-20).

"Come, ye blessed of my Father, inherit the **kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:**" (Matt. 25:34).

The Gospel of salvation, or the Christianity of the Scriptures, is the result of direct, Divine intervention and clearly represents God as **taking the initiative** in human salvation. Thus it is diametrically opposed to evolution. It results in the salvation and the regeneration or new birth of the believer and has its consummation in bringing the world back from its fall and consequent curse, under the direct government of God. Then the government shall be upon the shoulder of †the Lord Jesus Christ, Who shall reign as King of kings. To him, who preaches "another gospel" (modernism), God has written "Let him be accursed."

The Son of God who is the head of the church (Col. 1:18) commissioned His disciples to "go" "preach the gospel" "which was once for all delivered unto the saints." This is the gospel of salvation by faith in the atoning blood of the Lord Jesus Christ—the Christ Who came to

† "Here is what a good Methodist leader said in the Central Christian Advocate of August 17, 1921: 'The question as to the belief entertained by John Wesley concerning the second coming of our Lord would scarcely be raised by those familiar with his works. He certainly was a premillennialist. . . . The Moravians, who led Mr. Wesley into the deeper Christian life, and with whom he worked, were all premillennialists. In his notes on the book of Revelation, he states that "guilt is incurred by every one who hinders the church from constantly watching for the coming of the Lord." Mr. Wesley had strong faith in the restoration of the Jews to their own land, and in their subsequent acceptance of Christ, after the great tribulation of the last days" (The King's Business). Many Methodists (the denomination in which the author was practically born and raised) have become so "modern" that they have not only rejected the teachings of their founder, that grand man of God, John Wesley, who knew his Bible, but they have also rejected what God has said in His holy Word about setting up the kingdom. See pp. 23-78 and especially pp. 23-50.

"Thou Shalt Not be a Premillennialist!" This is the dictum of a portion of Methodism. Zion's Herald, the Boston Methodist Journal, last fall published the following statement from Bishop Adna Leonard, of the Pacific Coast: 'In response to your request for an outline of our plan in the San Francisco area to counteract the pernicious effect of the premillennial movement, I would say that for several years I have encouraged the conferences, through their boards of examiners, to ascertain definitely if the candidates for our ministry, coming before them for admission into conference, were premillennial in their views. I have urged this so constantly and have been supported so splendidly by the District Superintendents, that it is now practically impossible for a young man standing for the premillennial theory to be admitted into any conference in the San Francisco area' (The King's Business).

Many Modernist political church leaders, who stoop to Tammany methods, have worked their way to the head of their denomination. They either do not know or else have rejected what God has said in His Word about the kingdom. They are crowding out of their denominations, or else relegating to inferior positions, those preachers who know the Bible and are true to "the Word of God." As a result we frequently have a hollow shell with the kernel gone; outward show, but little of the Spirit and truth of God.

Bishop Adna Leonard is not the only Bishop who prohibits the preaching from Methodist pulpits of "the Word of God" about the kingdom and other things of redemption. John Wesley, the founder of Methodism, would now be prohibited from preaching in many of the modernist pulpits of this denomination. Many a Methodist preacher has been too busy, or failed to study his Bible enough to know what God has said about setting up the kingdom. It's easy for an uninformed or a trixter Bishop to lead a preacher of this kind around. Many of these fellows are fine men of God, but they have made the gravest mistake in failing to "Search the Scriptures" (The Bible, not some other book). "Study to shew thyself approved unto God . . . rightly dividing the Word of truth." There was seldom ever a time when ministers needed to know their Bible so much as now.

"Faith of Our Fathers, Living Still' Under the heading, 'God Will Preserve Himself a Church,' Rev. Bob Shuler, Pastor Trinity Methodist Church, Los Angeles, Calif., declares as follows . . . : 'My prediction is that not a generation remains between this day and the formation of a mighty body of believers, the strongest and most powerful that ever shook the world. Call

die, Who died to save, Who lives to keep, Who comes to reign. And no preacher ordained by God, has any authority to preach "another gospel." Are not those who do so under the curse of God, even though they take refuge behind a golden-calf (?) pulpit of a John D. Rockefeller, Jr., or disgrace the theological seminaries of Columbia or Chicago Universities? Do not these Universities send out streams of pollution and corruption thru the schools and churches, thereby blighting the Christianity of this and foreign lands and making void the Word of the Lord Jesus Christ?

As teachers and preachers go from these supposedly superior schools of learning, are they not usually invited by frequently ill advised boards of education and churches to positions of leadership or strategic importance? As many of them go, do they not usually carry with them more or less of these corrupt, diseased, perverted teachings and impose them secretly and openly on those under their supervision? Is this one of the greatest menaces that faces the present day school and church? Is there any chance for your boy or girl to be safe, while under such leadership and teachings? The school and visible church are two of the forces that antichrist is using to produce the "falling away" and wreck civilization. As revealed by prophecy, this undermining and destroying process of antichrist will spread and take increasingly large numbers within its fold, from the church, school, etc. Sin, rebellion, enmity against God, His Word, and the Lord Jesus Christ, will dominate the world and finally when antichrist incarnates himself in "the beast," the "man of sin," then the world's iniquity will "be full." Then God will come, executing judgment, "taking vengeance on them that know not God and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ" (2 Thess. 1:8). After this, "the God of heaven" will "set up" "the kingdom of heaven" on earth. Then Christ's prayer will be answered, "Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven."

them fundamentalists or what you please, they are massing from the rivers to the ends of the earth. They are ready to break with any and all denominations when the call of God shall sound. They will not abide the presence of that foe who would cut the Old Book to shreds, depose Jesus Christ from His throne of Deity and rob the heart of man of the mighty change, known as the New Birth and taught by the fathers, whose eyes were fixed on the Cross and whose messages never wandered far from a fountain of blood.

"It will all but tear the heart out of some of us when the rending of the timbers is heard. For we love the churches in which we were cradled. We are ready to give our lives to them. We are even ready to shed our blood for them. But we will not be led into the trap of the deceiver and the snare of the despoiler by our leaders. They must lead toward God or we will refuse to follow

'God will preserve Him a church that stands for the Old Book in its entirety; that battles for the Deity of Jesus Christ in the completeness of that doctrine; that preaches a salvation of blood, a new birth that is followed by a gracious experience of conscious relation, of sonship, of spiritual growth and of Holy Ghost experience; that evangelizes the world in the name of Jesus Christ, driving back false doctrines and stubbornly standing before every foe that would pull down Golgotha or lessen the meaning of our Lord's victorious coming from the tomb. In such a church I can work and pray, sing and shout, preach and be happy. And there are tens of thousands like me. The name of that church matters little!"

God is calling out His forces from among the denominations, and preparing them for the "last days" and the final conflict between Christ and antichrist.

"But Modernism is being unmasked, and many godly men and women are being awakened to the fact that their own home church has been inoculated with the deadly virus of infidelity, so that a terrific fight is necessary in order to simply hold the ground so dearly bought by our fathers" (Grace and Truth, Mch., 1924).

Professor James H. Leuba (Bryn Mawr College, Penn.) after investigating student bodies of representative colleges says, "Forty to forty-five per cent of the men graduates have abandoned the cardinal principals of the Christian faith." Many of the other graduates must be in a sorry condition as to the things of Christ. This same professor, after investigating the scientists, asserts that, "more than one-half of the prominent scientists of the United States, those teaching Biology, Psychology, Geology and History especially, have discarded belief in a personal God and in personal immortality." See p. 263.

Are we not filling our schools, pulpits and colleges with this kind of material for teachers and preachers? If the soul of your son or daughter is damned and lost throughout eternity, whose fault is it?

What is the advantage of famous social and research work of Universities, even tho they save human life, if they damn human souls? **Eternal life** is the gift of God, as set forth in the Gospel of John. Let's get the gospel to a man, that his soul may be saved; that he may have **eternal life**. Then it will be worth while to save his body. Let's have Universities that stand for the God of heaven and eternal life, instead of the god of gold and transient life.

Christ asserted that the Scripture is "the Word of God" (Mk. 7:13). So does the fundamentalist. The typical modernist denies that the Bible is "the Word of God." Some modernists claim to be for Jesus Christ, yet they deny the very Scriptures He defended and proclaimed. Jesus Christ is inseparably associated with the holy Scriptures. The modernist is lined up in enmity against the Bible, Jesus Christ and the fundamentalist.

Jesus charged the scribes and Pharisees, who set God's Word aside by their traditions (tales, myths, deception as against the facts of the Bible, which have been established thruout the centuries) with shutting "up the kingdom of heaven against men" (Matt. 23:13). Then, as now, it was the antichrists, who denied the Word of God and then, as now, they "shut up the kingdom of heaven against men," and blindfolded them with "a gospel of death," and let them go to hell. No wonder those who deny that the Bible is the Word of God and preach "another gospel" are under the curse of God Almighty. **God wants the sinner saved.**

"¶For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life" (Jno. 3:16).

Jesus Christ further charges these religious leaders with neither going into the kingdom of heaven themselves, nor permitting or suffering "them that are entering to go in" (Matt. 23:13). Do you want your son or daughter to follow this kind of leadership? Jesus Christ further charges these faithless deniers of "the Word of God" with being "hypocrites" and making "clean the outside of the cup . . . **but within** they (were) full of" "uncleanness" and "iniquity" (Matt. 23:25-27). Isn't this God's photograph of the preachers, who deny that the Bible is the Word of God and substitute therefor traditions, myths, tales, deception like modernism, evolution, etc.?

Some of these modernists "pervert the gospel of Christ" with such serpentine subtleness and satanic sophistry, using the very terms the Bible uses, yet perverting them as they do the gospel that "if it were possible" they would "deceive the very elect."

People will spend hours, weeks, months and even years reading volumes of printed matter, yet very few have ever even read the Bible, much less have they ever really studied it from its beginning to its end; consequently they cannot know, personally, much about its contents and teachings.

No wonder the multitude is being easily led astray by "blind leaders of the blind." Simply because a man has a D.D. after his name or fills a prominent pulpit or his writings occupy special places in current publications, it is not necessarily evidence that he has a real knowledge of the Scriptures. Many a D.D. "scientist" and newspaper artist is "fanning the air" and "playing to the galleries," when he talks about the things of God. They "do err, not knowing the scriptures" (Matt. 22:29). "Search the Scriptures." Know the truth for yourself.

(Read and study the contents of this book carefully in connection with your study of the Bible, as it sets forth God's plan of redemption. You will find that modernism is "perverting the gospel of Jesus Christ" and is **different from** and **opposed to** Christianity.) The Scripture reveals that all thru the ages, the great masses of humanity with their leaders and teachers, have ever been opposed to God, His Word, His plans and His government. Look over the world and you will find the same condition present today. It is the same old world still manifesting its enmity against God. "The world" is helpless, hopeless and hell-bound, without Divine redemption. **The Scriptures clearly reveal this.**

Liberalism, evolution, rationalism or modernism are fundamentally one and the same thing, whether found inside or outside of the church, though their devotees may deny it. And when a man tells you he is offering mankind something better than God has to offer in the sacred Scriptures isn't he a blasphemer, a prevaricator and under the curse of God?

Modernism has varying degrees in its adherents. Some reject the Bible, or the Person, work and teachings of the Lord Jesus Christ, **only in part**. But the extent to which one is a typical modernist, to that extent he is dangerous and destructive. There is NO VIRTUE in modernism or liberalism IN ANY OF ITS DEGREES. ALL OF ITS DEGREES are enmity against God, His government and the good of mankind. When folks get broader than God's strait and narrow way, they are on the wrong road.

The prophecies made centuries ago, that the end of the age would be marked by the rise of many false teachers, is now being literally fulfilled in the present day skeptic, heretic, evolutionist, modernist, etc. The "falling away" within the church and "perilous times" are "at hand."

Modernism turns men away from, and blinds them to the redemption, that God has in Christ Jesus, for the sinner and for a lost, undone world. Away with modernism! Back to God! Back to the Bible! Back to Christ! "The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God" (Ps. 9:17). There is danger and death in delay. "He that believeth not shall be damned" (Mk. 16:16). "Him that cometh to me I will in no wise cast out" (Jno. 6:37). "Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved" (Acts 16:31).

Former Vice-President Thomas R. Marshall in Chicago Daily News, "**LIKENS MODERNISTS IN RELIGION TO REDS**," saying, ("The assault of present-day preachers upon the truth of the things that have been making for a right outlook in life the world around is of vast moment in view of the fact that they are tearing down a faith and setting up nothing in its place.

"It is well up to them to explain to the American people how the things they are doing differ essentially from the things which Trotzky is doing in Russia. If they are going to persist in limiting the power of God, they ought to get out of their pulpits and get on soap boxes or creep into the nets of communists who are striking at the foundations of our republic" (~~Moody Monthly~~).

Section 9

A DETAILED EXPOSITION OF THE BIBLICAL ACCOUNT OF CREATION

Genesis 1:1-2:3

The Biblical account of Creation reads as follows:

(1) **"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.**

(2) And the earth was waste and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep: and the Spirit of God ¹moved upon the face of the waters.

(3) **And God said, Let there be light: and there was light.**

(4) And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness.

(5) And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. **And there was evening and there was morning, one day.**

(6) **And God said, Let there be a ²firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters.**

(7) And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so.

(8) And God called the firmament Heaven. **And there was evening and there was morning, a second day.**

(9) **And God said, Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so.**

(10) And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas: and God saw that it was good.

(11) And God said, Let the earth put forth grass, herbs yielding seed, and fruit-trees bearing fruit after their kind, wherein is the seed thereof, upon the earth: and it was so.

(12) And the earth brought forth grass, herbs yielding seed after their kind, and trees bearing fruit, wherein is the seed thereof, after their kind: and God saw that it was good.

(13) **And there was evening and there was morning, a third day.**

(14) **And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days and years:**

(15) And let them be for lights in the firmament of heaven to give light upon the earth, and it was so.

(16) And God made the two great lights: the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also.

(17) And God set them in the firmament of heaven to give light upon the earth,

(18) And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good.

(19) **And there was evening and there was morning, a fourth day.**

(20) **And God said, Let the waters swarm with swarms of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth ³in the open firmament of heaven.**

(21) And God created the great sea-monsters, and every living creature that moveth, wherewith the waters swarmed, after their kind, and every winged bird after its kind: and God saw that it was good.

(22) And God blessed them, saying, Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth.

(23) **And there was evening and there was morning, a fifth day.**

(24) **And God said,** Let the earth bring forth living creatures after their kind, cattle, and creeping things, and beasts of the earth after their kind: and it was so.

(25) And God made the beats of the earth after their kind, and the cattle after their kind, and everything that creepeth upon the ground after its kind: and God saw that it was good.

(26) And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the birds of the heavens, and over the cattle, and over all the earth.

(27) And God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.

(28) And God blessed them: and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it; and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the birds of the heavens, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.

(29) And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb yielding seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for food:

(30) And to every beast of the earth, and to every bird of the heavens, and to everything that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is² life, I have given every green herb for food: and it was so.

(31) And God saw everything that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. **And there was evening and there was morning, the sixth day.**

CHAPTER II

(1) And the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them.

(2) And on the seventh day God finished his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made.

(3) And God blessed the seventh day, and hallowed it; because that in it he rested from all his work which God had created and made"—(Gen. 1:1-2:3, Am. V.).

DAYS OF CREATION

In the account of creation (Gen. 1:1-2:3), the Hebrew word "yom" is translated into the English word "day." This word "yom" or "day" occurs in the account 14 (2 x 7) times. What does the word mean? A concordance shows a number of meanings, among which are: a period of twelve hours; of twenty-four hours; a season; an age, etc.

LENGTH OF DAYS OF CREATION

In 1:5 yom or day means "light," the thing itself; in the same verse "day" means the period of "evening" and "morning." Since there was, as yet, no sun to measure time, its length is indeterminate. In 1:14 it means twelve hours or the period of daylight; in the same verse, "days and years" it means the sidereal day of twenty-four hours. In 2:4-5 it means the time in which "God made earth and heaven," etc., that is, it means "the whole period of creation." In the first few verses of Genesis we find, therefore, that the word "day" or "yom" has a **number** of **different** meanings. In subsequent Scripture, it is often used for

long, indefinite periods of time, as in Isa. 30:8, "for the time to come forever and ever"; or as in Deu. 31:17, 18, "in that day . . . I will forsake them and I will hide my face from them"; or as in Gen. 5:5, "the days (yom) that Adam lived were 930 years"; or as in 2 Pet. 3:8, "one day is with the Lord as a thousand years." One of the less frequent uses of the word "yom" or "day," in Scripture, is to mean a period of 24 hours. We speak of a six months day in the polar regions. God speaks of a day in which there will be "no night" (Rev. 21:25).

The first day (1:3-5) was composed of a period of darkness ("darkness was upon the face of the deep"), and the following, "light." How long was this period of darkness? Of light? Nobody knows. The sun was **not** "made" or set to dividing the days from the night **until the fourth day** (1:14-19). Does the evidence convince one that it was a period of twenty-four hours? What prevents it from having been a period of millions of years? Could it not have been a yom or day of twenty-four hours or one of twenty-four million hours? What the honest investigator desires is neither to add to nor detract from the Divine record.

God "made" and "set" the sun to "**dividing**" the "light from the darkness" on the **fourth** day. The first three days of creation were without the sun as a divider of day and night. It is the earth's relation to the sun that makes periods of 12 or 24 hours. "**God divided** the light from the darkness" on the first day (1:4), and evidently on the next two days. How many hours or millions of years did God use in the dividing? Does it even say these divisions on the first three days were equal? In the account of the seventh day, it does not record, "there was evening and there was morning, a seventh day." Why not? The seventh day is not considered as ended, but extends into the future. This day, then has already been some 6000 years, and in this period, the seventh day would be made up of **very many days** of 12 or 24 hours' duration.

Jerome considered the days of creation as "periods of time." "The cosmologies of other peoples are confirmatory of the creation days being periods and not natural days." How long was the yom or day of each of the six creation periods? In Ex. 20:11, when man is required by God to keep the Sabbath day the basis of argument is that, "in six days Jehovah made ("asah" as in Gen. 1:7, not "bara" as in Gen. 1:1) heaven and earth and all that in them is. Here "yom" or day means just what it means in Gen. 1:3-2:4. And there it means the reconstruction period of six days, **which does not include** the period or time of the original creation. See pp. 137-40, 165. The Lord's days are not necessarily of the same length as man's days. (See 2 Pet. 3:5).

"Scholars" tell us, you could place anywhere from 300,000 to 1,400,000 worlds like ours inside the sun, and that there are millions of suns besides other innumerable millions of celestial bodies. Then, our little world is only a pin point in God's creation. God could create it in a moment or God could place our world between his finger and thumb and muss it ~~all up one moment~~ and straighten it all out the next. Ordinarily, it takes months to raise grain and mill it and make it into bread. God, incarnate, who "made all things" (Jno. 1:1-14; Col. 1:16-17), made bread in the twinkling of an eye, as it were, when He fed the five thousand (Matt. 15:32-39). He could use much time or set time aside when He created and made the heavens and earth. The sun was at its present work on at least the fifth and sixth days. These days could have been periods of twenty-four hours or their length could have varied from or been equal to the length of the other days of creation. There is no reason why God

could not have done the entire reconstruction and creation work of the six days' period in six days of twenty-four hours each. "With God all things are possible." See "The Ability of God," p. 200. There is evidence that indicates that the six days of reconstruction and creation were short periods of time.

ORDER OF CREATION

The order as it pertains to the earth:—

BIBLE	SCIENCE
Inorganic Creation	
Light.....	Light
Firmament (expanse).....	Firmament
Seas.....	Seas
Land.....	Land
Organic Creation	
Grass.....	Grass
Herbs.....	Herbs
Fruit Trees.....	Fruit Trees
Fish.....	Fish
Fowl.....	Fowl
Animals (land).....	Animals
Man.....	Man

In comparing these eleven different products of God's handiwork, we have just seen that science agrees perfectly with the Bible. Science agrees that the four inorganic creations appeared before the seven organic creations and that the inorganic and organic creations appeared in **the exact order** that God's record sets forth. Science and the Bible have not always thus agreed in this matter.

God knows all the past as well as the future. Thirty-four hundred years ago He revealed to Moses, in ordinary language, the order of these creations. Modern science and information were unknown. No one knew the order of creation, except by revelation from God. Scientific research has only confirmed and testified to the authority of Scripture. It will be proven later in the "Mosaic Summary" (Vol. 2 of this work) that there is **not one chance in millions** for each of these eleven creations, in their **exact** order and **exact** relationship to each other to be here by chance. Therefore, they must be here by design and **that design is necessarily Divine**. The Bible is "the Word of God."

THE WORD OF "SCHOLARS" AND "THE WORD OF GOD"

Science and the Bible have not always been agreed. Professor G. F. Wright says: "The history of science is little else than one of discarded theories" (The Advance, May, 1902). Lord Kelvin says the word "failure" "characterized" his efforts to advance science (at the British Association for the Advancement of Science). Whenever there has been a change it has been science and **not** God's record, that has had to alter.

In the Greek age of master minds their scholars generally taught that the earth was flat, and supported on the back of their god, Atlas. They had a god handy for everything, just like some "scholars" now have a godless theory handy for every occasion. Centuries before this, God's Word declared the earth was round—"the circle of the earth" (Isa. 40:22; Prov. 8:27), and that it hung "on nothing"—"He stretcheth out the north over the empty place, and hangeth the earth upon nothing" (Job 26:7). God's Word, thru the years stood challenged as wrong by their "scholars." Scientific investigation has confirmed the Word of God and

discredited their "scholars." The established facts in science do not contradict the Divine record. There is scarcely one scientific item in a thousand in Scripture that is even an object of criticism. See pp. 70-1. Yet, some scientists waste time picking at these "will 'o the whisps." Science is human and contains error. God is divine. His Word is truth. Error and truth won't reconcile. Don't waste time on it. When science fails to harmonize with God's Word, stick to the Bible. Time will vindicate the Bible.

TWO TRIADS OF DAYS; ONE TRIAD OF CREATIVE ACTS

The first **three** days were a preparation for, and prophetic of, the last **three** days:

1st day	light	made ready for	4th day	{ sun moon stars
2nd day	{ water air	made ready for made ready for	5th day	{ fish fowl
3rd day	{ dry land plant life	made ready for made ready for	6th day (1:29)	{ land animals human life

In this arrangement of triads is shadowed forth the trinity of God and of man. It is evident that Supreme intelligence and deliberate design were at work with man as the ultimate end or crown of creation. The order and consistency of this account indicates a Divine Author. To arrive at this conclusion it is only necessary to compare man's account of creation, as disclosed by the monuments, with this record. It would be a strange God indeed, who would create a man and hold the man accountable to Him, and yet not reveal anything about that creation and its purpose to man, and never let man know anything about what He wanted him to do and what He didn't want him to do.

The thirty-four short verses of Gen. 1:1-2:3 recite the work of God's creation, that science tells us took countless ages to perform. Its brevity indicates its relative importance and also discloses its grandeur. Science confesses that it is impossible to originate **matter**, **life** or **man** (the possessor of personality). In this account of creation God is said to have "created" on **three** occasions (the word "created," on account of custom, has been used loosely in this book). The Hebrew equivalent of the word "created" is "bara" and in the grammatical form here employed "is used **exclusively** of **divine** activity" (Int. Crit. Com.) To "bara" is "to **originate** the **absolutely** new." Rabbi Nackman declares there is no other word to express" this act of God's.

GOD "BARA" OR CREATED:

(1) "The heavens and the earth"—this would include **all matter** (Gen. 1:1).

(2) Sentient life (1:21).

(3) Man (a personality with God-consciousness) (1:27).

"Scholars" have not always admitted these things as true, but now they confirm God's record and agree that these things must necessarily have been created and had an origin outside of a natural or human realm. Dr. Wallace, a co-worker with Darwin said: "Three distinct stages of progress from the inorganic world of matter and motion up to man, point clearly to an unseen universe—to a world of spirit, to which the world of matter is altogether subordinate" (Bishop's "E. C.," p. 115).

Thirty-four hundred years ago, when the human race was in its infancy, God proclaimed thru His prophet, Moses, that God "bara" (an exclusively divine act) matter, sentient life and man. The facts referred to, prove beyond a reasonable doubt that Moses wrote, guided by a Divine hand, just as the lone water fowl takes its journey of hundreds of miles from the frozen north to the sunny south; both guided by the God that made them and can control at will, body, mind and soul. God, incarnate, creator of all things, said: "Moses wrote of me" (Jno. 5:46). The word "bara" or created is used six times in Gen. 1:1-2:3 (1:1; 1:21; 1:27; 1:27; 1:27; and 2:3).

The **only** things recorded as having been "created" by God are "the heavens and the earth" (and all these terms would include at the time), sentient life and man. How did the light, firmament, plants, etc., come into existence? What does God's record say? The Bible is the most misrepresented, misinterpreted, and lied about book, both by its friends and foes, of any book in all the world. Yet its record stands, and has stood unshaken thru the centuries. The Bible's truths are undimmed by years and unchanged by time, and challenge alike, friend and foe.

SOME NON-"BARA" YET FORMATIVE ACTS OR MANDATES OF GOD

In Gen. 1:2 the Spirit of God moved over the exposed matter. This was prophetic of the manifestation of the **power** of God's Spirit (Acts 1:8), and of the approaching order and life.

- (1) In Gen. 1:3-5, when God wanted light, He spoke and light came forth.
- (2) In 1:6-8, when God wanted a firmament, He **"made"** it.
- (3) In 1:9-10, when God wanted "seas" and dry land, He spoke, and there was **"dry land"** and "seas."
- (4) In 1:11-13, when God wanted plant life, He commanded the earth to put forth plant life, "and it was so."
- (5) In 1:14-19, when God wanted sun, moon and stars, He spoke, and **"made"** and "set" them in their places.
- (6) In 1:24-25, when God wanted cattle, creeping things, and beasts, God **"made"** them.
- (7) In 1:29-30, when God wanted food for man and beast, He simply spoke "and it was so."

You will please note, **in the verses** set out under these seven headings, as follows:

(a) In (1), (3), (4) and (7), God **spake** and "there was light"; the dry land "appeared," etc.; the earth put forth grass, herbs, etc.; and food was set apart for man and animals.

(b) In (2), (5) and (6), God **spake** and **made** (asah) "the firmament"; sun, moon, etc.; "cattle," "creeping things," etc.

(c) God is not represented as "bara" or "creating" any of these things—originating them as "the absolutely new"—**on the specific "day"** in which they are set out in the Scriptures referred to under these seven headings. This necessitated an initial appearance on a former occasion. To illustrate: under (3) on the third day, God commanded, "Let the dry land appear." For land to "appear" it had to have a prior existence. Under the subject, "The Third Day," p. 171 it will be seen that the initial creation of land occurred before the six days' period, and in an original creation accounted for and set out in Genesis 1:1.

This subject will again be referred to and evidence will be offered to show that **God created all of these things**, but an initial advent occurred at a prior time to that of "the day" in which they are referred to in the above seven Scripture settings.

WHERE BEGIN? WHERE END?

In order to find exactly what God records as having been done **on each day**, it will be necessary to determine, if possible, exactly where the account for each day begins and ends. Let us start with the account for the sixth day. (See the Scripture pp. 132-3.) With what verse and words does it begin? Some one says, verse 24 and the three words, "And God said." Why do you think the record for the sixth day begins at this verse and with these words? One answers: Because, immediately preceding this verse and these three words, in verse 23 it reads, "there was evening and there was morning, a fifth day"; this would end the fifth day and of course the sixth day would begin where the fifth day ends. And where and with what words does the record of the sixth day close? It closes at 1:31, with the same formula that closes the fifth day, i. e., "there was evening and there was morning, the sixth day." Where and with what words does the fifth day begin? Gen. 1:20, and with the formula, "And God said." What similarity do you find between the beginning and the ending of the fifth and sixth days? They both begin with the formula, "And God said," and they both end with the formula, "And there was evening and there was morning," etc.

Where does the record of the seventh day begin and end? It must begin where the sixth day ends (Gen. 2:1). Well, where does it end? You don't know? Well, as previously referred to, the seventh day had its beginning at the end of the sixth day, and has lasted ever since and extends into the future. With what expressions do the third and fourth days of creation begin and end? They both begin with the expression, "And God said," and both end with the expression, "there was evening and there was morning," etc.

With what verse and words does the second day begin and end? It begins with verse 1:6 and the words, "And God said," and ends with the verse 1:8 and with the words, "there was evening and there was morning, a second day." Now, are you absolutely sure that the second day begins and ends where you stated? Yes. What makes you so sure? It is evident that there is a law of the Author, whereby He starts each day with the formula, "And God said," and ends each day with the formula, "And there was evening and there was morning," etc. Are you sure that nothing before, and nothing after these two formulas can be considered in the recorded account of the second day of creation? Yes, absolutely sure. Then everything **before**, and everything **after** these two formulas of words would have to do with some other time or period of creation? Yes.

Now be careful this time and tell us where the first day of creation begins and with what words. It has to begin at verse 3 and with the words, "And God said," because that is the only place in the verses that are left, where we find this formula, "And God said." Where does the account of the first day of creation end? Verse 1:5 and the formula, "there was evening and there was morning," etc. Now are you absolutely sure of this? Yes. Are you sure that no verses before verse 1:3 and no verses after 1:5 should be included in the account of the first day of creation? Yes, because there is a law of the Author, whereby in these six days of creation they each begin and each end with the same formula. And since the seventh day is not a day of creation, its initial and terminal formulas are variant. Six regular forms of an expression and one variant form, making seven forms, are found elsewhere in this account of creation, and elsewhere in the Bible.

Well, what are you going to do with Gen. 1:1 and Gen. 1:2? They record events in creation and set forth conditions **that are not included** in the account of the six days of creation. What are they then? Gen. 1:1 is an account of **creative work** by God, **that took place BEFORE** the six days of creation. Well, when did that creative work take place? God does not say and nobody knows. How long ago was it, this creation took place, that is recorded in Gen. 1:1? God does not say and nobody knows. It certainly took place **before** the six days of creation, in the dateless past and might have been a very short or a very long period of time. In Gen. 1:1 we have the account of the creation of "the heavens and the earth" by God, and whether it was done in the twinkling of an eye or took millions of years makes little vital difference. If it did, the guesses that scientists and geologists make that it took millions of years to form the different strata **would not conflict** with the Divine record; There is one thing sure, no man saw the job done, and no man can tell how the work was done. God was there when creation was performed and here records the facts. We can rest assured that His record will stand forever.

Skeptics and enemies have blasted at this rock of the account of creation for centuries, and have not been able to break loose the tiniest sliver of stone. No scientist, scholar or human being, apart from God, ever has existed or ever will exist, who can do anything more than speculate or theorize (guess) as to how or when creation was performed. And these theories (guesses) even when supported by the most clever arguments from observations or processes in nature may be the farthest away from the actual facts that could be possible, because carnal man confines his reasoning to his supposed knowledge of nature and excludes Deity, whereas, **nature did not exist until after creation was accomplished. Nature is simply one of the products of creation and not the cause of creation. Creation proceeded from causes prior to nature's existence and unknown to man**, except by revelation. And that cause was God. "In the beginning God created." "In the beginning," **precedes** the existence of nature. The usual **deductions of geology, astronomy and biology, etc., as to the cause of the creation of the heavens and the earth and life are, therefore, built on wrong premises; they are without any proper foundation and are therefore, wrong.** God created nature and nature creates nothing. And nature certainly does not create itself. To attempt to set forth nature as a creator is sheer folly and that is exactly what science has been attempting to do for years. The "nebular hypothesis" is an illustration. God, in creation, produced nature and in nature man saw the nebular phenomenon and then formed a theory called the "nebular hypothesis" and in this theory, man puts nature to work at "creating" and doing that which the God and Creator of nature alone can do. And the theory has been weighed and found wanting. What it lacks to make it "work" is God as Creator. And no theory of the creation of the heavens and the earth and life that leaves God out of His rightful place as Creator ever will "work." The God and Creator of nature is discarded and dishonored by man.

To originate by creation ("bara") is a **"distinctly divine act"** and nature is **not** divine. Nature is the creature of Deity. Deity has not delegated to any of His creatures the sovereign power to create. And no wonder this unsound, absurd effort of science to discard God as a Creator and substitute nature drove Lord Kelvin, at the end of fifty-five years of faithful service to science to exclaim that all his efforts to advance science

could be summed up in one word, and that word was "failure." God is the Creator, not nature. **Shipwrecked theories by the thousand, testify to this truth, and to the folly of present scientific methods.** Man cannot grapple with, nor understand but precious few of the tiniest details of nature. And for men with such limited minds to set themselves up to the rest of mankind as being able to grapple with the infinite problem of creation and tell the plebeians all about when and how it happened, is sheer nonsense. Come down to earth, you deceivers. You don't know and never will know; you are simply beating the air. This primordial germ, molecular action, fiery cloud, spontaneous generation, nebular hypothesis and innumerable other fantastic guesses are all weighed and found wanting, and are simply efforts to explain creation by setting nature up as a Creator. All thru the past years this kind of bunc has been offered man in place of God's revelation. These latest guesses are passing away, and new ones more fantastic and untrue will be hatched by "scholars" and "scientists" and palmed off on an indifferent public, who let a handful of folks do their thinking for them. As a matter of fact, science has had but few great minds. A great mind would largely confine itself to facts when making statements, and stop where facts stop. "God created the heavens and the earth." That includes you. God has to be reckoned with, and the thing for you to do is to prepare to meet God; and if some Bibleless, Christless, "pseudo-scholars" and "scientists" want to go to hell, let them go.

THE BIBLE BEGINS WHERE GOD BEGAN

"In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth." This is all man ever has known or ever will know about it in this world. Man's manufactured accounts of creation begin with a nebular hypothesis, matter, a primal life cell, etc., but the Bible begins where God began, and that is, "In the beginning"; and this is the time when, as yet, there was no matter, no life cell and no nature in existence. And "In the beginning" is the only place to begin to study the subject of creation and life. Let the scientist beat this method if he can. Without using God's account of creation as a model, science couldn't write an account of creation that would stand fifty years. Its theories and guesses would be torn down by discovered facts before the fifty years got a good start. We believe that over eighty percent of the statements made by science, concerning the creation of the heavens and the earth and life, are not based on facts nor to be depended upon.

There are noble men who have given their lives to science and rendered invaluable service to the world, but there are many scientists who have cursed the world with humbug and heresy. "What shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world and lose his own soul?"

THE BIBLE

The Bible is not a text-book on geology, biology, astronomy, nor any other science. It is not intended to tell one how the sun, the moon and the stars go, nor how they maintain their position in space, in balance exquisite, or circle about their appointed orbits in unity and regularity of time. As one has said, the Bible is not intended to tell man how the heavens go, but to tell man how to go to heaven. It deals with God and man, and their relationship one to the other.

The Bible is not responsible for the misrepresentations made about it by friend and foe. If the Bible was a thousandth part as crooked as its enemies represent it to be, it wouldn't stand one year. No man-made

book has ever withstood a hundredth part of the attacks that have been made against the Bible. No book in all the world has anything like the circulation that the Bible has. Why? Explain it—if it's not God's Word. You can't. Counterfeits don't maintain an ever increasing circulation for nineteen hundred to thirty-four hundred years. The Bible has demonstrated that it is "**the Word of God**" and the Scripture which "cannot be broken." God's Word condemns sinful lives and in rebellion they resent it. Man sets God aside and worships the creature (nature) instead of the Creator. The man-made god is the "cell," "protoplasm," "jelly-fish" and "monkey." It's simply a rejection of God and His Word, and is idolatry and adultery in a seductive form.

The Bible revelation concerning creation is a subject so vast that even its details are incomprehensible to the mind of man. To illustrate: The tiniest seed is infinitely smaller than the earth, and some smaller than the universe, yet science cannot produce a single seed, much less solve the problem of its life. And since science is unable to solve the life problem of the tiniest seed, we will just give them a good long recess, extending over several geological ages, before bothering science for their explanation of the creation of the universe and the life problem of man. Away with this evolution buncology!

The elm tree, in a life-time is said to produce one and a half-billions of seeds, and from this vast number of seeds there never has been and never will be a solitary reproduction into another species. It's always an elm tree, "after its kind," and hundreds of thousands of elm trees and countless millions of other kinds of plant life are doing this same thing, yearly, yet there is never a solitary change of species. If evolution were a fact it would appear in numberless places out of all these chances. All nature (as well as God's Word) testifies that the evolutionist, who claims that one species has transmuted into another, is the commonest kind of a prevaricator.

Thousands and thousands of animalcules, with complete and perfected bodies, are found in a single drop of water. Science is unable to reproduce a single one of these tiny creatures, and its life is a mystery to the sages of science. "God created"—that explains it. Science cannot. Let us iron out some of these problems, before we seriously undertake to figure in detail, exactly how the universe was all made. Take an unlovely looking rag-weed, place its flower under the microscope—its delicate, matchless perfection speaks of God as Creator, and causes one to bow in reverence. Under a microscope, examine anything man does, and it's full of holes and imperfections, like an old worn-out coat, just as are man's efforts to explain creation and life without God.

Genesis 1:1

"**In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.**" This is one of the most **profound** sentences ever in language. It is one of the most **inclusive** sentences ever published. It is one of the most **exclusive** sentences ever written. In the Hebrew it is composed of seven words, which proclaim its completeness.

(1) It denies **atheism** and **agnosticism** and as naturally assumes God's existence, as tho all creation were intuitively aware of it; even "the stars forever singing as they shine, the hand that made us is Divine." W. J. Bryan says: "His secretary sent me a speech which quoted Colonel Ingersoll as follows: 'I do not say that there is no God; I simply say I do not know. I do not say that there is no life beyond the grave; I simply say I do not know'."

(2) It denies **polytheism** and asserts God is a Unit, and has created a universe. Uni, meaning one; verse, to turn; uni-verse, one turn—well named. We find the earth and all celestial bodies in one grand magnificent rotation, under one government; and even find the elements of the celestial bodies are the same material as the elements of the earth; the dust of the stars, sun and earth being the same. The **world** declares there is one God, and the Word of God confirms this.

(3) It denies **materialism** and asserts that matter had a beginning, created by God. This assumes that it will have an end, which Scripture sets forth as a future event (Matt. 5:25; Rev. 21:1-6). Science, here, confirms revelation. "The doctrine of the-homogeneous-ness of matter is the antithesis of materialism" ("Q.E.D." by Price).

(4) It denies **pantheism**, and assumes and asserts the existence of God before the existence of anything else. "The facts of radio-activity very positively forbid the past eternity of matter" ("Q.E.D." by Price).

(5) It denies **fatalism**, as it ascribes freedom to the Godhead or governing Head. Whosoever will, let him come (Matt. 11:28-30).

(6) It denies **accident** in its placement, for in the thousands of verses in God's Word this is the only one properly fitted as the sentence to introduce a revelation from God to man.

(7) It denies **chance**, because of a marvelous, inherent numeric design in the Hebrew sentence itself. Seven is God's number expressive of covenanted, redemptive relationships, and this sentence's seven words attest that God is its Author; and that it introduces the Book of Redemption.

Our heavenly Father originally gave the Old Testament to mankind in the Hebrew language and the New Testament in the Greek. "The languages of the Bible, Hebrew and Greek, have no separate signs for numbers like our figures 1, 2, 3, etc." (Dr. Ivan Panin). Instead of a number system like ours, the first letter of both the Greek and the Hebrew alphabets stood for the number 1, the second letter for the number 2, the third letter for the number 3, etc. Now suppose you had before you a page of an original Hebrew or Greek manuscript of one of the prophets of God. Look at it one way and it would be a page of letters and words, but look at it another way and it would be a page of numbers and numeric values. Look at it as "numbers and numeric values" and **marvelous, complicated, numeric designs are found**. It is impossible for man to duplicate them by writing in Hebrew or Greek. These numeric designs will convince an honest, unprejudiced judge that the Bible is absolutely what it is represented to be, the inspired Word of God.

Dr. Ivan Panin says:

"Each letter is also a number, called its Numeric Value. The sum of the Numeric Values of its letters is the Numeric Value of the word of which it is made up. Each Hebrew or Greek word is thus a sum in arithmetic as well as a word. Thus the Hebrew **Jehovah** has 26 for its Numeric Value; the Greek **Iesous**, Jesus, has 888." (Panin).

NUMERICS OF GEN 1:1, "In [the] beginning God created the heavens and the earth.

The number of words in this the first verse of the Bible (in the original Hebrew) is—seven (Feature 1). These 7 words have 28 letters, or 4 sevens (Feature 2). And these 28 letters are thus divided between the two from the necessity of the case unequal halves of the seven words: the first three words have 14 letters, or 2 sevens; and the last four have also 14 (Feature 3). And these last four words are in their turn subdivided thus: the fourth and fifth words have seven letters, the sixth and seventh have also 7 (Feature 4). The three nouns comprising the subject of the

sentence, **God**, and the objects of the sentence, **heaven, earth**, have 14 letters, or 2 sevens: leaving for the other four words also 14 of (Feature 5). The numeric value of the first and last letters of each of the 7 words of the verse is 1393, or 199 sevens (Feature 6): divided in their turn thus: the first letter of the first word and the last of the third have 42, or 6 sevens; the first of the fourth word and the last of the seventh have 91, or 13 sevens (Feature 7); leaving for the others 1260, or 180 sevens (Feature 8).

In an expansion of this tract the number of these numeric Features is shown to be several times larger (see Tract No. 3 of this Series). Here only what is now presented need be considered.

There are then in this verse of only 7 words 8 features of sevens, together with three distinct divisions of 7 into sets of 3 and 4. They are here either by design or a mere coincidence.

If the latter, the chance for it is at most one in seven multiplied by itself eight times, or one in 5,764,801, one in nearly six millions. Actually, however, the chance is much smaller.

Now **there is not a paragraph in the whole Bible** that is not constructed on a similar mathematical plan. But its 66 books were written by some 33 different writers centuries apart. **The Bible can thus easily be shown to be ¶absolutely verbally inspired in every letter of the original text as NO MAN OR SET OF MEN COULD HAVE POSSIBLY WRITTEN THUS.**" (Dr. Ivan Panin).

The wrong placement of letters or words, in Hebrew or Greek copies from the original Hebrew and Greek manuscripts of the prophets would disturb the inherent numeric design. Replace the letter or word, to its original position and its numeric design is restored and you have the identical text of the original manuscripts of the prophets. Jesus Christ may have had this in mind when He said, "One jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled" (Matt. 5:18.) See pp. 183-5.

It is useless to cast such facts as these aside with a contemptuous remark, "mystic figures." See pp. 180-185. It is now known that, in the Hebrew and the Greek, the Bible is fairly alive with marvelous, numeric designs, that no human being can duplicate. These designs are there by deliberate intention or accident, and the evidence that they are there by design is overwhelming. It is useless to ignore facts. Give the problem an honest, unprejudiced investigation and you will be amazed. Don't trifle with the Bible. It is "the Word of God." Who says so? God says so.

"The very hairs of your head are **all numbered**. So said Jesus. He was not trifling. Your very hairs are counted (arithmeo). It is the very word from which our English word arithmetic comes. If God counts the hairs on our heads, he may count the words of his Scripture amanuenses, and guide them to interesting combinations of numbers. . . .

"God counts the petals in the springtime, the sides of the honey-bee's cell in the summer, the lines of frost on the window pane in the autumn and the angles of the snowflake in the winter. . . .

"The leaves of the tree encircle the stem with a **certain number**; the elements in chemical action **unite or divide by count**; the radius vector of the planet describes equal areas in equal times. Look where you will, if we find God at work, we find Him counting. He is the Great

¶The Inspiration of the Scriptures Scientifically Demonstrated: being a Letter to the Sun newspaper, New York City, in answer to a challenge therein. To be obtained at cost from the Asher Publishing Company (who on their own initiative have undertaken its publication), 235 E. 7th Street, St. Paul, Minnesota, U. S. A. Leaflet Folder, 8 pages; 9 cents a dozen, 65 cents a 100.

Arithmetician. He is counting, ever counting; the days the egg must be warmed to life, the days the fever must heat toward death, and the very pulse beats of the patient, as he sinks into the condition where there is no counting. . . . He is the Mighty One who 'hath **measured** the waters in the hollow of his hand, and **meted** out the heaven with a **span**, and comprehended the dust of the earth in a **measure**, and **weighed** the mountains in **scales**, and the hills in a **balance**.' . . .

(Dr. Ivan Panin) "is eminently open and scientific. . . . He bases all on observed facts. . . . Of these facts he asks the most careful examination. . . . "Jesus said, 'Till heaven and earth pass away one jot or one tittle shall in nowise pass away from the law till all things be accomplished.' He was speaking of the Old Testament. If its least letter was so important, we may not be afraid to count the New Testament. 'Open thou mine eyes, that I may behold wondrous things out of thy law' " (Dr. J. J. Summerbell, pp. 14-18, in "Scientific Demonstration of the Inspiration of the Scriptures").

Dr. Daniel B. Turney in the "Herald of Gospel Liberty" says, . . . "The arithmography of Scripture is the death warrant of the theory of the destructive critics. The numerics worked out by Ivan Panin are fatal to the foes of verbal inspiration, and are invulnerable. My own examinations of the arithmography of Scripture sustain so emphatically

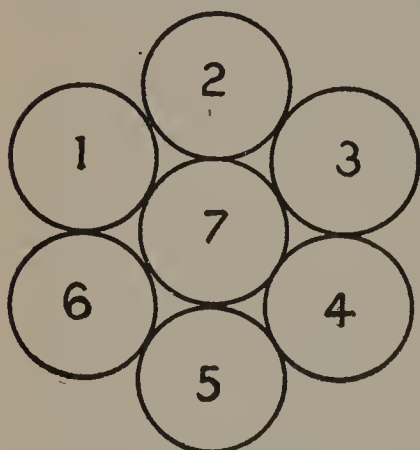


Fig. 1
The Round Number Seven

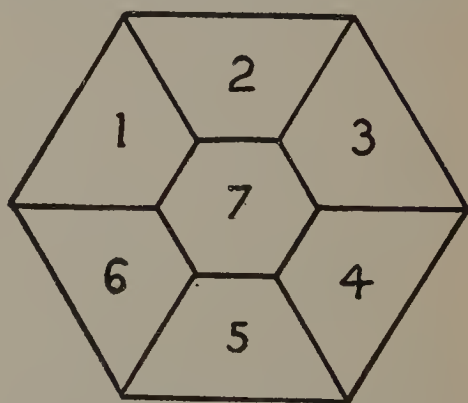


Fig. 2
Illustration of Significance of Number Seven

the claims and conclusions of Ivan Panin, that I take pleasure in openly commending his work, as **presenting facts and evidences which no destructive critic can successfully face**. A sincere effort to find numerics in Homer's Iliad proved unsuccessful; but as soon as I tried 3 John, my labors were rewarded abundantly. I took up this book because it is short; and in Panin's writings I had not seen it discussed. My investigation began therefore with as little to guide me as in the case of the Iliad, but the result was so perfect a scheme of numerics that **I have not a shadow of doubt as to the truth of Ivan Panin's theory**. . . .

"Neither the Greek nor the Hebrew writers were capable of forming such a design" (Dr. Turney).

"The accompanying diagram of the round number seven shows what it symbolizes."

(1) "The six external bands bound and bind the central one," which in turn binds them.

(2) See "The Token of Noah's Covenant," Vol. 2 of this work. There it is seen that when God made oath-bound covenants with Abraham and

David to bring the Redeemer into the world thru them, what God literally did was to "seven" Himself, "as if by repeating a declaration seven times." Hence, seven is the number expressing or symbolic of covenanted, redemptive relationships.

"The Hebrew word translated 'seven' means literally 'to bind into a bundle,' and as such is the number of oath-bound covenant relationship, as can be clearly discerned from the divinely inspired interpretation of its significance found in the twenty-first chapter of Genesis. The Hebrew word 'seven' is 'sheva.' This is also the word everywhere used in the Old Testament for 'swear,' or 'to bind with an oath,' the man thus binding himself being said to **seven** himself" (Dr. E. J. Pace, in "The Law of the Octave," p. 21).

"And said, By myself have I **sworn**, saith the Lord, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son,

That in blessing I will bless thee, and in multiplying I will multiply thy seed as the stars of the heaven, and as the sand which is upon the sea shore; and thy seed shall possess the gate of his enemies;

And **in thy seed** shall all the nations of the earth be blessed; because thou hast obeyed my voice."

"Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to **thy seed, which is Christ**" (Gen. 22:16-18; Gal. 3:16).

"I have made a covenant with my chosen, I have **sworn** unto David my servant,

Thy **seed** will I establish for ever, and build up thy throne to all generations. Selah."

"Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the **seed** of David according to the flesh" (Ps. 89:3-4; Rom. 1:3).

God **swore** or bound Himself by oath to both Abraham and to David to bring the Christ or Redeemer into the world, as a descendant or "**seed**" of them. The Hebrew equivalent for the English word "sworn" in the preceding Scriptures literally means "to seven oneself," "**as if by repeating a declaration seven times.**" Then in the Hebrew, what God literally did was to "seven Himself" to bring the Redeemer into the world as seed of Abraham and seed of David. These Hebrews, of course, understood this significance of seven. The first verse of the first book of the New Testament records that God was faithful to this (oath or) **sevening**



Fig. 3—"Hast Thou Entered into the Treasures of the Snow?"—Job 38:22.



of Himself, and we read, "The book of the generation of Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham" (Matt. 1:1).

(3) Note (Fig. 1), the trinities in these seven bands when bound in a bundle. See 1, 7, 4. See 2, 7, 5. See 3, 7, 6.

"Let the reader imagine, if he can, what countless billions of snowflakes can fall during one short hour upon a single acre of ground, and then reflect that each crystal is a distinct creation of God, possessing an individuality all its own and treasures of artistic design little dreamed of, until the invention of the microscope and the camera enabled man to see and permanently hold the record of these fleeting forms of loveliness. . . . each flake is the outgrowth in six directions of an original central nucleus. This central nucleus, always present, binds, as it were, the sixfold ramification into a unity, thus giving us the number seven. (Figure 1.)"

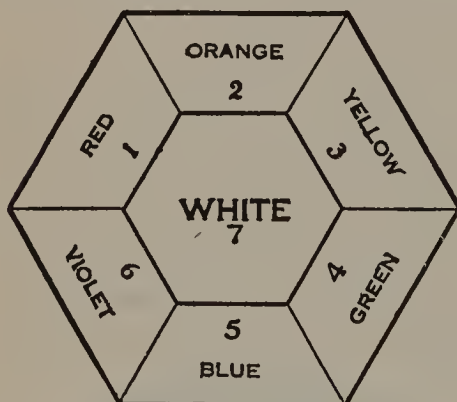


Fig. 4—The Colors of the Spectrum.

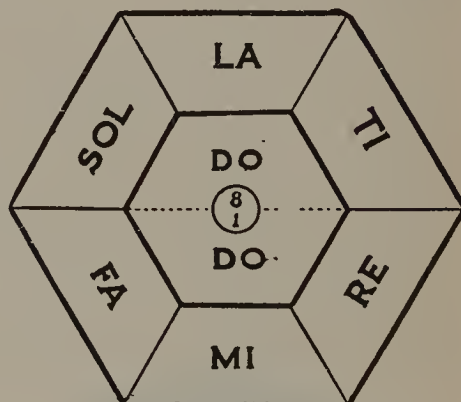


Fig. 5—The Notes of the Scale.

"A beam of sunlight passes through the beveled edge of a piece of glass, and the result is the breaking up of that beam of white light into its constituent elements (of various colors) of varying wave lengths, long waves at the top, short waves at the bottom. . . (See its "constituent elements" illustrated by the colors of Fig. 4.)

The complement of a color is that color which when united with it produces white in the case of light, or neutral gray in the case of pigments. Thus crimson (red) has for its complement green, vermilion's (orange) complement is sky-blue, while violet and yellow complement each other (Please note (Fig. 4) the location of these complementary colors.)

A snow-crystal, we are told, is made of myriads of infinitesimal prisms of ice, and these are blue, red, green, and violet, etc., from the blending of which colors snow gets its brilliant whiteness . . . Both light and sound are due to vibrations, or wave-pulsations."

(All music is based on the "diatonic scale" beginning with "Do" and ending with "Do." It consists of 7 tones; six whole tones and two half tones.)

"The termini of the octave which encompass the range of its varied ratios of vibration are do and do, the latter of which, as explained above, containing the lower one, because it vibrates twice as fast. It takes a practiced ear to detect the two notes that reverberate when a perfect octave is struck; they vibrate as one. The one outstanding difference, then, between the heptad of color and the octave of sound as we have arranged them is that in the case of the color heptad this central nucleus is an undivided unity, whereas with the octave of sound this nucleus is divided into halves; but the two, while distinct, are nevertheless in unison and therefore to all intents and purposes one." (Fig. 3, 4, 5 and 6 with material in quotations are from Dr. E. J. Pace's "Law of the Octave.")

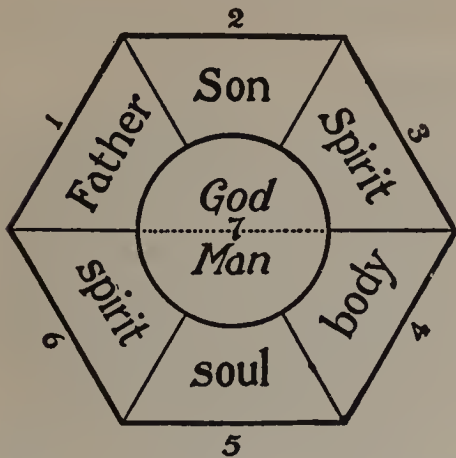


Fig. 6—The Significance of the Number Seven.



Fig. 7—"Having Made Peace Through the Blood of His Cross."

The Father (See Fig. 6), provides for man's body (See Fig. 4, p. 146, red is the complement of green). The Son (See Fig. 6), redeems a man's soul (See Fig. 4, orange, the complement of blue). The Spirit (See Fig. 6), guides a man's spirit (See Fig. 4, yellow, the complement of violet). God and man can meet in peace and unity thru the God-man, Christ Jesus, Who "made peace (harmony, music) through the blood of His cross." See Fig. 6, 7. Father, Son and Holy Spirit (the triune God) redeem the body, soul and spirit of man at the cross. There they can meet in peace and are bound into a bundle: "That they all may be **one**; as thou, Father, art in me and I in thee, that they also may be **one** in us" (Jno. 17:21).

That **light** (God is Light, Christ is "the Light of the World"); **snow** ("Though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow"); **the rainbow** ["This (the rainbow) is the token of the covenant which I make between me and you" Gen. 9:12], are all natural phenomena, marvelously inter-related and **used significantly in Scripture**, is set forth under the topic "The Token of Noah's Covenant," Vol. 2 of this work. There attention is called to the fact that light breaks up into the colors of the rainbow and that snow is made up of infinitesimal prisms of ice, whose colors are those of the rainbow and when blended make light or white. "Holy, holy, holy Lord God Almighty." Redemption looks forward to the time when all will be holy (white) in God's universe. When we see these things we see something of "**the treasures of the snow**" (Job 38:22; Isa. 1:18).

In this work, it is necessary to present these numeric and natural truths in a fragmentary form. The numeric designs of Scripture powerfully confirm its verbal inspiration.

GOD

"In the beginning **God**." See "Trinity of God, Christ as God and the Creator," pp. 8, 280. Attributes of God of Genesis 1:1: God is Spirit, infinite, eternal and unchangeable in wisdom, power, goodness, justice, holiness, truth and love. We never see the soul of man, simply the house or body in which man lives. Man manifests himself thru this body. We never see God, but everywhere God is manifest. Of Himself, He said, "I fill heaven and earth."

GOD "BARA" THE HEAVENS AND THE EARTH

As we have seen, "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth" (includes their contents) (1:1). "Thou sendest forth thy Spirit,

they are created" (Ps. 104:30). "He commanded, and they were created" (Ps. 148:5).

"AND IT WAS SO"

Recurring to the six days of creation, and the objects created, we find the command, "And God said" was spoken **ten** times by the pre-incarnate Word, and the mighty Holy Spirit executed or embodied all the commands, except one. An examination will show that two of the commands, "And God said" were followed by distinct creative or "bara" acts. In none of the other instances of this account of the six days of creation is it recorded, that God "bara" or originated anything as "absolutely new" **on "the day"** in which the subject is mentioned. Let us group these in slightly changed order, for the purpose of analysis.

(1) "And God said, . . . light, . . . **and there was light**" (Gen. 1:3).

(2) "And God said, . . . firmament, **and it was so**" (Gen. 1:6, 7).

(3) "And God said, . . . waters, . . . dry land, . . . **and it was so**" (Gen. 1:9).

(4) "And God said, . . . grass, herbs, **and it was so**" (Gen. 1:11).

(5) "And God said, . . . lights (sun), **and it was so**" (Gen. 1:14, 15).

(6) "And God said, . . . cattle, . . . beasts, . . . **and it was so**" (Gen. 1:24).

(7) "And God said, . . . food for all flesh, . . . **and it was so**" (Gen. 1:29, 30).

It will be noticed, that in these seven instances, it is not recorded that God "bara" or created these objects at this particular time. This does not mean that God did not create these things at any time. "All things were made by Him; and without Him was not anything made that was made" (Jno. 1:3). This matter is set forth under the headings, "Some Non-'Bara' yet Formative Acts or Mandates of God" and "The Sixth Day." See pp. 137, 176. The thing that is of **great importance** is the fact that **seven** of the ten commands, beginning with "And God said," are followed by the formula, "**and it was so.**" (Six times the regular form, "and it was so" occurs, and once the variant form, "and there was light.") It will be remembered that this was true of the seven days of creation. There were six regular formulas and one variant. Also, in Gen. 1:1-2:3 the expression, "And God saw that it was good" occurs seven times; six times regular and once in the variant form, "And God saw . . . it was **very good.**"

In the New Testament, the expression, "God of Peace" occurs just seven times; six times it is, "God of Peace" and once the variant form, "Lord of Peace." Seven is God's number expressive of covenanted, redemptive relationships, and so it is fitting that God's Word should contain the expression, "God of Peace" just seven times and the variant form be "Lord of Peace," for the Lord made "peace through the blood of His cross" (Col. 1:20). See Fig. 7, p. 147. Now the thing that we desire out of all of this, is to add additional, convincing proof that the **first day** of creation, begins at Gen. 1:3 and that **the acts of the first day are not creative** or "bara" acts. In all of the above seven instances where the formula, "and it was so" occurs, **the act which precedes it is never** a distinctly creative act. The word "bara" is not used. The

thing had a creation (origination as an absolutely new thing) on some former occasion, and at this particular time upon intervention by God, it expressed itself differently or was modified or fitted for or appeared for God's purpose. This is the law within this cycle of seven. This is illustrated in Gen. 1:9, "And God said, Let . . . waters . . . be gathered together . . . and . . . dry land appear; and it was so." The word "bara" is not used, so no creative act was performed on the third day. In order for the dry land to "**appear**" it necessarily **existed** before the third day. It was created at the time of Gen. 1:1.

The formula, "And it was so" in these seven places we are examining, **always refers back to the command, "And God said" which immediately precedes it.** In this case the thing God commanded to appear was dry land. God did not need to create water or land on this day for they were already in existence. What God desired and accomplished was the dividing or separating of the land and "seas." Therefore, we see that the expression, "and it was so," refers to **nothing further back** than the command, "And God said" which immediately precedes it. Upon careful examination of these seven peculiar passages we are considering, it will be found that this same thing, in substance, is true in each case. Let us apply this law to the account of the first day of creation (Gen. 1:3-5). The variant "and there was light" occurs as **the last clause** of 1:3. "And there was light" would refer back to the first command, "And God said" which precedes it. And it would refer to **nothing further back** than the first "And God said" which precedes it. We find that the command, "And God said" which precedes the expression "and there was light" occurs as the **first clause** of this same verse; i. e., 1:3. **Therefore, the record of the first day of creation does not go further back than (but starts at) the first clause of 1:3. Therefore, Gen. 1:1 is the record of a creative act at a time preceding the first of the six days of creation.** And Gen. 1:2 describes a condition of the world **prior** to the first day of creation. This proof as to where the account of the first day of creation begins, #combined with the former proof that each of the six days of creation begins with the formula, "And God said" and ends with the formula, "and there was evening and there was morning," etc., should put an end to any claim that Gen. 1:1 or Gen. 1:2 is any part of the record of the first day of creation or any part of the record of the six days of creation. This proof is strengthened by the fact that **in none of these seven cases** we are examining is there a use of the word "bara"; i. e., they do not record distinct, initial appearance of "the absolutely new." See "The Six Days of Creation," pp. 169-180. This would necessitate their "origination as the absolutely new" **at a prior time.** Gen. 1:1, at a time prior to the six days of creation, accounts for most of these creations, and Gen. 1:21; 1:27, completes the creative program. In Gen. 1:3-5, on the first day, it was not necessary to "bara" light. Light was evidently "created" at the time of Gen. 1:1. In Gen. 1:3-5, a Divine act was to "divide the light from the darkness." God divided the land from the water on the third day.

#Several years ago while searching for numeric design in the account of Creation, the author saw both of these numeric designs involved in this subject. He also saw that these numeric designs determined absolutely just where the account of "the first day" begins. God has His two witnesses. Many wonderful truths of the Bible are revealed by the numerics of Scripture. "Search the Scriptures." They are "the Word of God." God has preserved for Himself, His "Word."

GOD COMMANDED AND HE CREATED

(8) "And God said, . . . (fish and fowl) . . . and God **created**" fish and fowl (Gen. 1:20, 21). See the exact words of the Scripture.

(9) "And God said . . . man . . . so God **created** man" (Gen. 1:26, 27).

In (8) and (9), we have recorded the only two distinctly "bara" or creative acts, that took place in the six days. You will notice they are each introduced by the formula, "And God said" but **they are not followed** by the formula, "and it was so." We thus see additional proof of a law in this record of creation, whereby fiats or acts in the six days which are not distinctly creative (bara) are followed by the formula, "and it was so" or its variant. But acts that are distinctly creative as in the cases of (8) and (9) **are not followed** by this formula. This is very important, as we shall see as we proceed.

GOD COMMANDED AND MAN FAILED

(10) "**And God said** unto them (the man and his wife) (1) be fruitful, (2) and multiply, (3) and replenish the earth, (4) and subdue it; (5) and have dominion over the fish of the sea, (6) and over the birds of the heavens, (7) and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth" (Gen. 1:28).

Now, of all the ten commands or "And God said's," this one alone was left for man's **seven-fold** enactment. It will be noticed that after this, "And God said" it is not **recorded** that anything was "created," and **neither** is it recorded that, "and it was so." This also is of great significance, for it is **prophetic of man's failure and fall**, as recorded in the third chapter of Genesis. These things are not mere chance, but deliberate design and testify of a divine Author. If men would take time to study and know the Bible they would find that it is the most marvelous Book in all the world. They would be convinced beyond a reasonable doubt that it is absolutely "the Word of God."

The fact that **only two things** are recorded as being "created" in this six days' period is strong evidence toward proving that Gen. 1:1 was a finished heaven and earth, and that Gen. 1:2 describes an earth under severe judgment, and Gen. 1:3-2:3 describes this earth in a period of six days of reconstruction and creation.

IT WAS JUDGMENT, NOT CHAOS

(1) We find that God "created" on three occasions. See p. 136. When God created fish and fowl it was a finished work. When God created man it was a finished work. Since the **last two** creative acts were finished works, we conclude the **first** creative act was a finished work. So "**the heavens and the earth**" that God records as created in Gen. 1:1 was a finished, organized work.

(2) "And the earth was waste and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep; and the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters" (Gen. 1:2). This does not read like the description of an organized, finished earth. Some believe Gen. 1:1 was an unorganized, unfinished work and that Gen. 1:2 describes its chaotic condition preparatory to arranging and fitting the earth as a home for man. We believe the condition of Gen. 1:2 developed **after** the condition described in Gen. 1:1 and was the result of judgment on sin. Our first reason for holding this view has been assigned above in (1).

In Gen. 1:2 the two Hebrew words that are found together and translated into the English equivalent "waste and void" or "without form

and void" are only found together in three places in the Bible, Gen. 1:2; Isa. 34:11 and Jer. 4:23-28. The same two Hebrew words in Gen. 1:2 that are translated "waste and void," in Isa. 34:11 are translated "confusion" and "emptiness"; and in Jer. 4:23-28 (Am. Ver.) they are translated "waste and void" as in the American Version of Genesis 1:2.

"I beheld the earth, and, lo, it was **waste and void**; and the heavens, and they had no light. I beheld the mountains, and, lo, they trembled, and all the hills moved to and fro. I beheld, and, lo, there was no man, and all the birds of the heavens were fled. I beheld, and, lo, the fruitful field was a wilderness, and all the cities thereof were broken down at the presence of Jehovah, and before his **fierce anger**. For thus saith Jehovah, The whole land shall be a desolation; yet will I not make a full end. For this shall the earth mourn, and the **heavens above be black**; because I have spoken it, I have purposed it, and I have not repented, neither will I turn back from it" (Jer. 4:23-28).

"But the cormorant and the bittern shall possess it; the owl also and the raven shall dwell in it; and he shall stretch out upon it the line of **confusion**, and the stones of **emptiness**" (Isa. 34:11).

In these two Scriptures where we find "tohu" and "bohu" translated "confusion" and "emptiness" and "waste and void," they are descriptions of the earth after God strikes in judgment on sin. **Since "tohu" and "bohu," when appearing together in these two cases, describe the condition on the earth as the result of judgment on sin we therefore, reason that their use together in Gen. 1:2 (together with corroborating evidence), describes the earth's condition as a result of judgment against sin.**

(3) The fact that in Gen. 1:2 the earth, **alone**, and not the heavens, is said to have become "waste and void" indicates judgment and not chaos, and that Gen. 1:1 was at first an organized and finished work. A close reading of Gen. 2:4 confirms the opinion that Gen. 1:1 was a finished work and that Gen. 1:2 occurring, made it necessary to reconstruct the earth, as in Gen. 1:3-2:3.

(4) "God himself . . . **the earth** . . . he created it not **in vain**, he formed it to be inhabited" (Isa. 45:18). "Created it not in vain"—that is, not a waste, a desolation, a desert. The word "tohu" of Gen. 1:2 translated "without form" or "waste" is the same word that, in Isa. 45:18 is translated "in vain." The word "create" in Gen. 1:1, is the same as the word "create" in Isa. 45:18. Therefore, God says (In Isa. 45:18) that **He did not create** (Gen. 1:1) the earth "**without form**" or a "**waste**." Therefore, **Gen. 1:1 was a finished heavens and earth.**

(5) In Scripture, when the terms, "the heavens and the earth" are used together (unless judgment is stated or implied), they refer to an organized, finished heaven and earth.

(6) Science accepts this truth: "No life except from life." It appears that plant life is not recorded as distinctly "created" on the third day. It seems to have been carried over the judgment period (Gen. 1:2), from Gen. 1:1 to the third day. See "Third Day." This would confirm that Gen. 1:1 was not chaos, but an orderly earth on which there was plant life. Scripture states that God created "all things" (includes plant life). See "The Sixth Day," pp. 176-180.

- (7) When God made light it was not chaos.
- When God made firmament it was not chaos.
- When God made seas it was not chaos.
- When God made dry land it was not chaos.

When God made plants it was not chaos.

When God created fish and fowl it was not chaos.

When God created man it was not chaos.

Therefore, when "God created the heavens and the earth," it was not chaos.

(8) See "Cause of Judgment of Genesis 1:2," pp. 166-167.

THE EARTH PASSED THRU JUDGMENT

"Discoveries in geology, making it probable that the earth has experienced a number of convulsions, probably thousands of years distant from each other, . . . and given a new aspect to the globe. . . ." (Prescott's "History of Mexico," p. 65, note).

Referring to geological data, Price says, "There has obviously been a great world catastrophe" ("Q. E. D.").

"The great fossil cemeteries show that the living creatures fell in serried ranks, overtaken by cataclysms, in every act of life" (Alex Patterson).

"Immediately prior to the human period, the earth did pass thru the greatest convulsion which it had ever experienced" (Jamieson's "Genesis," p. 15).

Early geology held a complete destruction of **all living things on earth** at the close of the Paleozoic era. This period was followed by a decided change in terrestrial vegetation; remarkable shiftings of geographic outlines. "Permian, the period of problems" for the geologist—"between the Permian fossils of land animals and upper Triassic fossils, . . . there is a **great thickness** of red sandstone, **barren** of fossils. The upper Triassic fauna **does not appear to have descended** from the Permian." (Chamberlin and Salisbury's "College Geology.") (Then the Permian fauna were not evolved from the Triassic fauna. Where did this life necessarily come from then? "God created.")

- | | | |
|----------------------------|---|---|
| Earth was or became | } | 1. "waste and void" (Gen. 1:2; Jer. 4:23-27). |
| | | 2. "darkness" (Gen. 1:2). |
| | | 3. "waters over all the earth" (Gen. 1:2-10). |

In Gen. 1 . . . "and" does not indicate any necessary connection between the sentences it unites . . . "and" . . . is sometimes used in an adversative sense for "but" (Jamieson). "And" is the word with which each of the accounts of the six days of creation begins and implies no necessary connection with the account of the day before. "And" in Gen. 1:3, therefore, implies no necessary connection to Gen. 1:1-2.

"Was" in Gen. 1:2 and some twenty other places in Gen. 1:1-2:3 is used as the equivalent of "became" (Jamieson). "And God said: let there be light, and there (became or) was light."

In Gen. 1:1 we had an orderly, finished "heavens and earth," but in Gen. 1:2, the earth became (1) "waste and void," (2) "darkness" (3) and all was covered with water.

ALL THREE INDICATE JUDGMENT

Where we find the conditons of Gen. 1:2 in other places in God's word, we find them associated with sin and judgment. "Waste and void," as has been shown when they occur together in Scripture, refer to judgment against sin.

Only two places in the Bible do we find the earth under a flood of water; in Gen. 1:2 and in the account of the Flood (Gen. 6-9:17). At

the Flood "every imagination of man's heart was only evil continually." "The earth was corrupt before God." God struck in judgment on sin. Death, waste, waters, and a dark outlook covered the earth. **It all occurred in a short time.**

In Ex. 10:21-23, as God struck in judgment on Pharaoh and the Egyptians, there was "**thick darkness** in all the land of Egypt . . . but all the children of Israel had **light** in their dwellings." In Matt. 27:45, when judgment struck on Christ for the sin of the world "from the sixth hour there was **darkness** . . . unto the ninth hour." It was daytime yet God obscured the sun for three hours, and the God who did this could obscure it for 300 years if He so wished. The **blackness of darkness** is reserved forever for the ungodly (Jude 13). At Christ's second advent in "the day of the Lord" when judgment strikes on sin, God says: "I will show wonders in the heavens and in the earth . . . **the sun** shall be turned into **darkness** . . . before the great and terrible day of the Lord" (Joel 2:30-3:16). This prophecy is carried into the New Testament and re-stated by Jesus as an event yet future: "immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the **sun be darkened**, and the **moon shall not give her light**" (Matt. 24:29). And as the future is unveiled by God thru the apostle John: "I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and lo, there was a great earthquake; and the **sun became black** as sackcloth" (Rev. 6:12).

In Scripture, in **all these cases** the obscuring of the sun's face and consequent darkness is set forth as **the result of judgment** on sin. Therefore, we conclude the darkness described in Gen. 1:2 was due to judgment on sin.

The preceding future judgment, with its details, should enable us to understand more clearly the situation that existed in the world in Gen. 1:2, and in Gen. 1:14-19 when the world's sun was set to shining on the fourth day. And just as the sun that now shines, will in the course of the earth's future judgment cease to give her light, so it may be that the sun of Gen. 1:14-19 had formerly given light, but that this light was withdrawn in the judgment of Gen. 1:2, and death followed, for "the wages of sin is death." (Keep these thots in mind in anticipation of the study of the sun, moon and stars of the fourth day of creation.)

Thus we see that in Scripture "waste and void," "darkness," and a world immersed in water, **each speak of judgment on sin.** Collectively and combined, they certainly teach that the contents of Gen. 1:2 describe a condition of judgment on the earth. The description of the earth in judgment in Gen. 1:2 could well be a brief description of the judgment of the Flood (Gen. 5-9). But the judgment of Gen. 1:2 appears to have been more severe in destroying life than the Flood, as we shall see. "In three days from the extinction of the sun there would, in all probability, not be a vestige of animal . . . life on the globe" (Herschel in "F. L. on S. S.").

WRONG VIEWS

The expression, "six days of creation" has caused much trouble, for these were largely six days of reconstruction. Only two distinctly "bara" or creative acts are recorded in the six periods; sentient life (1:21) and man (1:27). "The heavens and the earth" were created in the dateless past (Gen. 1:1). The **length of time** used and the **manner** of their creation is not mentioned. God, in this revelation, has remained silent on both these subjects. We have clearly proven that the record of the "first day," in which no distinctly "bara" or creative act occurred, begins at Gen. 1:3 with the formula, "And God said" and ends at Gen. 1:5 with

the formula, "And there was evening and there was morning." See pp. 138, 148—. Therefore, "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth" refers to a "creative act" and to a "time period" **before** any of the events or any of the time periods of the "six days of creation". Gen. 1:1 may have required billions of years or God might have done it all quickly. Both nature and God's Word teach us that God on different occasions, does things both ways.

Since sentient life and man are the **only** two things recorded as having been created during this six days' period; therefore, the "heavens and the earth" (water, land, etc.) were necessarily "bara" or created at a time prior to this six days' period. This is exactly what the Word of God records as having happened in Gen. 1:1. It is "the Word of God." "The Scripture cannot be broken." How did Moses know? The Creator, "the Lord spake unto Moses" (Jno. 1:1-3, 14; Ex. 12:1).

IT'S THE SAME EARTH

We think the heavens and the earth of Gen. 1:1 with its earth formations and various rock strata inclosing fossil remains, minerals, oil, gas, coal, etc., were practically the same heavens and earth that we now have (see "Strata and Fossils," pp. 157-161); that in Gen. 1:2 the earth of Gen. 1:1 is described as in a condition of judgment; that while the earth was covered with water as described in Gen. 1:2-9, these rock strata inclosing fossil remains were underneath this water in their present positions, except in cases where they have since been dislodged by later crustal movements. Then after Gen. 1:2, God began the six days' period of reconstruction to fit the earth with resources and life adapted to man's use. But **before** this world's foundation was laid, God **then** had in view its being an ultimate home for man, for God then planned a Saviour for sinners:—"Ye were . . . redeemed . . . with the precious **blood** of Christ, as of a lamb **without blemish** and without spot; who verily was **FOREORDAINED BEFORE** the foundation of the world" (1 Pet. 1:18-20).

GOD'S PREPARATION FOR MAN

Gen. 1:2 is believed to describe a period of judgment. Its **length of time** is nowhere mentioned, neither are its details. This period came between the period of Gen. 1:1 and the six days' reconstruction and creation period of Genesis 1:3-2:3. We believe that in the period described in Gen. 1:1-2, God was preparing and storing in the rock strata and elsewhere, minerals, oil, gas, coal, etc. for the future use of man who was ultimately intended to crown creation. Are these strata with their mute fossil remains of plant and animal life, and their by-products, silent witnesses to the infinite pains and care of God, and to the lavish way in which He spent time, plant life and animal life, thru the geologic ages, to fit earth for the ultimate home of ungrateful man?

Let us bow in reverence and worship Him who created man in His own image and who, at such wondrous cost of time and pains and life, fitted for man, this marvelous home with its blue canopied ceiling, its star-studded sky, its moonlit night and sunlit day, its treasures put away in the coal bins, oil mains, and receptacles of the earth; its grass and grain grown plains, its many forests with fruit, fuel and wood for houses, bows and boats; its myriads of varied, exquisitely fashioned and delicately colored flowers, its birds of paradise; its beautiful brooks and refreshing streams; its age-old, rock-ribbed, snow-capped mountains and great wide oceans as they roll away in the distance—all, all prophetic of the far greater program God has for man in that life that is yet to be.

SUGGESTIONS FOR GLACIAL PERIODS

We suggest that during the periods of Gen. 1:2 and the first two or three days of reconstruction when it was simply "light" and before there was any sun as on the "fourth day," may be found the cause of the glacial periods. These events precede the advent of man as possibly the glacial periods do. The darkness would result in great cold. Periods of alternating cold during the time of Gen. 1:2 and the periods of day and night of the first two or three days of creation would suggest periods for the supposed glacial advents. "Forty-eight hours . . . after the extinction of the sun . . . would suffice to precipitate every atom of moisture from the air in deluges of rain and piles of snow, and from that moment would set in a universal frost such as Siberia or the highest peak of the Himalayas never felt . . . a temperature of between two and three hundred degrees below the zero of our thermometers . . . no animal . . . could resist such a frost for an hour" (Herschel in "F. L. on S. S.").

At the time of the Noahic Flood, conditions on earth were remarkably abnormal. Perhaps they caused the "glacial periods." If so, fossil-men of Adamic descent might be found underneath the glacial drift. **There is now evidence that the glacial periods were recent.** See pp. 221, 245.

"GEOLOGIC AGES"

"Not a few of the **leading doctrines** of geology hang on some hypothesis (guess) of the earth's beginning and have **no greater strength** than the hypothesis (guess) on which they depend . . . Geological theories as to the early states of the earth (were built on) . . . the Laplacian or 'Nebular' hypothesis (guess) . . . these views are **still prevalent**. . . . (This hypothesis or guess has been '**weighed and found wanting**.' . . . It is **scarcely possible** to appreciate the **full force** of the arguments which bear against it" (Chamberlin and Salisbury's "College Geology," pp. 415, 416, 417).

Think of it—"leading doctrines" hanging on a "guess." And yet, pseudo-science offers geology as "the assured facts" which discredit the Bible. No sane, right-thinking man would discredit any part of "the Word of God" for "so-called" science that hangs on a guess.

The "views are still prevalent" that were based on the nebular hypothesis (cloudy guess). In other words, these "views which are still prevalent" and taught and that fill reference books, **have no foundation**. They are palmed off for facts, while the Bible is contemptuously cast aside as fiction. In this geology (a text-book for thousands of American students), when referring to the Archeozoic era . . . these and similar expressions are used: "sketches," . . . "are no more than inferential" . . . "there should" . . . "the suggested modification" . . . "zone might" . . . "matter was probably" . . . "there should be" . . . "matter is assumed" . . . "is assumed" . . . "is assumed" . . . "are assumed" . . . "conjectures" . . . "theoretical (guess) section" (must have been very thin sections) . . . "we might hope" (let us hope we don't have much more of this) . . . "rock should be" . . . "life is supposed" . . . "is assumed" . . . etc. Then, referring to the Proterozoic era these expressions are used: "doubtless more or less" (could you beat that one?) . . . "probably" . . . "readily inferred" (we reckon after you once get started to infer, it's no trouble) . . . "if" . . . "presumed" . . . "if" . . . "doubtless" . . . "more or less" . . . "must have brought" . . . "probably" . . . "doubtless" . . . "probably" . . . "presumed" . . . "more or less" . . . "or if" . . . "might" . . . "may have" . . . "doubtless" . . . "it is thot" . . . "it is inferred" . . . "the inference," etc.

"It is assumed," "may" and "doubtless more or less" prove nothing. They are a foundation of sand. This is not science—this is buncology. **Science is required to be based on facts.** God has to be taken into account in the matter of creation. But, as yet, we have never even come across His name in this book that tells all about the earth's creation. With such material as this for a foundation, this geology goes on to tell you all about the earth's formation, its ages, and its life. It tells you that its animal life was evolved, including yourself; and you are paying taxes for schools and hiring teachers to put this kind of "education" into the heads and hearts of American young men and women, instead of putting God's Word away in their hearts that they might not sin against Him, and be ready to meet Him on the judgment day. Modernism accepts this fairy-land falsehood and casts "the Word of God" aside

THE THEORIES OF PSEUDO-SCIENCE USUALLY ARRAYED AGAINST THE BIBLE

"Dr. J. A. Zahm quotes Cardinal Wiseman as saying that the French Institute in 1860 could count more than eighty theories **opposed** to Scripture, **not one** of which has stood still **or deserves to be recorded.**" The well known geologist, Prof. Geo. T. Wright says: "The history of science is little else than one of discarded theories . . . the things about which true science is certain are very few and could be contained in a **short chapter** of a small book." Yet the people are taxed millions of dollars to support schools, colleges and teachers who hammer these Christless, factless theories that have to be finally abandoned, into the heads and hearts of unthinking young men and women. No wonder faith in God, in Christ and the Bible is being destroyed among our coming leaders and literally millions are passing out into a Christless, starless night. No God, no Bible, no laws—bars of restraint all down—no wonder the youth of the world are reveling too frequently in fearful shame! "Lurid youth." Human society faces ruin.

The author has great respect for a true man of science or scholarship, who worships God and accords Him His rightful place in creation and life. Our remarks in this book against "science" and "scholars" are usually directed at that class of science and scholarship, which is other than true science or scholarship and which attempts to account for the origin and processes of life apart from God and creation as recorded in Scripture.

Geology is a new science. In certain restricted phases it has been of much value. As a means of explaining the earth's origin and accounting for life, apart from God, it has done immeasurable damage. The average person would be amazed to really know how little is actually known about the earth, and to what extent scientists dispute among themselves as to what is supposed to be known. Whole sections of the earth have never been seen, great areas have simply been sighted on the run; only a few holes have ever been put into the earth as deep as a mile and they are far between, and this would be only a scratch. The world lies, in one sense, practically untouched when it comes to detailed geologic knowledge.

Some scientists present you with a chance, happen-so, gamble world or a world created by nature. The Bible presents you with a God-created world. How was the world created? Outside of the answer in Gen. 1:1, **nobody knows.** Hypotheses are guesses which prove nothing. "In the beginning, God created the heavens and the earth." **That settles it.** Don't fool your precious time away listening to speculations

that deny this truth. A court of law will not even listen to a witness when all the information he has is a guess. The subject of creation is too vast for man. The creating of a single cell is a mystery beyond man's knowledge. Some scientists know little and say much. The perusal of the different sciences and text books on the same, only convince one that man does not know and never will know the "hows" and "whens" and secrets of creation. God's brief record gives us the only reliable glimpse of this great event that man has ever had. All established scientific facts confirm God's record, while many theories (guesses) contradict God's Word. As to the value of much of this guess work and skepticism, one had better be trying to find out why a black hen with a red comb can eat green grasshoppers and lay white eggs that have yellow yolks.

We know of no line of human endeavor that will have to stand at the judgment bar and answer for the destruction of faith in God, in Jesus Christ and the Bible, as science will have to stand. Honest, able, God fearing scientists and "scholars" should cast out from their midst that great class who have made their vocation untrustworthy and odious to the common people. God has veiled some things in mystery and His failure to raise the curtain should be a warning. "One word characterizes the most strenuous of the efforts for the advancement of science that I have made perseveringly for fifty-five years. **That word is 'failure'**" (Lord Kelvin). And this, from one of the world's greatest scientists, should carry to you its lesson. Beat back to the Bible, the Word of God, which "shall stand forever." Get your feet on this impregnable Rock; see, know and accept its Christ and fit yourself for eternity. God has to be reckoned with in creation and in any possible hope of redemption.

STRATA AND FOSSILS

The geological ages have to do with the formations and fossil contents of various rock strata that, theoretically, cover the earth's surface in layers, after the manner of the layers of an onion, one upon another. Certain of these layers or strata appear in many, or most of the land areas over the world, and others are restricted to lesser and even narrow areas. These strata sometimes vary greatly in thickness, in different places, while in other places they have a greater tendency to be uniform. In these various strata different fossils of plant and animal life, and different mineral deposits as well as coal, oil and gas are found.

A BIRD'S EYE VIEW OF THE STRATA AND FOSSILS

The chart, "Divisions of Geological Time" which will be found near this page will give you a bird's eye view of the so-called "Geologic Ages." Beginning at the bottom, the Archeozoic (which would be the lowest stratum **below** the earth's surface, with which we deal), then up, higher, would be found the Proterozoic stratum, then on top of this would be found the Cambrian stratum and so on up to the earth's outer crust, the Quaternary, which is the earth's surface on which we now live. (This is the theory of Geology as advanced by evolution. Facts do not confirm it, however.) Opposite the names of these different strata you will find the briefest kind of data concerning the supposed fossil contents of their strata. This should, with the assistance of the material following, give you a working grip on the geological problems, as they have to do with life, evolution, and the world's creation. The known and provable facts of geology confirm God's record of creation written thirty-four centuries ago. Man-manufactured theories that are mere speculation, usually

DIVISIONS OF GEOLOGICAL TIME

Cenozoic	Quaternary	{	RECENT: Modern era and modern life. PLEISTOCENE or GLACIAL period: Great ice sheets, at varying times, covered plains rather than mountains. Last retreat of ice probably about 7,000 to 10,000 years ago.
		{	PLIOCENE: Fossils are rare; some land plants and animals. Great crustal movements. Streams given new course. Mammals, including horse. Species more than half modern.
	Tertiary	{	MIOCENE: Important crustal movements. Increase of grasses. New and modern fauna, about half modern; dog, deer and elephant. EOCENE: Nearly all Cretaceous marine animals replaced. Great crustal movements. Sudden appearance of mammals. Reptiles extinct. Change from medieval to modern plants. Few or no modern species of animals.
Mesozoic	Cretaceous	{	{ Much coal, many modern trees, grasses, grains. Revolution in animal life. Reptiles remained dominant. Widespread geologic changes.
	Jurassic	{	{ Geographic sea changes. Huge reptiles on land and sea. Birds first appear; little known of land animals.
	Triassic	{	{ Vegetation scant. Reptiles and ammonites developed rapidly. Upper Triassic fauna not appear to descend from Permian.
Paleozoic	Permian	{	{ Land areas enlarged, mountains formed. Amphibians declined, primitive reptiles appeared. Extensive glaciation.
	Carboniferous	{	{ Great coal beds appear. Geologic interest shifts from sea to land; amphibians and seed ferns appear. Great coal beds.
	Devonian	{	{ Plant life, for first time, is well represented. Aquatic vertebrates; called Age of fishes. Air-breathing insects appear, also oil and gas.
	Silurian	{	{ Invertebrate marines flourished. Coral reefs began. Lowest vertebrates appear; some crustaceans.
	Ordovician	{	{ More fossils than in Cambrian. Marine invertebrate first appear.
	Cambrian	{	{ Period of great duration. Plant life hard to detect. Life in its lowest forms first appears here.
Proterozoic			Dividing strata.
Archeozoic		{	{ Carboniferous material, including graphite; derived from plant life.

deny the Bible. Man's fiction naturally will not harmonize with God's facts. One has said: "Geology, on some questions has changed 200 times in the last 100 years." God's Word never changes.

The evolutionist's hypothesis (guess) is that life, in its lowest form, started in the age of the lower of these strata, then by a series of "successive ages," life evolved thru the thousands and millions of years, that geology estimates that it took **to form each** of these rock strata, until in the age of the upper strata, life developed into its present form. Evolution, as we know and as many great scholars agree, is not and never was a fact—simply a wild, factless falsehood. The evolution of one species into another species has never occurred in one solitary case. Thru all the ages, species have remained unchangeable, as to transmutation into another or higher species.

The substance of the following brief outlines of the geologic ages are largely like you will find in C. and S. College Geology, **written by evolutionists**, who have made their deductions as to the strata and their fossil contents. It will be clearly seen that **they are warped and twisted** with the deliberate intention of making the fossil remains testify that they have been evolved, one species from another. Many assertions are made as to the history of these various strata which do not have any proper foundation of facts. Yet this outline brings before us, one version of the story of life in the past, as written by fossil remains in the rocks. It gives the typical evolutionist's view of a few years ago, as opposed to facts and the Bible. As we proceed, **keep these things in mind.**

ARCHEOZOIC

The Archean (very old) is one accessible rock system, which theoretically, envelops the globe, and appears at possibly one-fifth of the surface over exposed land areas. This stratum is generally used as the basic stratum, and on top of this, layer upon layer, the other strata, theoretically, appear. We call your attention to the introductory matter under the former heading, "Geologic Ages," to the "suppositions," "must have beens," "inferences" and "guesses" which are usually the foundation in most geologies, upon which rest much material and speculation that follows. And these **guesses, speculations and deductions** have no more value than the guess upon which they are founded.

According to the evolutionary hypothesis, the Archaen is the era of the first plant life. Carbonaceous material is found, including graphite; these are derived from plant life.

PROTEROZOIC

This era separates the Archeozoic from the Cambrian period.

CAMBRIAN

Conglomerates, sandstones, shale, limestones, etc. Conditions of shallow sea water. Period, of great duration. Plant life not easily distinguished. Earliest, fairly good fossil remains; no vertebrates; trilobites are characteristic. Here animal life first appears in its lowest form, and the geologist whose god is evolution says it is the greatest event in history, and seems to know nothing of God who created man in His own image.

ORDOVICIAN

Fossil records fuller than in Cambrian; marine invertebrates appear. "An obscure wing" found, indicates land life.

SILURIAN

Formations of chiefly shallow water origin, as salt beds of New York and Ohio. Invertebrate marine life flourished; coral reef building began; few lowest form of vertebrates found; scorpions first appear. In latter period some great crustaceans appear.

DEVONIAN

One phase of system is distinguished by marines, the other phase by non-marines. The latter is characterized by the old red sandstone of the British Isles. Plant life is here, for the first time, well represented; especially ferns, lycopods, and horsetails and some gymnosperms. Remarkable development in aquatic vertebrates. Traces of amphibians. Called the age of fishes. Air breathing life, such as spiders and insects were not rare. Upper Devonian of Pennsylvania and West Virginia yield oil and gas, and are great source of same. From this time on fish are abundant.

CARBONIFEROUS

So-called because of great coal beds in the system. Era of widespread submergences. At opening of this period, biological interests shift from the sea to land, and centers in vegetables and amphybians. The tree ferns held an important place. Includes Pennsylvanian and Mississippian periods.

PERMIAN

Red sandstones, rocks and shale, much of sediment of marine origin. Land areas were enlarged and mountains formed. Generally arid, partly cold. Amphybians decline. Primitive reptiles appear. "Early geology held a complete destruction of all living things on earth at close of Paleozoic era." Now believed some species bridged the interval. Life of period greatly impoverished. A census of animal species of Carboniferous period numbered ten thousand; of Permian, three hundred. Change in vegetation. General aspect was one of poverty of plant life. Oldest certain relics of reptiles go back but little beyond the beginning of the Permian period. Marvelous development of glaciation. Decided change in terrestrial vegetation. Remarkable shifting of geographic outlines. Pronounced stage of crustal foldings constitute a climacteric combination. Permian, is the period of problems.

TRIASSIC

A thick red sandstone formation, barren of fossils, theoretically, separates the Permian and the Triassic. Its system is largely that of red sandstone. Climate arid. Vegetation scant, at least in earliest stages. Gymnosperms, the most distinct plants. Reptiles and ammonites develop rapidly. Possibly mammals existed; if so, they were few, small and primitive (the speculation of an evolutionist). Some workable coal, as in Virginia. A large part of known American fossils belong to this stage. The Upper Triassic fauna does not appear to have descended from the Permian.

JURASSIC

Named from Jura mountains in France and Switzerland. Extensive geographic changes in sea; on great areas of Europe, Asia, North America and elsewhere. Seas ruled by Ichthyosaurs, Plesiosaurs, and other reptiles adapted to aquatic life. On land saurians abounded, some of great size. As far as known, birds made their first appearance. Not much known of land animals. Among plants, cycads reached culmination.

CRETACEOUS

Includes Dakota formation. Referred to as Upper and Lower Cretaceous. The period between Jurassic and Tertiary. Lower Cretaceous is called the Comanchean. Deposits include large part of known chalk beds, green sand mail, and much coal. Most of coal in U. S. west of Great Plains is of Cretaceous age. Upper Cretaceous vegetation approaches moderate temperate and subtropical flora in general aspects. Birch, beech, oak, walnut, sycamore, tulip tree, laurel, cinnamon, maple, holly, ivy, and the oleander made their appearance at this time; also trees of great size; also bearers of fruit nuts; grasses appeared; grain and fodder producers introduced during this period. (Keep in mind that most of these deductions are simply guesswork.) Revolution in animal life appeared and advanced with great rapidity; some 30 species of birds. Reptiles remained dominant on land and sea. Period ended with wide-spread mountain forming geographical changes.

TERTIARY

Characterized by wide-spread geographic changes. Alps, Caucasus, Himalayas and Cordellian System of Alaska to Cape Horn were forming. Huge Cretaceous reptiles perished. The dominant land life was mammalian. Called the age of mammals. The humbler types of life were distinctly modern. The Tertiary is subdivided into three periods: Eocene (the lower), Miocene and Pliocene.

Eocene: The salient feature of the Eocene period is the transition of life from the Mesozoic to the Cenozoic. Among marine animals nearly all Cretaceous orders were replaced by new ones. Many plants lived over. Crustal movements at the close of this era, produced changes on a large scale. Sudden appearance of mammals in numbers. Large reptiles became extinct. The great change from medieval to modern plant life took place in the Comanchean period. None of the present genera of mammals were known as early as the Eocene. The era of bulk and heavy armour, such as had been possessed by the reptiles had passed away, and an era of agility had begun. The great saureans practically passed in the Cretaceous period. The insects of the old species had become extinct; this indicates the types had become modern. Few or no modern animal species.

Miocene: The time of the last important eruptions on the coast ranges, even high mountains were developed locally. Petrified tree trunks found standing. Increase of grasses. New and modern fauna. Cat and dog families, beavers, gophers, rabbits, elephants, deer, primates. Marine fauna at the Pacific coast indicates climate as at present. Species less than half modern.

Pliocene: Fossils are rare, and such as there are, are of land plants and animals. Crustal movements resulting in increased height of land. Close of Pliocene time of great deformation, and critical in North American history. Lands emerged from the sea. New

mountains made. Streams turned from their courses and started on new careers. These notable changes preceded the glacial period proper. Mammals were the center of interest. The horse first appeared. Animal species more than half modern.

PLEISTOCENE or GLACIAL PERIOD

Great ice sheets, where mild climates formerly prevailed, covered the plains rather than mountains. This was true of North America more than Europe. Alaska was largely free from ice. In tropical regions there were glaciers in the mountains where none exist now. (Estimates as to the time the last ice age retreated vary from 6,000 to over 80,000 years, and it is now known that no value can be placed on anything but the smaller figures.) Usually, about three to six glacial invasions are reported by different geologists. The end of the ice age introduces us to the modern era; plant and animal life and man.

THIS EARTH AND THE EARTH OF GEN. 1:1 ARE THE SAME EARTH

And the advent of man marks the close of the six days of restoration and creation described in Gen. 1:3-31. These six days follow the judgment period described in Gen. 1:2. Again we repeat, we think the earth of Gen. 1:1, which God may have taken a long time to create, with the earth's formations and various rock strata inclosing fossil remains is practically the same earth that we now have.

It appears that in Gen. 1:2 the earth of Gen. 1:1 was under judgment and covered by water, as in the Flood, and during this time (Gen. 1:2-9), all animal life was destroyed. It appears that the rock strata of that time inclosing fossil remains are practically the same strata that we now have. See "God's Preparation For Man," p. 154.

There was no firmament or provision, as now for air, from Gen. 1:2 until the second day of reconstruction (Gen. 1:6-8). God seems to have combined three great death dealing agencies: water, absolute darkness, and little air, during the time of Gen. 1:2-9, and all life was buried, as it were, in an absolutely dark, water-encased tomb. During this time all life would necessarily vanish from the face of the earth. After Gen. 1:2 God began the six periods of reconstruction to fit the earth as a home for man. The **only two things** recorded as distinctly created during these days were sentient life (Gen. 1:21) and man (1:27). (See "Days of Creation," pp. 169-180).

During the possible ages that God may have taken to create "the earth" as set forth in Gen. 1:1 was He matchlessly spending the time, plant life and animal life of the geologic ages in preparing and storing in the rock strata and elsewhere, minerals, oil, gas, coal, etc., for the future use of man? Man, whom God, from before the foundation of the world, had ultimately intended to crown creation and be its lord. Truly, the love, grace and mercy of the Great Father, God, endureth **forever**. Past ages have demonstrated it. Future ages will eternally demonstrate it.

It is a matter of common belief that animal life, thru the past ages, has played its part in storing away minerals, building rocks, oil, gas, etc.; and that plant life has played its part in laying up graphite, soil fertility, coal, etc.; all are now offered by God for the service, use, and blessing of man. And men demonstrate their appreciation of God by oppressing, robbing and murdering their fellow-men. The strong overpower the weak. (This is the world or Babel system that God's Son will destroy when He comes back to be King and govern the world for God; Rev. 17-19). And yet, God's mercy still endures, He still matchlessly spends time, plant life and animal life that every detail of man's needs might be more than abundantly supplied. The grace, goodness and patience of God is exceedingly abundantly more than man could expect.

The evidence indicates that all sentient life vanished during the judgment period of Gen. 1:2. **Then** all existing forms of sentient life are of

a subsequent creation, and **their age could be quite recent.** See pp. 152-155, 246-248.

Professor Joseph Le Conte says, "Species seem to come into existence suddenly and in full perfection, remaining substantially unchanged during the term of their existence, and pass away in full perfection."

Agassiz says, "I hold it to be demonstrated that **the totality** of organic beings was renewed . . . (in all) formations . . . also in the stratifications of each separate division of every formation . . . **I do not believe in the genetic descent of the living species from the different tertiary divisions . . . I hold (them) to be specifically different.**"

Scripture and leading scientists thus deliver a death blow to the hypothesis of evolution. No genetic descent, no proof that life forms are millions of years old. **No one can prove that any living form of animal life is even 25,000 years old; and no man can prove that man is of great age OR THAT ANY MAN EVER LIVED BEFORE ADAM.** See "The First Man," pp. 172, 178 and "Adam," p. 283 footnote.

THE PROBLEM

As to just what Gen. 1:2 signifies or imports has been a problem. To the writer it means one of three things: Chaos, with **practically no evidence**; judgment, with the major evidence in its favor; or it means **a step in the normal process** of God as He was, from time to time, changing the plant and the animal life of the globe by extinction and creation of new orders. "Destruction followed destruction and **creation followed creation**" (Jamieson in Gen.). The orders of life as they seem to have filled their course and purpose, as agencies to fit the world for the future home of man passed on, and new forms of life were created and took their place in the process. Finally, all forms of animal life were destroyed as in Gen. 1:2, and new forms created and adapted to man's needs (Gen. 1:20-31). The process of preparation had drawn to its close, and the earth was in readiness for its God intended lord and ruler, man. That God intended for this new order of life to **remain adapted** to man's needs, and to **stay adapted** during man's entire career and in the forms originally provided by an All-wise God, is evidenced by the fact that God created them **invariable as to kind**. In this form God turned them over to man to have dominion over and to use as his servants and a means of blessing (Gen. 1:26-29). And there never has been one single instance of evolution of any of these species from that day to this.

God prohibited a blind reproductive law from existing, by which an elephant, monkey or rattlesnake could evolve into a being that might become man's master and in turn put him to work as a beast of the field. God's law of "natural selection" impels the elephant to mate with the elephant, the monkey with the monkey, and the snake with the snake. The natural world all about us testifies that the law of "natural selection" prohibits, instead of promotes the transmutation of species, as Darwin falsely taught.

Let us now temporarily leave the judgment program of Gen. 1:2, anticipate the study of the six reconstruction periods; and in the meantime proceed with geological problems.

THE FOSSILS, A DEADLY WITNESS AGAINST EVOLUTION

From the chart, "Divisions of Geological Time," p. 158, and the Geologic summary of the fossils in each rock stratum (see p. 159), it is evident that the evolutionists' viewpoint is held and presented. They

cling to and advance the theory of "uniformity"; and "successive ages"; claiming that life has been on the globe for many millions of years, in a graded succession of types of life of well defined evolving order. Upon these supposed facts biological evolution has been built and set forth, with the fond hope that this was all the evidence required to prove the theory of evolution. These mute fossils testify that God has propagated species by means of the inexorable law of each "after its kind" and thus they become a deadly, condemning witness against evolution. See p. 192.

The evolutionary scientist assumes nature has always been as now, yet admits violent conditions of change, such as, tropical climate at the polar regions. **He excludes the direct action of Deity**, etc., and with such premises they make various deductions as to the earth's age. It is simply the old effort to assign to nature the power to create, instead of assigning it to the God who created nature.

"THE SUCCESSIVE AGE" HYPOTHESIS OR GUESS

"The age of the earth is still an open question. There is a little matter of nine thousand million years between the reckoning of Professor Ramsay and that of Professor Tate, both acknowledged authorities" (Berry).

"Prof. G. F. Wright, the geologist, tells us that geologic time is not one-hundredth part as long as it was supposed to be fifty years ago, and the popular writers who **glibly** talk of the antiquity of man are **behind the times and ignorant** of the new light which as a flood has come from geology. . . .

"Prof. F. M. Balfour tells us: 'All these facts that fall under our observation contradict the crude ideas of those so-called naturalists, who state that one species can be transmuted into another in the course of generations.' So also Sir David Brewster declares: 'We have absolute proof of the immutability of species, whether we search for it in historic or geologic times'." (Quoted from "The Other Side of Evolution" by Dr. Alexander Patterson. Hereafter, quotations from him and his good work will usually be referred to in abbreviated forms).

"Many facts regarding the **position** of the strata as well as regarding their **consolidation** contradict the theory of successive ages" (Quoted from "Q.E.D." by Dr. George McCready Price, who has done a good work in defense of the faith. Hereafter, quotations from him and his work will usually be referred to in abbreviated forms).

"Practically all the great natural chronometers of the earth seem to treat the fossiliferous rocks as if they are all of about the same age. . . . It is now known that any kind of 'young' beds whatsoever, Mesozoic, Tertiary, or even Pleistocene, may be found in such perfect conformity on some of the very oldest beds over wide stretches of country that 'the vast interval of time intervening is unrepresented either by deposition or erosion;' while in some instances these age-separated formations so closely resemble one another in structure and in mineralogical make-up that, 'were it not for fossil evidence, one would naturally suppose that a single formation was being dealt with' (McConnell); and these conditions are 'not merely local, but persistent over wide areas' (A. Geikie), so that the 'numerous examples' (Suess) of these conditions 'may well be cause for astonishment (Suess).' . . . A very formidable series of facts (exist) whose (evidence) is directed wholly against the artificial distinctions in age between the different groups of fossils; and their argument is an eloquent plea that the fossils are neither older nor younger but all of similar age. . . . In very numerous cases and over hundreds

and even thousands of square miles, . . . very 'old' rocks occur with just as much appearance of natural conformability on top of very 'young' rocks, the area . . . in Montana and Alberta covering about five or six thousand square miles. . . . These flat-flying faults, of which those at Glarus were the first to be discovered, are a universal phenomenon in the Northern and Central Alps. . . . there is here no physical proof of any real overturning of the strata. . . .

"Dr. Albert Heim says . . . that the strata over these large areas are in a position manifestly at direct disagreement with the received order of the fossils, 'is a fact which can be clearly seen,—only we know not yet how to explain it in a mechanical way.' . . .

"In the Highlands of Scotland, . . . Dana says, 'a mass of the oldest crystalline rocks, many miles in length from north to south, was thrust at least ten miles westward over younger rocks, part of the latter fossiliferous;' and he further declares, 'the thrust planes look like planes of bedding, and were long so considered.' . . . We have unequivocal testimony from the most competent of observers that there is no physical evidence whatever to lead any one to say that a ponderous scale of the earth's crust was really pushed up on top of other portions, as this makeshift theory of 'thrust faults' involves. The fossils are here in the **wrong order**, just as in the case at Glarus; that is all. The facts seem to be a flat contradiction to the theory of definite successive ages, and to save the theory this explanation of a 'thrust fault' is invented, though there is absolutely no physical evidence of any disturbance of the strata. . . .

"Extending from the middle of Montana up to the Yellowhead Pass in Alberta, or over 350 miles long, where the tops of the mountains consist of jointed limestones or argillites of Algonkian or pre-Cambrian 'age,' resting on soft Cretaceous shales. . . .

"How much of the earth's crust would we have to find in this upside down order of the fossils, before we would be convinced that there must be something hopelessly wrong with this theory of Successive Ages. . . . The science of geology as commonly taught is truly in a most astonishing condition, and **doubtless presents the most peculiar mixture of fact and nonsense to be found in the whole range of our modern knowledge.** . . . That most educated people still believe its main thesis of a definite age for each particular kind of fossil is a sad but instructive example of the effects of mental inertia. . . .

"It is now perfectly obvious that the geological distinctions as to age between the fossils are fantastic and unjustifiable. No one kind of true fossil can be proved to be older or younger than another intrinsically and necessarily. . . . But from this it by no means follows that the fossils contained in these lower rocks came into being and lived and died before the fossils in the upper ones. . . . Geology has been supposed to prove that there has been a long succession of distinct types of life on the globe in a very definite order extending through vast ages of time. **This is now known to be a mistake. . . . there is no possible way of telling that one kind of life lived and occupied the world before the other,** or that one kind of life is intrinsically older than any other or than the human race. . . . The theory of definite successive ages, with the forms of life appearing on earth in a precise and invariable order, **is dead for all coming time** for every man who has had a chance to examine the evidence and has enough training in logic and scientific methods to know when a thing is really proved. . . .

"The one essential idea is that **the process and methods of Creation are beyond us,** for we have nothing with which to measure it;

Creation and the reign of 'natural law' are essentially incommensurable. . . . Whewell, . . . 'History of the Inductive Sciences,' refuses to acknowledge that in Geology any real advance has yet been made toward a stable science. . . . In the nineteenth century Sir Charles Lyell and others tried to disclaim this absurd and unscientific inheritance from Werner's onion-coats; but modern geology has never yet got rid of its essential and its chief characteristic idea, for all our text-books still speak of various successive ages when only certain types of life prevailed all over the globe. . . . Geology has never yet been regenerated. . . . For over seventy-five years geology has not made a single advance movement in its theoretical aspects. . . .

"The 'Challenger' Expedition dissipated most of the myths that had long been taught regarding the deep waters of the ocean; and Professor Suess has disposed of the closely related myth about the coasts of the continents being constantly on the seesaw up and down. . . . Lord Kelvin and other physicists dissipated the idea of a molten interior of the earth. . . . T. H. Huxley declares, 'In the present condition of our knowledge and of our methods, one verdict,—**'not proven and not provable'** . . . must be recorded . . . respecting the general succession of life on the globe" (The above quotations are from "Q.E.D." by Price).

Facts blast, like a killing frost, the fond doctrine of "Successive Ages" which is practically the last straw on which the evolutionist hangs. Successive Ages is not evolution, neither would it prove evolution. "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth"—and God's law of life reproduction is each "after its kind." The natural world all about us confirms this. And the geologic strata and fossil remains echo back thru the centuries, "Amen." And they, too, like the "heavens declare the glory of God," and "man alone is vile."

GOD'S RECORD OF THE "AGES" OF CREATION

"In the beginning." Say! When was that? Nobody knows. As to **the time**, all God has to say is that it was, "in the beginning." It makes no difference how much time God used to create "the heavens and the earth"—it is all accounted for in the time expression, "In the beginning." The scientist tells us it took endless ages. The Bible record neither affirms nor denies this. This "in the beginning" period was **before** the judgment period of Gen. 1:2, and the judgment period was **in between** Gen. 1:1, and the six days reconstruction period of Gen. 1:3-2:3.

"The ancient poet Hesiod tells us that the first thing in existence was Chaos; that is, according to its etymology, 'the yawning and void receptacle for created matter.' . . . Ovid thus describes it: 'There was but one appearance of nature throughout the whole world: this they called Chaos, an unformed and confused bulk.' . . . According to the cosmogonies of Greece and Rome, the universe sprang from Chaos. . . . The Gnostics believed in the eternity and intrinsic evil of matter; . . . they made the first verse signify the creation of a confused mass of elements, out of which the heavens and earth were formed during the six days, understanding the next sentence to be a description of this crude matter before God shaped it. And their opinion has descended to our days." (G. H. Pember.)

We see nothing in Gen. 1:1 nor in Gen. 1:2 or their context to justify the assumption that either was "chaos." When God "bara" or creates, the work is **finished** and not left in a state of "chaos." The description in Gen. 1:2 is that of judgment and not of "chaos." God strikes in judgment on the earth three different times, and reconstructs: (1) Gen.

1: 2-2: 3; (2) The Flood, Gen. 5-9; (3) and at the end of this age Isa. 65: 17; 2 Peter 3; cf. Rev. 21: 1-6.

This idea of chaos, **then** as now, usually comes from the world opposed to God. It was put into man's heart by the same Satan that "filled" Ananias' "heart to lie." The "nebular hypothesis" (now, "weighed and found wanting") combined with these heathen views, has done much to obscure the facts and conceal the truth as to what God has said in His record of creation.

CAUSE OF JUDGMENT OF GEN. 1:2

"Waste and void" in Gen. 1:2, as in Jer. 4: 23-28, pp. 150-1, speaks of a judgment on the globe in which the "**heavens**" give "**no light.**" Sun, moon and stars are "black." Jeremiah is confirmed by Joel 2: 1-3: 8. cf Matt. 24-25 cf Rev. 6. See p. 153 for brief setting out of these Scriptures. "Darkness was upon the face of the deep." An equivalent for the Hebrew word translated "deep" is "tumultuous waters." This speaks of judgment. The Hebrew word translated "darkness" also means "**death.**" Then we read, "Death" was upon the face of the "tumultuous waters." Wherever God acts, He is. And as the "Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters," the "tumultuous waters," He seems to have been executing judgment in death (as well as having in this act a prophecy of future restoration and life.) Now "darkness" speaks of sin and Satan. "Men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil" (Jno. 3: 18-20). Satan is the prince or king of darkness. Children of God are "translated" from his realm of darkness into the "kingdom" of God's Son (Col. 1: 13). Now we know very well that Satan, who is the cause of all sin, was the cause of the Noahic Flood-judgment, where the waters covered the earth as in Gen. 1:2. We know that a fearful condition of sin ("as were the days of Noah," Matt. 24:37, Am. V.), promoted and headed up by Satan will also bring about a fearful future earth judgment, as set forth in Rev. 4-19; also see 2 Pet. 3. Therefore, since we find Satan the cause of the last two of the earth's three judgments, we conclude that he is also the cause of the first earth judgment of Gen. 1:2. In fact, the Bible **knows nothing** of earth judgments except such as are caused by Satan. Judgments are against celestial and terrestrial beings (Matt. 25:41; Rev. 20:11-21:6).

SCRIPTURE'S TESTIMONY: In 2 Pet. 2:4, "God spared not angels when they sinned, but cast them down to hell (Tartarus)." These angels are referred to in Jude 6—"Angels that kept not their own principality, but **left their proper habitation.**" After these fallen angels left their "proper habitation," where did they go? In Rev. 12:9, we read that "Satan . . . was cast down **to the earth** and **his angels** were cast down **with him.**" Heaven and earth are the spheres of angels. It seems that these angels left their "proper habitation" in a state of rebellion, came to earth and defiled the earth just as the antediluvians did, and that God struck the earth in judgment as a consequence, just as he struck the earth in judgment with the Noahic Flood. And that, from the time of this judgment these angels were cast into prison awaiting the final judgment day. Referring to the fallen angels of Jude 6, Fausset says, "'Their proper' habitation—Heaven, all bright and glorious, opposed to the 'darkness' to which they now are doomed. Their ambitious designs seem to have had a **peculiar connection with this earth**, of which Satan before his fall was probably God's vicegerent: whence arises his subsequent connection with it as, first, the Tempter, then 'the prince

of this world'." These fallen angels already in prison, are to be distinguished from Satan's present angels of Matt. 25:41.

"But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction.

Any many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of.

And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not.

For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment;

And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly;

And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly" (2 Pet. 2:1-6).

In 2 Pet. 2, "false prophets" are discussed and a representation is made that God will most assuredly bring them to account and general judgment. As proof of the certainty of this, **three** former judgments are cited apparently **in the order that they occurred** in history. (1) God spared not the angels; (2) God spared not the ancient world; (3) God spared not Sodom and Gomorrah. **Therefore, He will not spare the false prophets.** It was evidently expected that these three judgments would be a matter of common knowledge or they would be poor illustrations and proofs.

(1) "GOD SPARED NOT ANGELS WHEN THEY SINNED" (2 Pet. 2:4, cf. Jude 6).

(2) GOD "SPARED NOT THE ANCIENT WORLD, but preserved Noah with seven others . . . when He brought a flood upon the world of the ungodly" (2 Pet. 2:5).

These are presented as PARALLEL CASES. Then their general characteristics would be common. A general judgment was brought on the "ancient world" **by a flood**, as recorded in Genesis 5-9. And the remarks, therein, concerning God's covenant not to destroy the earth again by a flood would indicate that, without this covenant, **the flood would be the usual way of executing judgment** on the earth. Since the judgment of the angels was evidently prior to that of the "ancient world" and the judgment of the flood on the "ancient world" is recorded in Gen. 5-9, then where will we find the record of the judgment against the angels? The **only place** in the Scriptures **prior** to Gen. 5-9 where there is any evidence of a judgment of any kind, that would parallel the judgment against the "ancient world," and that would parallel the future judgment of the "false prophets," is recorded in Gen. 1:2. Here we find disorder, judgment conditions and the earth covered with water as of a flood. Therefore, we conclude that Gen. 1:2 refers to the condition that was present when "God spared not angels," and that it was the result of judgment and not chaos.

GOD'S KINGDOM BEFORE THE WORLD WAS "MADE" (Part 2)

This topic is discussed on pp. 18-19. It should be carefully reread at this time, as it is the basis of what follows. There, evidence reveals that prior to the six days of reconstruction the kingdom of God existed.

In it were God the Father, God the Son, God the Holy Spirit, cherubim, Satan and fallen angels. Satan and certain angels were fallen and in rebellion against God **prior** to the six days of reconstruction.

"And angels that kept not their own principality, but left their proper habitation. He hath kept in everlasting bonds under darkness unto the judgment of the great day" (Jude 6). "For if God spared not angels when they sinned, but cast them down to hell, and committed them to pits of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment" (2 Pet. 2:4).

Scripture indicates that fallen angels and their judgment are called to our attention, because their judgment was in some way connected with a past disobedience that affected this earth. Their judgment is cited as an object lesson and warning. See pp. 166-167.

SATAN ADAPTED TO EARTH AND HEAVEN

"The Lord said unto Satan: Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and walking up and down in it" (Job 1:7). See Matt. 4:1-11 where Jesus was with Satan in the wilderness of Judea. "When the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them to present himself before the Lord" (Job 2:1). "War in heaven . . . Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out **into the earth**, and **his angels** were cast out with him" (Rev. 12:7-9). Satan seduces beings in heaven as well as on earth, as indicated. Satan and his angels have **to do with earth** as this Scripture sets forth. His kingdom is in the heavenlies about the earth. Men have to wrestle against these "world-rulers of this darkness, against the spiritual hosts of wickedness in the heavenly places" (Eph. 6:12 Am. V.).

For a person to reject the facts about the unseen forces and powers of the physical and spiritual world is to demonstrate one's ignorance and is evidence of their blindness to and rejection of truth. We have the power of gravity, the force of electricity, radio activity, the spiritual hosts of wickedness headed up by Satan and the spiritual hosts of righteousness headed up by the Saviour. See "Satan" and "The Saviour," Vol. 2 of this work.

Three different times in the book of John, Jesus refers to Satan as the prince (usurper, political ruler) of this world (Jno. 12:31; 14:30; 16:11). As now, Satan and his angels exist in rebellion against this earth, so in some way, **before** man's advent, they seem to have existed in rebellion against the world. (Sin spells Satan. Cf Gen. 6). Satan prompted and headed up the sin of the Flood. A world judgment has followed two of these conditions, and will follow the third as set forth in Scripture.

Before the judgment of Gen. 1:2, Satan appears (See "Satan," Vol. 2), as disclosed from Ezek. 28; Isa. 14 and elsewhere to have had charge of the government of the spiritual hosts who had to do with this earth, as well as the "heavenlies." He led them in rebellion and the judgment of Gen. 1:2 resulted. The six days of reconstruction and creation followed. The government of the world was turned over to man (Gen. 1:26-29). Satan, apparently, was warned and prohibited from interfering with man's government of the world under God's supervision. That Satan had due warning is evidenced by the fact that judgment was pronounced upon him without a hearing, "because thou hast done **this**." The thing Satan did required God's Son to endure Calvary's Cross.

Satan seduced man (Gen. 3) and secured his cooperation in setting up on this earth a government opposed to God, justice and righteousness. This present system of government on this earth is referred to in Scripture as "the world," "the nations," or "Babel" system, which is based on a reign of sin, oppression, greed, hate, war, etc., and is referred to as "the

enemy of God" (Jas. 4:4; 1 Jno. 2:15-17; Rev. 17). (See Studies Concerning The Enemy of God's Kingdom, pp. 104-116). Satan, in Scripture, is referred to as the "god of this world," and he is a "god" of danger, darkness and death (2 Cor. 4:4). And he is your god according to the Word of God, if you haven't taken your stand with Christ. "He that is not with me is against me" (Matt. 12:30). Jesus disowned this world system—"my kingdom is not of this world" (Jno. 18:36). Scripture teaches that Christ will ultimately come and rule over the entire world, and set up a government **on earth** where things will be run on the same basis that they are run in heaven. "The government shall be upon His shoulder" (Isa. 9:6-7; Lu. 1:30-35; Rev. 11:15; 16:17; 21:22). Jesus taught men to pray for and expect this kingdom—"thy kingdom come" (Matt. 6:10). When Jesus comes back to set up this kingdom during the Millennium, this present Satanic, "Babel" system will be destroyed and His heavenly kingdom set up (Dan. 2: Matt. 24-25; Rev. 4-20:10).

According to Scripture, at this time Satan and his spiritual hosts of wickedness are again in temporary dominion over this anti-Christ world system, in which men co-operate with Satan against God. But Satan and his allies will again be dispossessed, this time, forever (Rev. 20:10). And he who will have thrice led this earth under judgment will be banished forever from the world and the presence of God, under an eternal curse. And thou, O man, whomsoever thou art that dost join Satan and maintain rebellion and reject God's Son, earth's rightful Ruler, thou hast a like **certain** fate awaiting thee. "**If ye believe not that I am He, ye shall die in your sins**" (Jno. 8:24).

Whenever the individual or the church co-operate with or participate in the things of "this world" they join hands with and become a party to enmity against God.

HOW LONG?

How long was the earth in the condition of judgment as described in Gen. 1:2? How long was it before the finished earth of Gen. 1:1 went under the judgment of Gen. 1:2? You don't know? Who does? Nobody. Couldn't this event have been billions of years? Don't worry about God's account of creation running out of time before God has had time enough to finish the work.

THOSE TROUBLESOME SIX DAYS of RECONSTRUCTION and CREATION

We have viewed the earth as the finished earth of Gen. 1:1 created by God; we have viewed the earth as a fossil-strata-formed earth, as set forth by Geology. We have followed this earth into the judgment of Gen. 1:2; now let us engage in the more pleasant task of following this earth thru its six days of reconstruction and creation as the Master Builder and Master Architect of all the ages prepares and fits it as the Home Beautiful for a perfect man and woman.

THE FIRST DAY—LIGHT

"3 And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. 4 And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. 5 And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And there was evening and there was morning, one day" (Gen. 1:3-5).

"The Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters" which covered the land. Land, waters, and sky were in a shroud of midnight—no gleam of light from sun, moon or stars. The night was only prophetic of the

coming day. "God (the Father) is light" (1 Jno. 1:5), and light is also the emblem of the Son of God, who "lighteth every man coming into the world" (Jno. 1:9). Where God is, light can be manifest. And God said, **"Let there be light: and there was light."** The Spirit of God embodied the command; gave it form. This light is to be distinguished from the "lights"—sun, moon and stars of the fourth day of creation. The "light" of the first day we may think of as general or "cosmical;" the lights of the fourth day as localized luminaries, such as the sun, etc. In Gen. 1:2 as the earth was covered with a coat of water, so at this time, sun, moon and stars were evidently covered with a coat of darkness. (See "Fourth Day," p. 173). Absence of light in Gen. 1:2 is a strong proof that it was judgment; if it was a condition of chaos there would have been cosmic light. "Let there be light"—"the substantive verb is used here, and not either 'created' or 'made.' It was a manifestation of what had previously been in existence" (Jamieson's, "Genesis"). This work, as the work connected with six of the other commands, "And God said," was a formula-tive order or mandate—not a distinctly creative act.

"The heavens and the earth" were created in Gen. 1:1 at a time prior to the first day. **Light was in existence**, but apparently with-held from the earth during the judgment period and now, on the first day, God saw fit to allow light to again shine on the earth. (Attention was called, and is again called to this matter under the heading, "All Three Indicate Judgment," p. 152). Light precedes all life and is the cause of color, beauty and warmth; reflects God and is, as God "pronounced" it, "good."

"God divided," It appears that the solar system was out of order as it will again be out of order during earth's coming judgments (Joel 2:30-3:8; Jer. 4:23-28; Matt. 24:29-30; Rev. 6:12.). See p. 153 for brief setting out of these Scriptures. There was no sun to do the dividing until the fourth day; so God did the "dividing;" the disjoining of the light from the darkness.

The first view man has of the earth is that of night—"darkness;" the last view man has of the earth is that of day—eternal day, "no night there." In between these two views is the history of "earth's little day." Unless you accept the "Light of the world" as your Saviour, "life's little day" will not have been worth while and you will never see the eternal day, but the "blackness of darkness" will be reserved for you forever (Jude 13).

Science used to thrust viciously at the Mosaic account of there being light on the earth before the sun, moon or stars were shining. Light is the result of force, causing waves of ether to vibrate with inconceivable rapidity. Science now knows that the sun is not the only source of light and that "earth itself under certain conditions may become self-luminous." "Light is the most ancient of all things" (Herschel). Light is "the first of all that exists in the universe" (Proctor's, "Flowers of the Sky"). Science was wrong. The Bible was right. How did Moses know? "The Lord spake unto Moses." The Bible is the Word of God regardless of the doubts, skepticism or perverted assertions of man.

Remember there was no distinctly creative act on the first day. Light was in existence since the creation of Gen. 1:1. On the first day God seems to have commanded light from its obscuring darkness and put it into the form or use He desired. "There was evening and there was morning, one day." How long was this day? What material difference does it make to you? Do you know of any reason why God could not have done the work of the first day in twelve or twenty-four hours?

THE SECOND DAY—FIRMAMENT

6 **“And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. 7 And God made the firmament and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so. 8 And God called the firmament Heaven. And there was evening and there was morning, a second day”** (Gen. 1:6-8).

(1:6). “Let there be a firmament,” i. e., that which is outspreading. “Let it divide;” literally, “be dividing,” keep it as a constant law in nature.

(1:7). “And God made;” here “made . . . means to prepare, arrange” (Jamieson). The word “bara,” which means to “originate the absolutely new,” is not used. “Divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament;” i. e., “he made firm the skies” (Prov. 8:28, Am. V.). The waters under the firmament refer to the waters of 1:9. The waters above the firmament refer to, “the clouds dropped water” (Judges 5:4). There is a celestial ocean where water is in the clouds as well as a terrestrial ocean where water is on the earth. The (atmospheric) expanse, as a buffer ocean of air, divides and supports, as it were, one above the other, and provides air and fits earth as a home for man. And the supply of air is divinely apportioned to man’s needs. All was water in Gen. 1:2; then came light which possibly caused dense fogs to arise, which were unfriendly to life. In Gen. 1:1, the arrangement for firmament must have been somewhat as now. Judgment must have disturbed this, thus interfering with the air supply for life. Its restoration preceded new life.

(1:8). “Called the firmament heaven;” literally, “heights.” **Heaven is used as a synonym for firmament.** See Leviticus 20:11. The word refers to the expanse where the sun, moon and stars are, as well as to where the clouds are (1:15).

THE THIRD DAY—LAND, SEAS, PLANTS

9 **“And God said, Let the waters under the heavens be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear; and it was so. 10 And God called the dry land Earth: and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas; and God saw that it was good. 11 And God said, Let the earth put forth grass, herbs yielding seed, and fruit-trees bearing fruit after their kind, wherein is the seed thereof, upon the earth: and it was so. 12 And the earth brought forth grass, herbs yielding seed after their kind, and trees bearing fruit, wherein is the seed thereof, after their kind: and God saw that it was good. 13 And there was evening and there was morning, a third day”** (Gen. 1:9-13).

The work of the third day is in two parts: first, dry land and seas; second, introduction of plant life. The former were needed preparation for the latter.

(1:9). “Let the waters **under** the heavens be gathered together unto one place.” Science and the Bible are in agreement that the earth was covered with water in its early history. (How did Moses know? “The Lord spake unto Moses.”) The waters **above** the heavens or expanse are excluded in this order: “Unto one place.” One great sea composed of many connecting “seas.” The lands are sometimes separated. These details and their accuracy testify to a divine Author. It is impossible to account for the facts within the Bible without ascribing it to a divine Author. Neither Moses nor any other man had ever been over all the earth to see the situation, at the time this was written. How did Moses know? “The Lord spake unto Moses.”

"Let the dry land appear," i. e., "be seen"—not, "let it be created." For the land to "appear" on the third day, it necessarily had to be already in existence. It was created ("bara") back at the time of Genesis 1:1. So the word "bara" is not used with reference to the work of the third day. It was not a creative, but a formative or arrangement act.

Science tells us that the proportions of earth and sea on the globe are just right for rain, temperature, etc. Not chance, but intelligent design is manifest. The following appears to be God's description of what occurred in 1:9:

"Who laid the foundations of the earth, That it should not be moved for ever. Thou coveredst it with the deep as with a vesture; the waters stood above the mountains. At thy rebuke they fled; At the voice of thy thunder they hasted away (The mountains rose, the valleys sank down) Unto the place which thou hadst founded for them. Thou hast set a bound that they may not pass over; That they turn not again to cover the earth" (Ps. 104:5-9, Am. V.).

The earth was covered by water. "And God said," and the waters "fled." "The mountains rose, the valleys sank down," and "bounds" were set so the sea would stay in its place. A moving picture of the scene as it occurred is depicted. All would indicate the process was rapid. The fact that water covered the earth in Gen. 1:2 and then God, later, took it off, is proof of judgment. This is exactly what happened at the judgment of the Flood. The "morning stars" seem to have sung together when the foundations of the earth were laid (Job 38:4-7).

(1:10). "God called"—man was not yet created. This "call" was prophetic that earth's ultimate occupant was to speak.

(1:11). "Let the earth put forth grass, herbs . . . fruit trees," etc. The Hebrew word translated "put forth" means to sprout or spring. The Hebrew word for "grass" denotes "young tender shoots." Did God command that the earth put this forth in the same sense that earth now puts forth young tender plant life? In Gen. 2:5 (Am. Ver.) we have: "no plant . . . no herb had yet sprung up . . . for Jehovah God had not caused it to rain upon the earth: . . . not a man to till the ground." This would indicate that the life would be there ready to "spring up" as plant life now springs up, when the required conditions should be arranged. No man to till the earth. This confirms other Scripture that Adam was the first man.

Lord Kelvin asked Liebig, "if he believed that the grass and flowers . . . grew by mere chemical forces. He answered, No, no more than I could believe that a book of botany describing them could grow by mere chemical forces."

Tyndall, after laborious experiments during eight months, thus candidly states the result, in an address before the Royal Institute, London: "From the beginning to the end of the inquiry, there is not, as you have seen, a shadow of evidence in favor of the doctrine of spontaneous generation. . . . In the lowest, as in the highest of organized creatures, the method of nature is, that life shall be the issue of antecedent life."

Huxley: "The doctrine that life can only come from life is victorious all along the line."—(Patterson's, "The Other Side of Evolution.")

Since life does not come by spontaneous generation and as the word "create" is not used in this account of the third day, and because there is no life except from antecedent life, it therefore, appears that this plant life was created at a time previous to the third day, and was then lying dormant ready to spring forth. The only verse in the account of creation from Gen. 1:1-13, where the word create is used is in Gen. 1:1. Also, we have offered evidence and concluded that the fossil remains were from a creation that took place in Gen. 1:1, and we know **these**

fossil remains contain plant life. Therefore, we conclude that God "bara" plant life in Gen. 1:1 and it was carried over the flood of waters of Gen. 1:2. This would indicate the judgment period of Gen. 1:2 was of short duration. Plant life was carried over the flood of waters in the days of Noah. This evidence indicates that plant life was in existence undestroyed, prior to the six days of reconstruction. Plants would then need no creation during this six days reconstruction period. "The phrase 'after his kind,' . . . seems to indicate that the different species of plants were already fixed. . . . In all probability the seed forms were in the soil from the first, **only waiting** to be vitalised" (Pulpit Commentary).

"Grass, herbs . . . fruit trees." The three great classes of vegetation are set forth in the order science finally confirms. We believe the evidence indicates that these periods or days were of short duration. As all *three kinds of plant life came forth in the **same** period it would contradict the statements of pseudo-science and not afford time for the ages required by the evolutionary theory.

(1:12). "After their kind." This is the Bible's testimony against evolution and it is confirmed by nature. "After its kind" is the primal law of nature and "**The stubborn mule still blocks the way of Evolution**" (Dr. Jesse B. Thomas). "We have absolute proof of the immutability of species" (Sir David Brewster). (See "Species Propagate," "After Its Kind," p. 190.)

In answer to the assertion that vegetation in the coal measures contradicts the Bible, we reply: the carbons, including graphite testify of plant life in strata assumed to be older than the strata containing animal fossils.

THE FOURTH DAY—LIGHTS

14 "And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of heaven to divide the day from the night: and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days and years: 15 and let them be for lights in the firmament of heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. 16 And God **made** the two great lights; the greater light to rule the **day** and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. 17 And God set them in the firmament of heaven to give light upon the earth, 18 and to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good. 19 **And there was evening and there was morning, a fourth day**" (Gen. 1:14-19, Am.V.).

The fourth day begins our second triad of days or the last half of the week.

(1:14, 15). "Let there be lights;" that is "light holders." General light is replaced by "light holders." The purpose for light changed and with it the arrangement for light. The sun seems to be an opaque body enwrapped by a luminous cloud.

Lights to divide day from night, for signs, for seasons, for days, for years, to give light upon the earth, to rule the day and the night. This is the **seven-fold** program assigned for the "lights" by "God," who "is Light."

If a ray of light passes thru the bevelled edge of a piece of glass, it breaks up into "**seven**" colors; red, orange, yellow, green, blue, violet, and the white (the three major and the three minor colors with their blend, white)—the "seven" colored rainbow, in fact. Significantly, **seven** is the number expressive of covenanted, redemptive relationship, by "God" who "is Light" (See "The Token of Noah's Covenant,"

*If Gen. 1:11-12 should describe a creation, it could have occurred to replace plant life destroyed at the time of Gen. 1:2.

the rainbow, Vol. 2 of this work.) The same numerics that are characteristically found in the natural world are found in and characterize the numerics of the Bible. The wonders in the world of God are also in the Word of God, demonstrating that the God who wrote the laws of nature, is the God who wrote the laws of the Bible. See pp. 214, 142-147.

This was the birthday of signs, seasons, days and years on the reconstructed world. "Signs" of weather, of time and of God's goodness. "Seasons"—of the year. "Days and years"; a chronometer, i. e., the first clock man ever had for his new home.

(1:16). "And God made the two great lights . . . to rule the day . . . to rule the night." "Great" with reference to man's sense of sight. "Made," i. e., "asah," "arrange" or "appoint"; "to fashion or prepare out of existing material" (Pember). It does not state in the account of the fourth day that God "bara" anything—in fact, from Gen. 1:1-19 the only place the word "bara" is used is in 1:1, so we conclude the sun, moon and stars were created at the time of Gen. 1:1. Attention was called, under "The Third Day," p. 171, to the apparent existence of the stars when the world's foundations were being laid. Also under the heading, "All Three Indicate Judgment," p. 152, we called attention to the fact that God obscured the sun so that there was "thick darkness" for three days among the Egyptians; and that the sun was obscured for three hours when Christ was crucified; and that in the future day of "vengeance of our God" that "the sun shall be turned into darkness" (Joel 2:30-3:16), "the sun be darkened and the moon shall not give her light" (Matt. 24:29); and that "the sun became black as sackcloth" (Rev. 6:12). It may be that at the time of Gen. 1:2 the solar system was similarly put out of commission and then on the fourth day of reconstruction or creation, the sun, moon and stars were again "made" to serve God's purpose and "set" to work at it.

"The planets and comets revolving around the sun, combine to form the Solar system. They appear as members of one isolated family—which could not be ruptured in the case of one individual, without communicating a general shock to the others. . . . Many remarkable facts connected with our solar system tend to show that its present condition CANNOT be the result of purely accidental action of natural forces" (Int. Encyc. on Cosmogony). The "nebular hypothesis" has "been weighed and found wanting." "God created." This alone accounts for the universe.

THE FIFTH DAY—FISH AND FOWL

"20 And God said, Let the waters swarm with swarms of living creatures, and let birds fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven. 21 And God created the great sea-monsters, and every living creature that moveth, wherewith the waters swarmed, after their kind, and every winged bird after its kind: and God saw that it was good. 22 And God blessed them, saying, Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let birds multiply on the earth. 23 And there was evening and there was morning, a fifth day" (Gen. 1:20-23).

"I hold it to be demonstrated that the totality of organic beings was renewed, not only in the intervals of those great periods which we designate as formations, but also in the stratification of each separate division of every formation. **Nor do I believe in the genetic descent of the living species from the different tertiary divisions** which have been regarded as identical, but which I hold to be **specifically** different; so that I cannot adopt the idea of a transformation of the species of one formation into that of another. In enunciating these conclusions, let

it be understood that they are not inductions derived from the study of one particular class of animals . . . such as fishes . . . and applied to other classes, but the results of direct comparison of very considerable collections of petrifications of different formations and classes of animals" (Agassiz).

"Thus the crust of our earth appears to be a vast mound which God has heaped over the remains of many creations" (Pember).

(1:20-21). "Let the waters swarm." This implies life; and life, abundantly. Thousands and thousands of animalcules in a drop of water, with perfected bodies, will give one an idea to what extent this can be true. On the second day water was ready for fish, so also air was ready for fowl. "Let birds fly above the earth."

"And God **created**." After the command, "And God said," it is not recorded, "and it was so," but it is recorded that "**God created**"—a special, divine act occurred—it was "The origination of the absolutely new," i. e., sentient or animal life was "**bara**" or created. What is sentient life? Nobody knows. Definitions exist, yet with what degree of accuracy it is hard to estimate. "It is that principle which co-ordinates germinal cells in a self-conscious psychical or soul-life."

"**Sea monsters**," "**Every living creature** that moveth," . . . which properly designates all creatures that crawl and swarm, whether on land or sea" (Am. Com. on Gen.). "**Every winged bird**"—from the least to the greatest; from land birds to the water fowl. "The order followed on the fifth day was the creation of water animals first, next amphibians and other animals, and then birds" (Jameison on Gen.).

"God created . . . after their kind . . . after its kind" (see "Species Propagate Only 'After Its Kind,' " p. 190). "Geological research has established the fact that **all organisms were perfect AT THE FIRST**" (Jamieson's "Genesis"). "We see about us everywhere and always proof of the Bible law; viz., reproduction according to kind. . . . It requires more than millions of years to account for the varieties of life that inhabit the earth; it requires a Creator" (W. J. Bryan, "In His Image").

The first time, since Gen. 1:1, and the first time in the record of the six days that we find the word "create" used is in Gen. 1:21. We leave the fifth day with sentient life now added to the creations of God's reconstructed world.

If the fossil remains of the strata of rocks were not the result of a creation that occurred in Gen. 1:1, then we would be obliged to start our fifth day at the same time animal life appears in the rock strata. This would mean the Geologic Ages of fossil remains of animals would have to be assigned to the last two days or periods of creation, which appears out of harmony with the evidence at hand.

"God created." There was "the origination of the absolutely new;" that is, **sentient life was introduced** on the reconstructed earth.

God records (verse 1:21, p. 174) that He **created**, INDIVIDUALLY, "**every living creature**," "**after their kind**" and "**every winged bird**," "**after its kind**." He created each species of fish of the sea and each species of fowl of the air **all on the same** "yom" or day. An evolutionist couldn't get a foot-hold for an argument out of the Divine record. God's Word absolutely condemns the hypothesis of evolution of species.

"Mr. Wallace (Darwin's co-worker), admits that the advance from the vegetable to the animal kingdom is 'completely beyond all possibility of explanation by Matter, its laws and forces. It is the introduction of sensation or consciousness, constituting the fundamental distinction between the animal and vegetable kingdoms'" (Mauro's, "Evolution at the Bar").

THE SIXTH DAY—LAND ANIMALS

"And God said, Let the **earth bring forth** living creatures after their kind, cattle, and creeping things, and beasts of the earth after their kind: and it was so. And God **made** the beasts of the earth after their kind, and the cattle after their kind, and everything that creepeth upon the ground after its kind: and God saw that it was good." . . . "And **out of the ground** Jehovah God formed every beast of the field, and every bird of the heavens" (Gen. 1:24, 25; 2:19, Am. V.).

This Scripture records the appearance of sentient life in the form of land animals. But this Scripture does not record "the origination of the absolutely new," for sentient life had an initial advent on the **fifth** day. (See "The Fifth Day," p. 174.) "The origination" of sentient life, initially as "the absolutely new" **did not occur on the sixth day**. And this Scripture (Gen. 1:24, 25; 2:19), does not record a "bara" act by God, on the sixth day with reference to the sentient life of land animals. But this Scripture does record that "God **made** (asah) the beasts of the earth **after their kind** and the cattle **after their kind**, and everything that creepeth upon the ground **after its kind**." See "Some Non-Bara. Yet Formative Acts or Mandates of God," p. 137.

Scripture represents that God was as essentially needed in the making (asah) of each "kind" of sentient life of the sixth day, as He was in the creating (bara) of each "kind" of sentient life of the fifth day. **Scripture represents God as specially and divinely intervening in both cases.** Scripture, therefore, at this point directly condemns the hypothesis of evolution that land animals have evolved from marine animals.

Scripture also records that God "made" every beast and all cattle and everything that creepeth on the ground, **each "after its kind"** and **all** on the **same "day."** Evolution at this point is diametrically opposed to the Divine record of creation.

God commanded, "Let the **earth bring forth**" land animals. He did not command other animals (fish and fowl) that had been "created" on the fifth day to bring forth land animals by evolution. On the other hand, God **specifically** says, he "formed" every beast of the field (on sixth day) and every bird of the heavens (on fifth day) **out of the ground** (Gen. 2:19, Am. Ver.). Whether it was the fifth day when God "bara" or created, or the sixth day when God "asah" or made the animals—God formed "every beast" and "every bird" "**out of the ground.**" Scripture everywhere contradicts and condemns the hypothesis of evolution of species. The man who attempts to support the hypothesis of evolution by Scripture, either perverts Scripture or rejects it.

Scripture represents that sentient life expressed itself only at God's command and as God commanded. God **created** and **made** all animals, each pulsating with its own peculiar life and bound by an inexorable law of reproduction ("multiply"), each "after its kind." The word "multiply" speaks of a creation of the life to be multiplied.

"**GOD . . . CREATED ALL THINGS BY JESUS CHRIST**" (Eph. 3:9). "All things were made by him; and without him was not anything made that was made" (Jno. 1:3). This is God's Word as to "all" animals having been created by Him. Scripture sets forth that "Christ Jesus" was God incarnate or clothed with a human form. Of Himself, He said, "I and the Father are one" and "ALL power is given unto Me in heaven and in earth" (Matt. 28:18). See pages 8, 11-12 for evidence that Jesus was God as well as man. Scripture sets forth Christ as the Creator.

"For by him (God's Son) were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or

dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him and for him:

And he is before all things, and by him all things consist:

And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the first born from the dead; that in all things he might have the pre-eminence" (Col. 1:16-18).

Scripture sets forth that before Christ's incarnation, He was "With God" "In the beginning," as Creator (Jno. 1:1, 3, 14), and that "His name is called the Word of God" (Rev. 19:1-13; Jno. 1:1). As the spokesman for the triune God, He commanded, "And God said," and creation resulted (Gen. 1:1-2:3). This marvelous, consistent presentation, all thru the Bible, of Christ, as God and Creator, could only be here by Divine guidance or inspiration.

"Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for **thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created**" (Rev. 4:11).

Everywhere Scripture refers to God as the Creator of all life. **Typical evolution DENIES EVERYTHING God has said in His Word about creation. The Bible ascribes to God and to God alone the ability to create and to bring forth each "KIND" of life. And the natural world of God confirms the written Word of God.**

"No theory is so free from difficulties as that which assumes that every species of plant and animal, being created for certain purposes, as well as adapted for those countries and climates in which they were destined to live, were placed there in such numbers as the all-wise Creator thought good" (Jamieson on Genesis).

THE SIXTH DAY—MAN'S CREATION

"And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the birds of the heavens, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.

And God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. . . .

And Jehovah God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul" (Gen. 1:26, 27; 2:7).

"Agassiz says that the aim, 'in creating successively all the different types of animals which have passed away was to introduce man upon the surface of our globe. Man is the end towards which all the animal creation has tended from the first appearance of the Paleozoic fishes.'

"The late Professor Owen says: 'The knowledge of such a being as man must have existed before man appeared.'

"The Scriptures point to a connection between the rest of the creation and man. Here is the wonder and love of it all—God had thought of us from the first. It was for us that He planned; it was the formation of ourselves He was hastening towards.

"A mighty plan, fully grasped and laid clearly down from the first is not chance; and a steady march towards its completion means the successive touches of a Creative Hand, and not the swaying fortunes of a battle for existence. The two things are completely and essentially distinct. . . . God had His eye upon man, upon David, upon me, from the time the first life was placed upon the earth or in the seas. God meant me to behold His works, to possess their fulness, and to see His glory. He began a work from which He would not withdraw His hand

till man had crowned that work. The plan of this body of mine was never out of God's thought. Everything was a type and prophecy of me—a herald and a preparation for the coming of the earth's king" (Dr. J. Urquhart).

THE TRINITY IN CREATION

The Home Beautiful, having been completely furnished, was now prophetic of and awaiting its Perfect Pair. In the former acts of preparation and creation it was, "Let there be light"—"Let the waters"—"Let the earth," but now as the Divine command goes forth it reads, "Let **us** make man in **our** image after **our** likeness." This triune counsel indicates the importance from a divine viewpoint of the impending event; each Person of the Trinity was interested in man's creation. "Us" or "our" (referring to God the Father, God the Son and God the Holy Spirit) indicates the manifest relationships of God to his creatures. And now the base ingratitude of man manifests itself in evolution by a denial of the Creator, and a denial of His creation. God desired a man capable of governing a world as His vicegerent and He purposed to create that man in His own image.

"IN HIS IMAGE"

"There could be in it nothing impure, unjust, ignorant, evil, low, base, mean, or vile. It was created after the image of God; and that image St. Paul tells us, consisted in righteousness, true holiness, and knowledge (Eph. 4:24; Col. 3:10). Hence man was wise in his mind, holy in his heart and righteous in his actions" (Clark on Genesis).

God is love and desired objects to love, and so created them in the image of Himself. Thus, fellowship and the exercise of mutual love were made possible. "Thou shalt love the Lord thy God." God, incarnate, said: "My Father will love him and we will come unto him and make our abode with him" (Jno. 14:23). After thus creating man, God reveals Himself and His attributes and manifestations of love to man. God lays down the law and guides and guards and instructs, even as a parent.

"In our image," in reason, righteousness, conscience, personality—same in kind but not degree. Man has a finite mind, God an infinite mind, etc. God is infallible. Man is fallible and fell thus becoming distorted and degraded but can have the image renewed "after the image of Him who created him" (Col. 3:10; Eph. 4:24). The two big revelations in the Bible are the truths about God and the truths about man.

GOD "MADE" AND "CREATED" THEM

"Let us make . . . in our image . . . them (man) (1:26) . . . And God created (man) . . . male and female created he them" (1:27). Eve was "made" from Adam, by way of a rib (bone and flesh). (See "Woman's Creation" and "What the Bible Has to Say" and "The Evolutionist's Presentation of Creation and Life," pp. 180, 197, 201.) Adam was created and made (1:27; 2:7); yet, in Adam, Eve **was created**, as all the race were created in Adam in the original creative act. "All future generations of plants and animals have been seminally included in those which God formed in the beginning" (Adam Clark). So we see God both made and created them, male and female. Man is three-fold in nature—body, soul and spirit. "I pray God your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved blameless unto the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ" (1 Thes. 5:23).

In the creation and making of Adam, there was a "bara" act—the "origination of the absolutely new." Adam was, therefore, the "first" man. Man's creation is recorded in Gen. 1:26, 27, but the subject of

man's creation (male and female) is recurred to in Gen. 2:7 and 2:18, 21-25 where details are added.

GENESIS 2:7

"And Jehovah God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul" (Am. V.).

(1) "And Jehovah God formed man of the dust of the ground." That was the day that the Master Potter of all the ages took the clay and turned out His masterpiece. Nothing in the realm of flesh equals the marvels of the body of man. "Dust thou art, to dust returneth, was not spoken of the soul." The "dust of the ground" which composes a man's body is even now made over every seven years, within that body. This indicates the earthly bodies' origin and end. "Of the dust (literally, **man dust**; dust being a second accusative, specifying the material used) of the ground. . . . An astronomer said to a group of young people, 'your bodies are made of the best stuff in the universe. There is nothing better anywhere made of the same dust as the stars, the moon, the sun, the diamonds'" (Am. Com. on Gen.). Man was made in the "image of God"; a spark of life that might shine for Jesus.

"Moses had no knowledge as a human writer that his body was one with the ground, but modern chemical analysis detects fourteen elements in the human body which are identical with the dust—oxygen, nitrogen, silicon, magnesium, sodium, phosphorus—carbon, etc. Modern Analytical Chemistry has demonstrated to the world that what Moses said is true." How did Moses know? "The Lord spake unto Moses." This Biblical fact now confirmed by science is another of the great multitude of facts which prove that the Bible is necessarily the inspired Word of God.

(2) "And breathed into his nostrils the breath of life." The body or house is first prepared for its occupant, then Jehovah God inbreathed the breath of lives, for the word "life" is plural in the Hebrew. All human life—in a sense was incorporated in and "created" in this life. God's law of reproduction makes these "lives" all generically created in Adam, transmissible by natural law or by Divine intervention, as in the case of Eve and of Jesus Christ. The life of Eve was the first to come forth as the result of this original creation in Adam. The race was created in Adam. When Adam was affected, the race was affected. Hence, in his "fall," Adam heads up man's sin and condemnation. "Through the one man's disobedience the many were made sinners, even so thru the obedience of the one (Jesus Christ) shall the many be made righteous" (Rom. 5:19, Am. Ver.)

(3) "And man became a living soul." See Gen. 1:26-27, p. 133, and consider it in connection with this. It strikingly indicated the difference in this creation as compared with the former creations. A God-conscious person, with attributes capable of worshiping, loving and communing with God, had come into being. God **spoke** to man (Gen. 1:28, 29). Fellowship was possible.

In (1), (2) and (3) we have the body, soul and spirit of man. Truly God desires that they should be preserved blameless unto the coming of their Lord (1 Thes. 5:23). The bodily senses of taste, touch, etc., are avenues of manifesting sentient life. The spirit is capable of fellowship and conscious relations with God. "Thus saith Jehovah . . . every one . . . whom I have **created** for my glory, whom I have **formed**, yea, whom I have **made**" (Isa. 43:1, 7). (See "Woman's Creation," p. 180.)

Man is the product of heaven and earth; body from the dust; life from the breath of God—"fearfully and wonderfully made" (Ps. 139:14).

Creation was now crowned by God with its lord and ruler; and so Adam assumes dominion and gives the animals names characteristic of their life, as Scripture indicates. But as creation passed in review before its vicegerent, "there was not found a help meet for him" (Gen. 2:19, 20).

THE SIXTH DAY—WOMAN'S CREATION

(18) "And Jehovah God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him a help meet for him. . . .

(21) And Jehovah God caused a deep sleep to fall upon the man, and he slept; and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof:

(22) And the rib, which Jehovah God had taken from the man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man.

(23) And the man said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man.

(24) Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.

(25) And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed" (Gen. 2:18, 21-25 cf. 1:26-27).

(See 1:21)—"And Jehovah God caused a deep sleep to fall upon the man," that is, a supernatural sleep.

"And He took one of his ribs." "It is immaterial whether we render 'tsela' a rib, or a part of his side, for it may mean either; some part of man was to be used on the occasion, whether bone or flesh it matters not; though it is likely, from verse 23, that a part of both was taken" (A. Clarke), for Adam said: "This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh" (2:28).

(See 2:22). And the rib made (or builded) be into a woman—a counterpart of himself. This is prophetic of the tie of oneness between husband and wife, as is "bone of my bones," etc.

(See 2:23). "She was taken out of man." Can an evolutionist find any comfort in God's record of her creation. Be sure to see "Creation of Man," "What the Bible Has to Say" and "The Evolutionist's Presentation of Creation and Life," pp. 177, 197, 201. Under these subjects the creation of woman is dealt with at some length.

(See 2:24). The matter of sex, marriage, and offspring facing eternal destinies, is not a matter of blind chance and gamble as pictured by the evolutionist who preaches Satan's gospel of death, but it shows infinite wisdom and evidences the hand of God in creation.

(See 2:25). No taint of sin had touched a human soul; all was as pure as the God given snow; unashamed and as innocent as new born babes.

It is to be noted that in the detailed account of woman's creation as set forth in Gen. 2 that the word "create" does not occur, yet it does occur with reference to her in Gen. 1:26, 27. She was "builded" and created.

NUMERICS OF "AND GOD SAID"

"And God said, let us make man in our image." The Hebrew word "Elohim" is here translated "God." It represents the trinity of God in unity—Father, Son and Holy Spirit. All three participated in man's creation. And all three participate in man's redemption, the covenants of which are symbolized in Scripture by the number "seven." See p. 144.

The Hebrew words "Vayohmer Elohim" are translated into the English expression, "And God said." In the Hebrew there are ten letters having numeric values as follows: 6, 10, 1, 40, 200; 1, 30, 5, 10, 40. The numeric value of these words is thus 343, which is $7 \times 7 \times 7$. It is the

cube or third power of seven. The "new Jerusalem," the city of God, "lieth foursquare . . . the **length** and the **breadth** and the **height** of it are **equal**" (Rev. 21:1-16). "**Three** is the number of the divine fulness" (Dr. F. W. Grant's "Numerical Structure of Scripture," p. 38). Hence the covenant by the Trinity is symbolized by the numeric value of "And God said," that is, by 343, which is $7 \times 7 \times 7$. God the Father "sevens Himself," God the Son "sevens Himself," and God the Holy Spirit "sevens Himself" to accomplish redemption for man (tri-une man; body, soul and spirit), by making peace thru the blood of the Lamb of God. See fig. 7, p. 147. This (343) is the only number in existence that could express this truth. This is accident or design.

The Lamb of God was typified by the passover lamb of the Old Testament. The truth of the passover is the heart of the Bible as it speaks of atonement by blood and of redemption. Many prophets, thru many centuries, wrote the Old Testament. Yet the Old Testament contains the word "passover" (or its Hebrew equivalent) just 49 (7×7) times. The New Testament contains the word "passover" just 28 (4×7) times. The entire Bible contains the word "passover" just 77 (7×11) times. Eleven, in Scripture, is the number expressive of **grace**. 7×11 would thus signify "covenanted, redemptive relationships" "by grace." The heart of these redemptive covenants is "the **everlasting** covenant" which is mentioned in the Old Testament just 14 (2×7) times. And Christ is the **second** person in the Trinity and the one whose "blood . . . cleanseth us from all sin," thus actualizing the covenant of redemption. Now the "Son of man" was "Christ our passover" who was "sacrificed for us" (1 Cor. 5:7). The gospel of Luke gives the genealogy of "the Son of man," and according to Luke's record, from God, incarnate ("Christ the Lord," Son of man), back to Adam, son of God, there are just 77 or 7×11 in the line of genealogy. The four gospels record just 7 different sayings of Christ from the cross; 3 in John, 3 in Luke, 1 in Matthew. (Mark also records the one in Matthew.) The number of words (in the Greek text) used in these 7 sayings are 49 (or 7×7). The last (or **seventh**) recorded saying of Christ's from the cross was, "It is **Finished**" and seven signifies **finished** redemption, the covenant of which 7 is expressive.

The numerics in this book are glimpses of a great ocean of truth of this kind that is in the Bible. **All of this is accident or design.** "No man or set of men" can take Hebrew and Greek and write and maintain the numeric designs of the Bible. **Therefore, man never wrote the Bible** and these designs are therefore **necessarily divine**. The Bible is the inspired "Word of God." It is the Scripture which "cannot be broken." "Prepare to meet thy God." "God . . . spake in time past unto the fathers **by the prophets**" (Heb. 1:1). God created man and uses and guides him when He elects. He can control man's mind and hand at will. He guides the lone bird from the far north to the far south. "With God, all things are possible."

The Bible is abundantly able to defend and maintain itself against all enemies. "The Word of our God shall stand forever." Our heavenly Father did not create us and then leave us without a light or a revelation. And He didn't give us a revelation that we couldn't depend upon. **The very fact that God gave man a revelation would insure that He would preserve it.**

"Jesus Christ, the son of David, the son of Abraham" (Matt. 1:1). God "swore" or "**sevens Himself**" (see p. 145) unto Abraham and David to bring the Redeemer into the world thru them. Therefore, when an

Israelite saw the number **"seven"** it was significant and precious to him. The Lord kept this symbol of covenanted, redemptive relationships before them by **"the seven golden candlesticks,"** etc. The candle speaks of light, which breaks into **"seven"** as in the color illustrations, p. 146. And Christ, the Redeemer is **"the Light of the world."** **"Seven"** dominated the structure and service of the tabernacle in numerous ways.

God rested on **"the seventh day."** Enoch **"the seventh from Adam"** was translated that he should not see death. (See the significance of the tower of Babel with its **seven** platforms, Vol. 2.) There are **seven** days in a week and the **seventh** one is for rest. It's the Lord's day and is a constant reminder of God's covenants of redemption. Yet man tramples the sabbath day and this remembrance under foot. The pass-over was annually sacrificed on the fourteenth (2 x 7) day, as a **"memorial."** The feast of unleavened bread following it was **"seven days ye must eat unleavened bread"** (Lev. 23:6). At the feast of Pentecost, **"Ye shall count unto you from the morrow after the sabbath, from the day that ye brought the sheaf of the wave-offering; seven sabbaths (7 x 7 days) shall be complete"** (Lev. 23:15). The feast of Trumpets was on the first day of the **seventh** month (Lev. 23:24). The day of atonement was **"the tenth day of this seventh month"** (Lev. 23:27). The remnant of Israel was exiled to Babylon for **seventy** years.

"In the first year of his reign, I Daniel understood by books the number of the years, whereof the word of the Lord came to Jeremiah the prophet, that he would accomplish seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem" (Dan. 9:2).

"Seventy weeks are determined upon thy people and upon thy holy city, to finish the transgression, and to make an end of sins, and to make reconciliation for iniquity, and to bring in everlasting righteousness, and to seal up the vision and prophecy, and to anoint the Most Holy" (Dan. 9:24).

The New Testament is alive with the preceding truths. It closes its pages with Revelation. This is the book containing the prophecies of the consummations of redemption. **"Seven"** dominates the book—**"Seven churches,"** **"seven spirits,"** **"seven golden candlesticks,"** **"seven stars,"** **"seven lamps of fire,"** **"seven seals,"** **"seven horns,"** **"seven eyes,"** **"seven angels,"** **"seven trumpets,"** **"seven thunders,"** **"seven thousand,"** **"seven heads,"** **"seven crowns,"** **"seven last plagues,"** **"seven golden vials full of the wrath of God,"** **"seven mountains,"** **"seven kings,"** etc. The central figure in Revelation is the **"Lamb as it had been slain,"** Who becomes **"King of kings and Lord of lords"** (Rev. 5:6; 19:11-16). And the word **"Lamb"** is used as a name for the Redeemer just 28 (4 x 7) times in the book of Revelation, and this is exactly the number of times the word **"passover"** is used in the entire New Testament (see p. 180). **And the passover was a type of the Lamb of God.**

The numeric designs in Scripture prove that the original manuscripts of the prophets were the inspired Word of God. These designs are still so perfectly preserved in our present translations of the Hebrew and Greek that we are able to confidently affirm that we have the **"inerrant Word of God."**

No other book in all the world has been as carefully and accurately translated and preserved as the Bible. Man has no difficulty in believing that we have a reliable text of what Herodotus, Aristotle or Caesar wrote. In transcribing the Scriptures the ancient scribes made every letter with the greatest accuracy, seeing that every letter and every word was exact and in the right place. They even counted every word to see that not one word was put in and not one word left out. This has made it possible

to preserve the Scripture and has maintained its numeric designs. If you add books to or take books away from the Bible, you also destroy marvelous numeric designs. God has maintained His Word by designs thruout the centuries just as He has maintained the snow flake or crystal by designs.

Herschel says that nature everywhere tends to express itself in numbers. The numbers and ratios that are found in nature are the very same that are in the Bible. This demonstrates that the God who wrote the laws of nature is the God who wrote the laws of the Bible. Other numbers besides seven are involved in the numeric designs of Scripture. The number "seven" has been stressed because of its redemptive significance.

See p. 70 and note what Dr. Hort has said about the remarkable accuracy and perfection of the present text of the New Testament.

Concerning Robert Dick Wilson, Ph.D., D.D., Professor of Semitic Philology in Princeton Theological Seminary: At four years of age he could read; at eight "among other books," he read Rawlinson's "Ancient Monarchies," at nine, he selected and read "classics"; at fourteen he was "ready for the sophomore class at Princeton." He learned languages with the same ease that a rabbit learns to run. He specialized in languages and spent fifteen years studying under the foremost instructors in the world. Then he spent fifteen years reading the most ancient manuscripts in their original tongues and in their native lands. He reads some forty-five languages and dialects. It is doubtful if any living man is better able to read or had a wider experience in reading the ancient documents of the Old Testament and the history connected therewith. He has pointed out inaccuracy after inaccuracy on the part of the destructive critics. Dr. Wilson says: "No one knows enough to affirm with confidence that any one of the prophetic books was not written by the man whose name it bears. No one knows enough to assert that the kings and others mentioned did not do and say what is ascribed to them." Of the destructive critics he says they "cut up the books and doctor the documents and change the text and wrest the meaning, to suit the **perverted view** of their own fancy."

Dr. Wilson has torn to shreds, with overwhelming evidence, the arguments of the leading destructive critics. In order to answer a single sentence of a noted destructive critic, Dr. Wilson read **all the extant, ancient literature of the period under discussion in numerous languages**, and collected no less than 100,000 citations from that literature in order to get the basic facts which when found showed that **the critic was wrong**. Dr. Wilson says, "**NO MAN knows enough to assail the truthfulness of the Old Testament . . .** the assured results of modern scholarship, is nothing more than the quicksand footsteps of a really inexcusable, downright ignorance." Dr. Wilson further says "When a man says to me 'I don't believe the Old Testament,' he makes no impression on me. But if he says, 'I've got the evidence to show that the Old Testament is wrong' . . . then . . . **I'm ready for him.**" The higher critics have fallen in serried ranks before the massed formations of evidence of this masterful man of God. "Professor Ewald of Gottingen, the greatest German Old Testament scholar of his time, and Professors Driver and Gray of Oxford, the writers of many books and of many articles in the Encyclopedia Britannica, Hastings, and the Expository Times, are proved to be wrong." (See "Is the Higher Criticism Scholarly?" published by The Sunday School Times Co., p. 51.) Dr. Wilson says that God has maintained thruout the centuries, the integrity of the translation of the Old Testament Scriptures. He says

you can place your hand on any of its pages and rest assured that every page is "the Word of God," as originally given to man.

In answer to the question "What do you try to do for students?" Dr. Wilson replied, "I try to give them . . . by evidence . . . such an intelligent faith in the Old Testament Scriptures that they will **never doubt them as long as they live.**"

Dr. Panin says there is not a paragraph in the Bible (In the Hebrew and Greek) that doesn't have some sort of numeric design involving "seven" in it. Thus every paragraph of this Book of redemption is stamped with the finger of God.

Jesus Christ, who was God incarnate, bid us rest in absolute confidence in the Bible as "the Word of God." It is the Scripture which "cannot be broken." He guarantees us that if we will believe, we shall be saved (Jno. 3:16).

"For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven."

The Scripture is the book of redemption. Redemption, logically and necessarily has certain basic and fundamental truths. Therefore, Fundamentalism is as old as the Word of God. If a man is "just a Christian" and believes what God has said in His Word about these "fundamental truths," he is ipso facto a Fundamentalist. Jesus was a Fundamentalist. He said, "The Scripture cannot be broken." It is "the Word of God" (Jno. 10:35; Mk. 7:13). Paul was a Fundamentalist. He said, "It is **in truth**, the Word of God" (1 Thes. 2:13). Peter was a Fundamentalist. He said, "The word of God which liveth and abideth **forever**" (1 Pet. 1:23).

Liberalism or Modernism is departure from and opposition to the Bible, Christ and God. **The ear-mark of modernism is the rejection of Scripture, either as a whole or in part.** This statement is true of every real modernist that you can name.

Modernism is the fulfillment of the prophecies that in "the last days" "false prophets" and "false teachers" would arise and be false to Christ and false to the Bible. The prophets revealed that they would not "endure sound doctrine" but "depart from the faith" "even denying the Lord that bought them."

Why should a child of God refuse to stand for and defend these "fundamental truths" of the redemption for which Christ died? Peter and Paul lined up with and stood by the Lord in being faithful to the Scriptures. They were willing to do, to dare and to die. They "fought a good fight." They finished their course. They "kept the faith." Henceforth there is laid up for them a "crown of righteousness."

May God have mercy on the preacher who doesn't know whether he is a foot or horse-back. Will God have mercy on the pink-pussy-footers, spineless straddlers, and Judas Iscariots that are in the ministry at the present time? **A PREACHER SHOULD STICK TO THE BIBLE OR STEP OUT OF THE PULPIT.**

Do It Now.

God being my helper, I will stick to the Bible.

Name.....Sign here

Address.....

Date.....

Modernism or liberalism is the fulfillment of the prophecies made centuries ago, that in "the last days" the antichrist movement would head up **inside** as well as outside of the church. Modernism is essentially

anti-Christ and anti-Bible. When you attack the Bible, you attack Christ. When you attack Christ you attack the Bible. The Bible and Christ are inseparable. The theme of Christ, the Lamb of God, is **the heart** of all Scripture. Of this Scripture, Christ said it "cannot be broken." Jesus said "For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled" (Matt. 5:18). "One jot," that is, the smallest of the Hebrew letters. Jesus Christ was a Fundamentalist to the extent of the **least** letter and therefore a †defender of the faith to the **last** letter. What a contrast between Christ and the modernistic preacher and "scholar." Are you a faithful steward of the Gospel or will you be ashamed to look Christ in the face on the judgment day?

Christ was God, incarnate. His statements that the "Scripture cannot be broken" and "One jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law" are His **assurance** and **guarantee** that He has and will maintain the Scriptures in their integrity thruout the centuries. "O, ye of little faith." A child of God should be ashamed of himself, who has believed what the anti-Christ and modernists have said, yet failed to believe what Jesus Christ has said.

"He that dwelleth in the secret place of the Most High shall abide under the shadow of the Almighty.

I will say of the **Lord, He is** my refuge and my fortress: my God; **in him will I trust.**

Surely he shall deliver thee from the snare of the fowler, and from the noisome pestilence.

He shall cover thee with his feathers, and under his wings shalt thou trust: **his truth** shall be thy shield and buckler. . . .

For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways" (Ps. 91:1-4, 11).

Just as the Almighty keeps His children under the shadow of His wings—"safe in the arms of Jesus," so He has preserved and maintains His precious Word.

The modernist, skeptic, and anti-Christ lay great complaint at the door of the child of God, because he is "dogmatic" about Scripture. Why shouldn't he be dogmatic? He has "the Word of God" to stand on. To be less than dogmatic would be unfaithfulness to God. Jesus Christ was dogmatic. He said "the Scripture cannot be broken."

Children of the Lord should **see that their preachers stick to the Bible, or step out of the pulpit.** If your denomination insists on defending preachers who force modernism down your throats, had you better quit your denomination? **Stick to Christ. Stick to the Bible. DON'T BE A JUDAS ISCARIOT AND BETRAY EITHER THE LORD OR HIS WORD.**

THE "LIBERAL": As well have traitors in the army and expect the nation to win its battles, as to have traitors in the pulpit and expect the church to win its warfare. God ordained the pulpit to be occupied in defending and proclaiming the Scriptures. Of the various traitors to Jesus Christ and betrayers of "the Word of God," isn't the self-styled, typical "liberal" about the basest? Some of them nestle, sheltered within the inner circle, as they hold "the money bag"; yet, "sell out" the Lord as cheap as Judas did. Judas had conscience enough to hang himself. Some "liberals" have known Christ as Redeemer, yet have joined the ranks of those who betray the Lord and His Word.

A "liberal" refuses to be governed and submit to truth and law. No "narrow way," no "dogmatic" stuff, no "Word of God" for them. Thieves, and the wretched wrecks of the human race are all "liberals." "Let us alone" is their cry, while they undermine the Government. "Let us alone" is the "liberal's" cry while he wrecks the church. Wreck the government and church and you wreck the home and commonwealth. Christianity is not a truth that shifts with the sands of time, even though some of its misguided or hypocritical devotees

† The original manuscripts as they came from the prophet's pen were "the Word of God." We have these in such accuracy of translation that we can confidently affirm that we have "the inerrant Word of God."

are betrayers of and traitors to its doctrines. Christianity was ordained by God and sets forth the laws of redemption. Jesus Christ, Who was God, incarnate, said, "The Scripture cannot be broken." It was "delivered" "once for all" for ever. "The same yesterday, and today, and for ever" (Heb. 13:8).

The Pharisees wore fine frocks, occupied leading pulpits, but betrayed both God and His Word. So did the scribes. They were the "educated" men of their day. Christ charged both of them with being "whited sepulchres," and with "making void the word of God by" their own "traditions" (Mk. 7:13, Am. V.). So do the "liberals." Upon these faithless, religious leaders, Christ pronounced fearful woes. He charged them with being "blind guides," a "generation of vipers"—"for a pretence" ye "make long prayers." The Pharisees and scribes were "liberals." They perverted and set the Word of God aside and helped crucify the Lord. So does the typical "liberal." He crucifies "the Son of God afresh." Christ charged them with compassing "sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves." Christ charged them with "outwardly" appearing "righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocrisy and iniquity"—"Ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men, for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in" (Matt. 23). The "liberal" cries "let us alone"—"no toleration." That is the "harlot's" cry. She is also a "liberal." In Scripture, God likens faithlessness and apostasy to harlotry (Hosea 1:2; Jeremiah 23:1-16). If it wasn't akin to harlotry, God wouldn't compare it to harlotry.

THE SEVENTH DAY—DAY OF REST

"And the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God finished his work which he had made and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and hallowed it; because that in it he rested from all his work which God had created and made" (Gen. 2:1-3 Am. V.).

"Observing Sunday is a temporal sign that man belongs not only to time but eternity" (President of Cornell).

"It is essentially necessary, not only to the body of man, but to all the animals employed in his service: take this away and the labour is too great, both man and beast would fail under it. Without this consecrated day religion itself would fail, and the human mind, becoming sensualized, would soon forget its origin and end. . . . Even in a state of innocence, when all was perfection and excellence, when God was clearly discovered in all his works, every place being his temple, every moment a time of worship, and every object an incitement to religious reverence and adoration—even then, God chose to consecrate a seventh part of time to his more especial worship, and to hallow it unto his own service by a perpetual decree. Who then shall dare to reverse this order of God? . . . God gave the Sabbath, his first ordinance, to man, while all the nations of the world were seminally included in him (Adam), and while he stood the father and representative of the whole human race; therefore the Sabbath is not for one nation, for one time, or for one place. It is the fair type of heaven's eternal day—of the state of endless blessedness and glory, where human souls, having fully regained the Divine image, and become united to the Centre and Source of all perfection and excellence shall rest in God, unutterably happy through the immeasurable progress of duration! Of this consummation every returning Sabbath should at once be a type, a remembrancer, and a foretaste, to every pious mind; and these it must be to all who are taught of God" (A. Clarke).

A holy God created a holy man and woman and started them out in life on the morning of a holy day, and desires that men maintain holy lives. "Be ye holy for I am holy"—and He has given them a Holy Book for a guide. "Holy, holy, holy Lord God Almighty, which was, and is, and is to come." "Holy Father," "Holy One" and the "Holy Spirit." One of the Elders said, "These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes and made them white in the blood of the Lamb" (Rev. 7:14). Amen.

Section 10

EVOLUTION EXPOSED

Definition: Dr. Buchner speaking for the naturalistic and materialistic evolutionists says, "Evolution means, that a single protoplasmic cell by a process of multiplying forms, through an almost infinite number of species, extending through an almost infinite number of ages, **produced with no supernatural interpositions** all the forms of life that have existed on earth" (Quoted by Professor Luther T. Townsend, D.D., S.T.D., M.V.I., in his excellent book, "Collapse of Evolution." Hereafter, quotations from him and his work will usually be referred to in abbreviated form).

Dr. Buchner's statements are either true or false. They diametrically oppose Scripture's account of creation. If the Bible is wrong and evolution right, it's time we knew it. As a juror, one is obliged to hear the evidence and render a verdict according to the law and the preponderating evidence. Scripture has been accepted as an established fact by the wisest men of many centuries. If evolution has a case against the Bible, it must be based on known and established facts and it must produce the preponderance of evidence. If it cannot, we conclude it is because it doesn't have it. The juror is then obliged to decide against evolution.

EVOLUTION'S ORIGIN: Empedocles (492-432 B.C.) is said to be the father of evolution, and he taught that the higher forms of life arise out of the lower. Aristotle taught, "the lower forms of animals, such as fleas and worms, even mice and frogs, sprang up spontaneously from the moist earth. All dry bodies, which become damp, and all damp bodies which are dried, engender animal life." According to Vergil, bees are produced from the putrifying entrails of a young bull. . . . And similar absurdities continued to be taught until comparatively modern times. Van Helmont, a celebrated alchemist physician who flourished during the brilliant reign of Louis XIV, wrote: "The smells which arise from the bottom of morasses produce frogs, slugs, leeches, grasses, and other things."

All false teaching has the devil for its sire and is enmity against Jesus Christ and the truths of God. These ancients knew not God, neither did they receive His teachings concerning creation or redemption. Darwin re-vamped their heathen views of the origin and evolution of life forms.

EVOLUTION'S CONFUSION: Its advocates are a regular "Babel" of disagreement among themselves and they have injected this virus into the church and are thereby disorganizing it.

The Bible or Word of God **never** changes tho some of its friends and all of its foes misrepresent it.

Prof. Conn says, "No two scientists are agreed as to what is the cause of the supposed changes of species." Darwin with his peculiar views; Tyndall with his "fiery-cloud" explanation; Spencer, Huxley and many other leaders all had different, fantastic, imaginative guesses, explaining evolution, and these leaders from time to time, had many lesser lights, with different and varying views of the subject.

Of Darwin, W. J. Bryan says: "His works are full of words indicating uncertainty. The phrase 'we may well suppose,' occurs over eight hun-

dred times in his two principal works. . . . After locating our gorilla and chimpanzee ancestors in Africa, he concludes that 'it is useless to speculate on this subject.' If the uselessness of speculation had occurred to him at the beginning of his investigation he might have escaped responsibility for shaking the faith of two generations by his guessing on the whole subject of biology."

Evolution says you are unprogressive if you fail to accept her tenets. But when you do, you retrograde to the false teaching of heathen philosophers, and you reject the Word of God.

EVOLUTION'S FOLLOWERS: As a rule they are anti-Bible, anti-God, anti-law and anti-government. Tho they may read the Bible and talk about God, in most cases its devotees are of the class Jesus referred to, as having the devil for their father. You will find that murderers, anarchists, criminals, scarlet women and all similar classes unite with the anti-Christ, anti-Bible scientist and scholar in accepting and advocating this doctrine. There is no difference between an ungodly heart under a white shirt front and one beneath a harlot's scarlet robe. "Not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble" accept the Christ of Calvary's cross or place the government of their lives under His administration. So it is useless to look to either of these three classes, as a rule, to find men who worship God or accept His word. "The wisdom of this world is foolishness with God." Counting themselves wise, they become fools, and retain neither truth nor rational views nor God in their knowledge. The most irrational men are to be found among the anti-Bible, anti-Christ scientists and rationalists.

The devotees of evolution are artful and use arguments which deceive. They apply the term "evolution" when referring to "little hills becoming big hills;" "shells and skeletons becoming building stones;" "wheat becoming bread," etc. The issue of evolution is further befogged by referring to man's altering social, educational and industrial attainments as "evolution." This has nothing to do with the real issue of evolution of animal to man. This sharp practice is that of the notorious criminal lawyer who takes black and perverts it and makes the jury think it's white.

"Herbert Spencer built his scheme of social economy and government upon the hypothesis of organic evolution."

Evolution's great leaders, such as, Neitzsche, and Haeckel illustrate the character of its supporters, their method and its destructive effects. "Neitzsche was violently opposed to God and the Bible and the account of creation and to responsibility to the Creator. He taught and practiced the rise and reign of the brute—the superman, and died in a mad-house. And Bryan says that "he not only rejected the Creator, but all moral standards." "Haeckel . . . was utterly discredited because of his audacious and unscrupulous conduct in forging evidences to support the theory" (Quoted from "Evolution at the Bar" by Philip Mauro. Hereafter quotations from him and his good work will usually be referred to in abbreviated form). We understand Haeckel took bones from different animals and placed them in the same skeleton, and offered the skeleton as proof of evolution. "Prof. Paulsen, of Berlin, has exposed some of Haeckel's fallacies and regards his reasoning as 'a disgrace to Germany'."

"It is reported of Professor E. D. Cope that on seeing a newly discovered specimen that controverted one of his hypotheses, he quietly said; 'If no one were looking I should be glad to throw that fossil out of the window.' And that very thing has been done by more than one scientific investigator. . . ."

"The professor of physiological chemistry in the University of Chicago, for instance, is reported to have used recently in his lecture-room these words: 'The divine creation of life is a pure humbug. Life originally happened. Life is made up of certain organic compounds. Certain organic compounds were made by nature. The compounds came together in some manner, and the result was life. I believe in a short time real life will be created in the laboratory.' Weigh these words that will be a poison in the life blood of the young men who hear and believe them: 'the divine creation of life is a pure humbug!' That sentence challenges such men as Agassiz, Beale, Carpenter, Dana, Davy, Dawson, Faraday, Forbes, Gray, Helmoltz, Herschel, Lord Kelvin, Leibnitz, Lutze, Maury, Pasteur, Romanes, Verdt and hundreds of others who ascribe to God and to God alone the power to originate life." (Townsend.)

THE SPONTANEOUS GENERATION MYTH DISPELLED

Darwin himself declared that spontaneous generation is "absolutely inconceivable." Professor Conn says, "Protoplasm is not a chemical compound but a mechanism. . . . Unorganized protoplasm does not exist. . . . It could never have been produced by chemical process. Chemistry has produced starches, fats, albumens, but not protoplasm."

Wilson, the great authority on the cell says, "The making of a single cell, the simplest creature that lives, is as great a mystery as that of man" (Patterson, "O. S. Evol.").

Prof. Tyndall . . . says, "Proofs of . . . spontaneous generation . . . are still wanting. I also hold with Virchow that the failures have been so lamentable that the doctrine is **utterly** discredited." "The chemical origin of life, at one time advocated by Herbert Spencer, was abandoned in the last edition of his 'Biology,' and the words 'spontaneous generation' are mentioned no longer in the higher scientific circles except when classifying it among those theories that have not a particle of scientific or experimental evidence in their support." "No spontaneous generation of life . . . (means) that the passage from the mineral world to the plant or animal world is hermetically sealed on the mineral side . . . only by the bending down into this dead world of some living form can these dead atoms be gifted with the properties of vitality. . . . It is a very mysterious law which guards in this way the portals of the living world. And if there is one thing in nature more worth pondering for its strangeness, it is the spectacle of this vast helpless world of the dead cut off from the living by the Law of Biogenesis, and denied forever the possibility of resurrection within itself. . . . The great law of Biogenesis confirms the truth of a real creation" (George McCready Price, "Q.E.D.").

Lord Kelvin says, "Forty years ago I asked Liebig, walking somewhere in the country, if he believed that the grass and flowers which we saw around us grew by mere chemical force. He answered, 'No, no more than I believe that a book of botany could grow by mere chemical force. . . .' It is not in dead matter that men live and move, and have their being; but in a creative and directive Power, which science compels us to accept as an article of faith. Is there anything so absurd as to believe that a number of atoms, by falling together of their own accord, could make a crystal, a microbe, or a living animal?" (Mauro's "Evol. at the Bar"). Order and design in nature are evidence of the mind of God in creation.

NO LIFE EXCEPT FROM LIFE

Huxley suggests that we "look beyond the abyss of geologically recorded time and recognize . . . a most wonderful event . . . the begin--

ning of organic life." "God created." Truly it was a most wonderful event, Mr. Huxley.

"Modern science compels us to believe in Creation as the only possible origin of life—a Creation entirely different from anything now going on, and one that can never be made to fit into any scheme of uniformitarian evolution" (Price).

"Mr. Darwin admits (because he must) that there is nothing 'unscientific' in assuming the direct intervention of the Creator in originating the first living forms; and **if so, there is nothing unscientific in assuming His intervention to create all living species**" (Mauro).

"Every living organism has come into existence from a living portion or portions of a pre-existing organism" (P. C. Mitchell, Ency. Brit.).

"Nothing but life generates life" (Pasteur).

"Life is produced by life, and **only** by life—I am ready to accept this as an article of faith in science, valid for all time, and in all space" (Lord Kelvin).

When evolution once admits the need of God in any part of the creation of life, there is really no place for evolution to stop. If God was needed in the creation of a single life cell, He was **certainly** needed in the creation of man. Science says, "No life except from life." Then where did life come from? Either sidestep or say, "from God." God, once admitted, then it's in order to accept God's account of creation. Genesis 1:1 to 2:3 once admitted, **then you have a rock on which to rest**. Why don't you admit the self-evident fact that life is from God? Spell out God's name once as you write your learned articles about the origin and processes of life. It may be that He will have mercy. Think of the way you have ignored and dishonored Him as Creator. "The god of this world (Satan) hath blinded the minds of them which believe not" (2 Cor. 4:4). Who says so? God says so.

SPECIES PROPAGATE ONLY "AFTER ITS KIND"

TESTIMONY OF GOD'S WORD: "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth . . . (the) grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, **after his kind**. . . . And God created great whales, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, **after their kind**, and every winged fowl **after his kind**. . . . And God made the beast of the earth **after his kind**, and cattle **after their kind**, and everything that creepeth upon the earth **after his kind**: and God saw that it was good" (Gen. 1:1, 12, 21, 25).

Variations within the species: There is variation in man. Its limits lie between the most degenerate and the highest type. But man has never been less than man. "Not one of us knows anything" . . . about . . . "The Origin of Variation" (Samuel Butler, author of "Evolution, Old and New"). By taking advantage of the laws of variation man is able to perfect the race horse or the draft horse; fine corn from poor corn, etc. By variation, species are assisted in adapting themselves to changed surroundings. "There are very clear limits to variation" [Quoted from "Evolution Criticized," (see pp. 169, 174-5, 217-9) by T. B. Bishop, Member of the Council of Victoria Institute. Hereafter, quotations from him and his excellent work will usually be referred to in abbreviated form]. . . . "Men have not been able to produce a green horse, a pigeon with alternate black and white feathers in the tail . . . neither . . . a blue rose, nor a cat that cannot scratch. . . . Variation is limited as to the **kind** of changes that can be produced in an organism, and as to the

extent to which special features of the organism can be carried. . . . T. Vernon Wollaston says in regard to such limitations: 'Variation may have full play, and be by us undefinable, and **yet positively restrained** within the limits which were imposed upon it originally for each separate species; and therefore, conversely, a species may be indefinitely plastic, and yet remain true to its type' " (Coleoptera Atlantidum, p. 39).

De Vries' experiment with a single primrose is frequently cited as telling evidence of evolution. Prof. Weismann says, that the conclusions drawn by De Vries in his "observations on the Evening Primrose . . . rest upon a **very insecure foundation**" . . . it "was probably a hybrid" . . . "the wild species with which De Vries experimented . . . yielded only negative results." De Vries' experiments with "**one** plant . . . are rendered comparatively valueless owing to its not being itself a known wild species, but probably a hybrid. Was there ever such a mountain of theory reared upon such an almost **infinitesimal** basis of fact?" (Dr. Wallace).

Gullible evolutionists, periodicals and text books, that students are compelled to study, reject the Word of God and broadcast and rest upon a "valueless" "infinitesimal" foundation. **The main point is this: The De Vries' rose was always a rose.** It was never a pansy. The Porto Santo rabbits were always rabbits. They were never cats. The Ancon sheep were always sheep; never antelopes. The Paraguay cattle were always cattle; never horses, etc. In the providence of God, He created species each "after its kind" and gave them the ability to vary within the limits of their species. And all about us we have the marvelous wonders of the creation of Him, who so loved us that He gave Himself for us. Believe and thou shalt not perish. (Jno. 3:16). We worship the Lord who created the heavens and the earth. We rest on the Word of God and not on the vagaries of a single primrose in the hands of an evolutionist. A man who will lie about the Word of God, as it records creation will lie about the world of God as it manifests creation.

TESTIMONY OF GOD'S WORLD or NATURAL HISTORY'S TESTIMONY: Evolution collides with the testimony of the world of God, and the Word of God.

"If you breed from the male and the female of the same race, you of course have off-spring of like kind; and if you make the off-spring breed together, you obtain the same results; and if you breed from these again, you will still have the same kind of off-spring. There is no check. But if you take members of two distinct species, however similar they may be to each other, and make them breed together, you will find a check. If you cross two such species, then, although you may get off-spring in the case of the first cross, yet if you attempt to breed from the products of that crossing (which are what are called hybrids) that is, if you mate a male and a female hybrid then the result is that in 99 cases out of 100, you will get no off-spring at all. . . . Now, what, we would ask, is the inference to be drawn from this fact? Certainly it follows that the evolution of one species from another is an impossibility; so that, at this point again, the theory breaks down completely. Indeed we can read as much between the lines of the admission which Mr. Huxley . . . is constrained . . . to say . . . 'It is not absolutely proven that a group of animals, having all the characteristics exhibited by "species" in nature, has ever been originated by selection, whether artificial or natural' " (Mauro).

" 'All life from preceding life' is a motto of modern Science. Science admits it is now profitless under existing conditions to discuss the origin of life." . . . "The **theory** of the continuity of the protoplasm accounts

sufficiently for . . . the continuity of existing species but it leaves unaccounted for the possibility of the formation of new species" (Int. Encyc. 1918, Vol. 3, Biology).

"Scientific men, like Luther Burbank, have sought by every conceivable means to develop new species, but notwithstanding some remarkable results in the way of 'varieties,' it has been found (1) that the barrier of species cannot be crossed, (2) that every 'variety' produced artificially, if left to itself for a few generations, reverts to the original type." Evolution assumes that there is a strong inherent law in all kinds of life to depart from their species. The teeming thousands of different kinds of types testify that they do not tend to depart from their original species, unless it be to retrograde. This is in accord with the Word of God, for it is there recorded that nature fell with man (Rom. 8:17-23). Throughout the centuries foxes make their holes, beavers build their dams, birds build their nests in the same old way that God originally started them at the job.

"Nature seems to be very pronounced in keeping genera and clearly marked species from inter-breeding and having fertile progeny." "Mongrel forms . . . never have been successfully established nor perpetuated beyond a few generations" (Prof. Peschel of Leipsic).

"If transmutations were now going on, the world would be so full of animals in various stages of reformation and variation, the classifications would be out of the question." "And yet in the entire field of history not a discovery has been made indicating that among these multitudes of species and billions of individuals, there has been a single case of transmutation by what is known as natural selection."

TESTIMONY OF GEOLOGY: Life in a sense, is in successive orders, because God created it that way: fish, fowl, beast, man. That these "successive orders" are due to transmutation of species by evolution, is as rank a fallacy as was ever perpetrated on the public.

Sir William Dawson: "The record of the rocks is decidedly against evolutionists, . . . every grade of life was in its highest and best estate when first introduced."

"The testimony of geology, as adduced by geologists and even by evolutionists, is that **it does not sustain** the claim of evolution" (Alex. Patterson).

"Geological research has established the fact that all organisms were perfect at the first.

"The highest type of Mollusk known to scientists is the one that appeared far back in geological history" (Townsend).

Dr. Robert Watts says: "The record of the rocks knows nothing of a higher form from a lower form . . . **both nature and revelation proclaim it as an inviolable law, that like produces like**" (Mauro).

TESTIMONY OF ARCHEOLOGY: Mummified remains of ibises, crocodiles and cats from Egyptian tombs thousands of years old, witness that their life is still unchanged and they propagate each "after its kind."

TESTIMONY OF BIOLOGY: "W. E. Ritter, Prof. of Zoology, University of California, says, 'At a depth of seven and one-half miles, where there is almost absolute uniformity of conditions, were taken living creatures essentially identical with those that lived in deep water, in the Eocene ages'."

Each "after its kind:" Professor Rudolf Otto, in his *Naturalism and Religion* (p. 114), gives a brief summary of the views of Dr. Fleischmann, Professor of Zoology in Erlangen, who is a strong opponent of evolution, because, as Otto says, he keeps to matters of fact, and rejects

speculations beyond these. 'Modern zoology recognizes not merely the four types of Cuvier, but seventeen different styles, phyla, or groups of forms, **to derive one of which from another is hopeless.** And what is true of the whole is true also of the sub-divisions within each phylum; e.g., within the vertebrate phylum with its fishes, amphibians, reptiles, birds and mammals. **No bridge leads from one to the other.** This is proved particularly by the very instance which is the favourite illustration in support of the Theory of Descent—the fin of fishes and its relation to the five-fingered hand of vertebrates' (Die Descendztheorie, chap. ii).

"Professor Hamann, in his *Entwicklungslehre und Darwinismus*, as we have seen (p. 256), takes much the same line, contending that it is impossible to derive Metazoa from Protozoa in their present finished state of evolution. He also says that it is only by 'a stretch of fancy that fishes can be derived from worms, or higher vertebrates from fishes' " (quoted by Otto, p. 122).

"The Popular Science Monthly for June, 1911, contained an article on The Measurement of Natural Selection, by Dr. J. Arthur Harris, of the Station for Experimental Evolution, Cold Spring Harbor, New York. . . . He says, 'Upon the application of biometric methods, many supposedly valid biological theories have shrunken to nothing'. . . . Professor Weismann says: 'We can only guess at, not discern, the fundamental nature of biological processes.' . . . Mr. McCabe says: 'Those who postulate a 'vital force' in the germ either mean that an unconscious power is capable of doing what the highest human intelligence cannot do, or are saying in other words, with the rest of us, "We do not know".' It is these very obscure phenomena to which the new theories of heredity are applied, and many will sympathize with the remark of Jordan and Kellogg that they are 'all guesses,' and that 'none of them is likely to be correct'." (T. B. Bishop's "Evolution Criticized" pp. 290, 170, 202, 203, and 259).

Protoplasm, each "after its kind:" No such thing is known to biology as plant protoplasm weaving a flesh texture, nor flesh protoplasm weaving a plant texture.

The "protoplasm . . . which builds the muscle is one kind, and that which builds brain and nerves is entirely different.

"Tyndall says, 'Under the most homogeneous material there lie structural energies of such complexities, and we must question whether we have the mental elements with which to grapple with them. . . . the most trained and disciplined imagination retires in bewilderment from the problem' (Patterson)."

Anatomy, each "after its kind:" "Professor Scott mentions . . . that 'comparative anatomy gives us no means of connecting animals of fundamentally different types or plans of structure' (p. 55)" (Bishop's "E.C." p. 288).

Embryos, each "after its kind:" "The recapitulation theory is mostly wrong; and what is right in it is mostly so covered up by the wrong part, that few biologists longer have any confidence in discovering the right" (Prof. V. L. Kellogg's "Darwinism To-day," pp. 18, 21).

"Many naturalists now speak lightly of . . . the recapitulatory interpretation of life history" (Prof. E. W. McBride's "Zoology," p. 76). "Prof. A. Sidgwick of Cambridge says that '50 years of research and close examination of the facts of embryology' has left the recapitulation theory 'without satisfactory proof'."

"There is no parallelism between the ontogeny or the phylogeny of either a bird or any other animal whatever. A seeming parallelism will

fall through when closely examined" (C. H. Hurst's "Primary Factors," p. 206). "The human embryo at no stage is anthropoid in its appearance" (Prof. Keith's "The Human Body," p. 95). Man can never "have originated from a form with such specialized pre-molars as the anthropoid apes" (Adloff). "We must confess that this embryonic development is still a profound enigma" (Joseph McCabe's "Principles of Evolution," p. 95). (T. B. Bishop's "E.C.").

Fifty years of scientific investigation have left "the recapitulation theory" in the land of "profound enigma" and the embryos still develop, as God originally started them at the job, each "after its kind."

The life force within protoplasm, seed or embryo **promotes** the propagation of each life "after its kind" and **prevents** its evolution to other "kinds."

"Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die: And that which thou sowest, thou sowest not that body that shall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of some other grain: But God giveth it a body as it hath pleased him, and to every seed his own body. All flesh is not the same flesh: but there is one kind of flesh of man, another flesh of beasts, another of fishes, and another of birds" (1 Cor. 15:36-39).

A fish embryo never produces the flesh of birds. The bird embryo never produces the flesh of beasts. The beast embryo never produces the flesh of man. Neither does an embryo produce an embryo; nor an egg, an egg. If embryos are as much alike as some evolutionists tell us they are, what is the reason the developed embryos are so vastly different? This is ipso facto proof that their statements are unwarranted. **"The embryo man with gill-arches is just as different from the embryo fish with gill-arches as is the full-grown man from the full-grown fish"** (Alfred Fairhurst, A.M., Prof. of Natural Science in Kentucky University).

The typical evolutionist usually overlooks the deep natural truth that life comes thru death; the first step is down—disintegration. Everywhere in nature, development of the seed into a mature life of fixed form is always rapid; the man from a seed in a short time; elephant from a seed, etc. Nature everywhere testifies against this humbug doctrine that all life is from one cell, thru endless ages of time. It requires more than millions of years to produce the different forms of life; it requires an omniscient, Almighty God. Man is finite. God is infinite. Man cannot follow the mind of God in creation. The real scholars fully understand that they know little about life itself, and less about its origin. Isn't it the host of "scientific" babblers and "parrots" of the "modern scholar" type who want you to understand that they are struggling beneath a top-heavy load of grey matter? All any man knows about the origin of life is by Revelation.

"By faith we understand that the worlds have been framed by the Word of God, so that what is seen hath not been made out of things which appear" (Heb. 11:3, Am.V.). Wherever mentioned, the Word of God testifies that life is the result of creation, not of evolution. The New Testament confirms the Old. It's folly to reject the Word of God for the vagaries of man.

The mind of the greatest scientist is baffled by the simplest things of life.

Protoplasm: "Prof. J. Arthur Thomson says: 'The conception of a germ-plasm is hypothetical, just as the conception of a specific living stuff or protoplasm is hypothetical; . . . it must be clearly understood that we cannot demonstrate the germ-plasm' (Heredity, p. 44)." (Quoted

by Bishop.) The many statements made by evolutionists in the name of "protoplasm" have a hypothetical (guess) foundation.

Cell: "The making of a single cell, the simplest creature that lives, is as great a mystery as that of man."

Seed: Take a tiny mustard seed. There it lies thru the months, imprisoned, dormant, apparently dead; yet it only awaits the call of its Creator to spring forth into life and bless mankind. The secrets of its life are veiled in mystery to the master minds of man. It requires more than "scientist," "scholar," or "sage" to produce a single seed; it requires God Almighty. And if it takes God Almighty to produce a single, tiny seed, **it takes God Almighty to make a man.** The life secrets of protoplasm, cell and seed are largely veiled in mystery. And yet what humbug statements some "scientists" and evolutionists make as to what they know about the life of protoplasm, cell and seed.

The Uncertainties of Human Knowledge: "Professor H. Reinheimer says: 'About the nature of the most universal forces in the universe, those termed cohesion and affinity, for instance, **we remain totally ignorant**' (Nutrition and Evolution, p. 2). Professor J. A. Thomson: '**Our ignorance of the laws of variation is profound.**' . . . '**Even now we are just as much in the dark** as to what gravitation itself is as when Newton wrote' (Essays on Evolution, p. 97). . . . '**The lowest organisms are probably quite beyond our ken.**'"—Dr. Archibald Reid . . . Dr. C. Guenther: 'The similarity of organisms is a **hopeless puzzle.**' (Darwin and the Problems of Life, p. 155.) . . . '**We must admit the impotence of science in the face of these embryonic mysteries.**' . . . 'Living albumen is still an **unsolved problem to us.**' . . . 'Every part of the world, no matter how small, has **so many differences** latent in it that **they cannot be counted.**' . . . Professor A. Weismann: '**Whole regions of phenomena are still sealed to us.**' . . . '**We must confess that we find ourselves confronted with deep darkness.**' . . . 'We must therefore modestly admit that our **knowledge is not sufficient to explain the rudimentary organs.**' . . . 'It is possible that new observations might be made that would compel **science to rearrange all its laws**' (This is a frank confession of the insecurity and instability of science). . . . Professor V. H. Kellogg says: '**We are ignorant; terribly, immensely ignorant.**' . . . Professor E. B. Poulton . . . says, '**One of the greatest men of all time has said that we are like children picking up shells on the shore of the ocean**' (Essays on Evolution, Intro. p. 47). (Bishop's "C.E.", p. 319.)

The certainty of Scripture: "In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth" (Gen. 1:1). "All things were made by Him; and without Him was not anything made that was made" (Jno. 1:3.)

Species and order: "A. L. Gridley, A.M., in 'Thoughts on Evolutions' says, 'There are millions of protoplasmic vegetable cells everywhere about us, each one capable of receiving a life principle, **but only from its own peculiar source,** and then its potency is confined to development **only along its own peculiar line.** The protoplasmic cells on an incipient corn cob **cannot** be fertilized by pollen of the rose. . . . From a wiggler gnat germ comes a wiggler gnat and **nothing else.**' Disease producing bacteria . . . each **invariably produces its own kind.** . . . What renders the case still more hopeless for the evolutionist is the recent announcement of biological science, that the structureless germ of one species of plant never has been, and never can be changed into the structureless germ of another species of plant life . . . from structureless germs up to the most complicated forms of organized life,

and from first to last it is found that **nature at every turn in the way takes her stand, and as if wielding a drawn sword absolutely forbids the transmutation of species**" (Townsend's "C. of E.").

"Nature abhors aberrations and by natural selection wipes them out" (Evolution in Int. Encyc. Vol. 8, p. 222). But isn't this just what evolution tells us nature delights in, that she might express her "erratic force" and form new and higher species? "How can we account for species, when crossed (i.e., different species breeding together), being sterile and producing sterile offspring, whereas, when varieties are crossed, their fertility is unimpaired?" (Darwin's "Origin of Species," p. 125). God has a law of reproduction each "after its kind." When this law is violated, nature steps in and upholds God's law by sterility. The natural world teaches the same as the written Word: that is, you cannot violate God's laws and "get away with it."

"Darwin speaks of 'all the species of a genus, though distributed to the most remote points of the world' being 'descended from a single progenitor.' And in the summary of this chapter he speaks of 'all the individuals of the same species, wherever found,' being 'descended from common parents'." . . . "Wasman suggests, **'It may be freely admitted that there has been evolution within the types and yet the types may have been originally distinct'**" (Bishop's "E. of C.," p. 288-9).

Man is a species: Breed negroes and you always get negroes; Indians and get Indians; Chinese and get Chinese, etc. Variations in the human race become fixed types of the species. One of the tests of species is their ability to interbreed and not result in hybrids. All strains of the human race can interbreed and sterile offspring does not result. Therefore, the human race is a species; descendants of an original pair, as God has set forth in His holy Word.

Chickens, a species: Breed Plymouth Rocks and you always get Plymouth Rocks; white Leghorns and get white Leghorns; Langshangs and get Langshangs, etc. The variation within the species has become a type. You can breed all types of chickens and sterility does not result. Therefore, the chickens are a species. The same thing is true of cattle, (Jerseys, Red Poles, Holsteins) and horses (Percherons, Hamiltonians, Shetlands). Cattle are evidently a species, from originals created by God; horses, the same, etc.

Are many animals classed as species in reality variant types of species, and are not evolutionists misguided by this?

If God's method in creating life has been by evolution from "one cell," why didn't He let Noah off easy? Instead of working weary years to build a huge ark, he could have canned a "sell" and "all life" would have been preserved on board the ship; then neither the "modernist" nor "evolutionist" would have been a bit skeptical about it.

An omniscient Almighty God prohibits the overthrow of the natural order of life by the law of each "after its kind;" if not, life would interbreed, order be destroyed, confusion, and monstrous forms result.

Dr. Wallace says, **"Perhaps the most UNIVERSAL fact—sometimes termed 'law'—of the organic world is, that like produces like—that offspring are like their parents. . . . In its widest sense as applied to species THERE ARE NO EXCEPTIONS. Not only does the acorn ALWAYS produce an oak, the cat a kitten, which grows into a cat, the sheep a lamb, AND SO THROUGHOUT ALL NATURE"** (Bishop's "E.C.," p. 161). Dr. Wallace here admits that all nature confirms Scripture; each "after its kind." The testimony of

Dr. Wallace and nature both thereby establish the authenticity of the Bible.

EVOLUTION DIAMETRICALLY OPPOSES THE BIBLE IN EVERY RESPECT

Some Christians have been led to accept, to a greater or less degree, evolution's tenets. Investigation will usually disclose their unfamiliarity with many facts in the case. Evolution preaches a gospel of death, and is anti-God, anti-Bible, anti-Christ, and sends its devotees out into the dark at death's door, without hope. Apostasy, anarchy and degradation follow in its wake. Russia is an illustration. The Bible's doctrine of creation speaks of a gospel of life and of Christ, of regeneration, of righteousness, and eternal life. "Between evolution and Christianity there is and can be nothing but the sharpest antagonism. Prof. Fairhurst well says, 'Christian evolution is **inconceivable**' " (Mauro). See pp. 259-260.

WHAT THE BIBLE HAS TO SAY

"Everyone on earth today originated from one cell." This statement was made by a Professor to his class and published in the school's official paper. This statement represents God's account of creation as a fraud. The professor, paper and school are, therefore, teaching young men and women to cast the Bible aside (and remember our civil laws are founded on the laws of God as set forth in the Bible). Many students must necessarily go out into the world without God or a guide. This means sin and wreckage in this life and a doomed eternity.

THE LAW OF CREATION: In the account of creation ten commands go forth from God. (The expression, "And God said" is used ten times.) **Ten** is God's number expressing law. There are ten Mosaic Commands. God gives a man ten toes to walk in God's way and ten fingers to keep God's commandments. In creation God established a **law of reproduction** of species, each "**after its kind**," or "after their kind," and this **law** is stated **ten times** in the account of creation (Gen. 1:11-25). God teaches both in the **Word** and in the **world** that **His** laws are inexorable. This law of "after its kind" **made it impossible** for one species to evolve into a higher species; impossible for brutes to evolve into men. The Bible record **repeatedly** sets forth that each species was the result of a special act of God's and that it can only reproduce "after its kind." The Bible record, **three** times repeats the statement, that man was "created." That is, that man's creation was a special Divine act in which there was the "**origination** of the absolutely new." **Three** times it records that this creation was in God's **image**. It is nothing less than blasphemy to say that God's "image" was evolved from a monkey or a brute, or that man was not the object of a special creation as recorded in the Bible. Both the male and female were brought into existence by an exclusively Divine act, a special creation (Gen. 1:26, 27).

The expression "And God said" testifies not of blind, accidental force at work, but of personality with an omniscient mind—God. The use of this expression ten times proves that God repeatedly, personally intervened in each marvel of creation. The deist-evolutionist who has God evolving life from one cell, has no Biblical ground on which to stand. He denies and rejects what God has said about creation. The Word of God testifies that the hypothesis of typical evolution is a fraud. "All things were made by Him; and without Him was not any thing made that was made" (Jno. 1:3). God has intervened in everything in all creation.

“Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power; for thou hast created ALL things, and for THY PLEASURE they are and were created” (Rev. 4:11).

Details of man’s creation are entered into in Gen. 2:7, and of woman’s creation in Gen. 2:18-25.

THE MAN. “God formed man from the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life: and man became a living soul” (Gen. 2:7). If God made man from a brute why does He say that He made him from “the dust of the ground?” God is not ashamed of what He does. “It is impossible for God to lie.” If God made man from a brute, why was it necessary for God to breathe life into the body? Brutes, in reproduction, naturally transmit life. This record of the Bible plainly labels the statement, “Everyone on earth today originated from one cell” as a falsehood. But remember that at this time the **woman** was **not yet in existence**, and that when the woman came into existence, her body came into existence **by a different method** than the man’s did.

18 “And Jehovah God said, It is not good that the man should be alone; I will make him a help meet for him. 19 And out of the ground Jehovah God formed every beast of the field, and every bird of the heavens; and brought them unto the man to see what he would call them: and whatsoever the man called every living creature, that was the name thereof. 20 And the man gave names to all cattle, and to the birds of the heavens, and to every beast of the field; but for man there was not found a help meet for him. 21 And Jehovah God caused a deep sleep to fall upon the man, and he slept; and he took one of his ribs, and closed up the flesh instead thereof. 22 And the rib, which Jehovah God had taken from the man, made he a woman, and brought her unto the man. 23 And the man said, This is now bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh: she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. 24 Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. 25 And they were both naked, the man and his wife, and were not ashamed” (Gen. 2:18-25).

“It is not good that man should be alone . . . but for man there was not found a help meet for him.” “And Jehovah God caused a deep sleep to fall upon the man” (2:21). Who is Jehovah God? None other than the Son of God before His incarnation. Lord or Jehovah God is simply His pre-incarnate name (See Rev. 1:8, Am.V.). “All things were made by Him and without Him was not anything made that was made” (Jno. 1:3, 1,14; Col. 1:16, 17; Jno. 10:30). “He was made flesh and dwelt among us.” As God, incarnate, He took five little barley cakes and made bread enough to feed 5,000 men, and had twelve baskets full left over. He is, and was God. With God **all** things are possible. The feeding of the 5,000 is simply a pen picture of the Christ of the Cross, in action as God. What sort of God would He be who couldn’t do infinitely more than man?

Berthelot Creates Food From Air: “A French scientist, Daniel Berthelot, gives in a recent book, ‘The Science of Modern Life,’ the details of a method by which he has created sugar, starch, cellulose and vegetable tissues out of the natural air ingredients of carbonic gas and vapor. This result was achieved by means of an ultra solar ray developed from the ultra violet ray.”

Christ said, “All power is given unto Me in heaven and in earth” (Matt. 28:18). With Him, as “God,” “all things are possible.”

Evolution teaches that it took millions of years to evolve man from a brute. Scripture states that Adam was put to sleep; when awakened, the woman was made, complete. If this woman came from one cell,

thru a brute route, to womanhood thru millions of years of time, then Adam must have had quite a little nap. He would have starved to death, shriveled up and blown away a million years before evolution could have gotten around with its evolved woman. There are plenty of devil-looted women, but no evolved women.

"Jehovah God . . . took one of Adam's ribs . . . and the rib builded He into a woman, and brot her unto the man" (2:21, 22). (See "Man's Creation" and "Woman's Creation", pp. 177-180.) Jehovah God made the five little barley cakes into great quantities of bread in the "twinkle of an eye" as it were. And there is no reason why he should have been longer building the bone and flesh of the rib into a woman that was "bone of my bones, and flesh of my flesh." The New Testament confirms this Genesis' account of the woman having been made from the man. "For the man is not of the woman **but the woman of man**" (See 1 Cor. 2:8, 9 and context). Jehovah God, after His incarnation and "during the days of His flesh," said: "From the **beginning** of the creation, male and female made He them" (Mk. 10:5, 6). Jesus said that He, as God, came down from heaven (Jno. 6:38, 10:30, 1:10); and that God **created** Adam and Eve; that they were **never less** than male and female **from the beginning**. This "**beginning**" was that of a man and a woman created in God's image. And God's "image" is not derived from the form of a monkey or beast.

THINGS TO THINK ABOUT. "After its kind"—this is God's law in the Word and in the world. Monkey from monkey and man from man. The Lord God could make a woman from a rib in twenty-four hours just as easy as he could make bread for over 5,000 men from five barley loaves in a day.

"I will make him an help meet for him." Would a monkey cook his meals and sew his socks in a helpful way?

See Gen. 2:19—Does God put monkeys to naming the animal kingdom? "For Adam there was not found an help meet for him." Did God go to the jungles to get him a monkey for the wife of his life and the mother of his children?

God builded the woman from a man, who had been created in God's image, and not from a monkey. The Lord God certainly knew what took place for He was there when it was done.

"Bone of my bones and flesh of my flesh." Not monkey bone and monkey flesh. Is that the kind you have?

He called her "woman." Why so, if she was a monkey?

"They were both naked." Would it be unusual for a monkey to be naked?

"Everyone on earth today originated from one cell." Why not have a million cells? Why not have at least two cells then we could have sex and reproduction. "From one cell?" God says He made man from the "dust of the ground." God says woman was builded out of a rib (flesh and bone). Evolution says she would have to be made from a lower form of animal, yet similar to herself. If God had made the woman from a monkey, would He have been ashamed of what He did or lied about it? "The Scripture cannot be broken." It is "the Word of God," so says the Son of God. We have exactly the same account of creation now that they had then.

The Lord God can make bread out of grain by taking months of time to grow it, mill it and bake it, or he can make bread out of barley cakes in a moment of time. It is just as easy for Him to do it one way as the other.

God could make a woman out of a rib just as easy as he could make a man out of the dust of the ground. It is just as easy for Him to do it one way as the other. God is infinite in power. **"God . . . is able to do exceedingly abundantly above all that we . . . think"** (Eph. 3:19-20). Think of **all** the things which you consider most impossible for God to do. Well, God can do, not only "abundantly above all that" but He can do **"exceedingly abundantly above all that."** This gives you a glimpse of **the ability of God**. He "created the heaven and the earth." "With God all things are possible." It is no trouble to account for the creation of man from the dust of the ground or a rib if you have God to do it. The evolutionist wants to do the job without God and start with only one cell. They ridicule the Christians' "faith," yet we have the best of it from every angle.

A WHIPPED EVOLUTIONIST. When you get an evolutionist's lights all knocked out and both his ears batted down, and his wind bag badly punctured, if he has any grey matter left he sees that the only thing to do is to turn his monkey "tale" to the rear and run with both hands wildly beating the air, hollering "spurious passages," "allegory," etc. The hiss in the former indicates that its source is the serpent. The "g" in the latter indicates they are gored by the truth. If the record of Adam's method of creation is an allegory, Adam is an allegory. If Eve's method of creation is an allegory Eve is an allegory. If the creation of Adam and Eve is an allegory, Eden is an allegory. If Eden is an allegory Satan and sin are allegories and it's time to open the prison houses and turn loose the murderers, rapers, robbers and scarlet women. If sin is an allegory then the Saviour is an allegory. If the Saviour is an allegory, there is no hereafter. If there is no hereafter, then you will never, never see again the forms of departed loved ones who have gone on before. If the Genesis' account of creation is an allegory, then the New Testament confirmation of this creation is an allegory. If this confirmation is an allegory your New Testament is an allegory. If the New Testament is an allegory the Old Testament is an allegory. If the Old and New Testaments are allegories then God is an allegory. If God is an allegory then creation is an allegory. If creation is an allegory then the evolutionist's monkey-tale of creation is an allegory.

THE MUDDLED MODERNIST says, "God didn't intend for us to take the account of creation 'literally'." Is that so? Read Genesis 1:1—2:3. Wasn't it a literal "heavens," a literal "earth," literal "light," literal "firmament," literal "land," literal "seas," literal "sun," literal "moon," literal "stars," literal "grass," literal "herb," literal "fruit trees," literal "fish," literal "fowl," literal "cattle" and literal "beasts?" Wasn't it literally "seed" which literally reproduced each "after its kind?" Wasn't it literally God, in a literal "creation," a literal "man," a literal "woman?" These things are self evidently literal. Reason compels us to accept the remaining like items as literal. Therefore, God literally "created man in His own image" as God has literally said. Therefore, neither the man nor the woman were evolved from a "monkey" or an animal. Evolution is therefore literally a humbug.

Wasn't it a literal Saviour that God literally promised? Didn't He literally die for the sin of the world on the literal month, on the literal day and on the literal hour that God literally promised through the centuries? See pp. 13-15. And wasn't this literal "death" a literal "sacrifice" for the literal sin of literally fallen man, who had once been in the image of God? God gave the account of creation to the great world of mankind long before the advent of the "scholar" and in terms that enables the common man

to understand all that God expects him to understand. Isn't it the man who has been gorged with a diet of "scientific training," that seems to have difficulty with the common usage of language?

Horse Sense: Since all these things are literal, let us literally use a little ordinary horse sense and for a moment dispense with so much "scientific training," then we can easily see that God uses language and records the making of this woman and this man in a way that shows that it is the commonest kind of scholarly, scientific nonsense, to assert that either the man or the woman was produced by evolution, or to assert that all life now in existence originated from "one cell" and evolved from species to species to its present form. Neither the deistic nor the materialistic evolutionist has any ground to stand on. They must either reject God's Word in its entirety, or accept the Bible and God, and His account of creation.

The evolutionist states that man came from "one cell" by way of the jelly-fish, monkey route, until we have the present scholar and scientific evolutionist. Since he has done such a tremendous amount of inherent development from that which was low and vile, to that which is worth while and worldly wise, he needs no regeneration nor righteousness; he needs neither the Bible nor God, nor the Christ of the Bible nor redemption. The Bible's view is diametrically opposite to this and states that man was originally, morally and mentally, a master in the "image of God." Man entered into sin, and its consequent degradation so that, the imaginations of his heart are evil from his youth up (Gen. 8:21). Man's heart is "deceitful above all things" (Jer. 17:9). No man is righteous and all are sinners and under condemnation (Rom. 3:10-23), except they repent and turn to the Son of God, who bore in substitution the penalty for their sins. His indwelling Presence, by faith, will do and work in them victory over sin, and those things which are pleasing to God (Acts 2:38; 1 Pet. 2:24; Phil. 2:13).

THE EVOLUTIONIST'S PRESENTATION OF CREATION AND LIFE

"Everyone on earth today originated from one cell." This evolutionist is a deist and inquires, "Would it be limiting God's power to say that Adam, the first man to be created, also was created from one cell, but he has already answered the question in at least one respect, stating that man was created eventually from one cell. This is subtle argument and calculated to deceive. It would not be limiting God's power to say that He could take a man created in God's image, and make a monkey out of him, but it would be a lie and blasphemous to say that he did, just as it is false and blasphemous to say God created all life from one cell. See God's record, Christ's testimony, the law of reproduction "after its kind" and Nature's facts, pp. 133, 197-9, 190, 240. God's Word says in substance that Satan takes a man and makes a monkey out of him, so much of a monkey that he will stand in the face of the Word of Jesus Christ, and in the face of God's Word, and in the face of all nature and say that God made all life from one cell. This is evolution in its true garb, whether it be materialistic or theistic. Neither God's Word nor nature knows any such thing as theistic evolution or any other kind of evolution of species. The theistic evolutionist is the bigger hypocrite of the two as he attempts to shelter under and hold on to God, while he rejects God's Word about creation.

" 'Theistic evolution' is little more than a name . . . a Mohammedan is a theist. . . . Their aim has been to abolish God altogether; or at

least (since "The First Cause" is essential to the theory), to deprive Him of all personality and attributes, and banish Him to the remotest confines of time and space" (Mauro).

If all life originated from one cell, then all living beings or animals have the same blood, and this young evolutionist is related to the sucker, the shark, the serpent, the fox and to the skunk, and has the same blood running in his veins. It is to be expected when you go into the matter of the ancestry of those who deny God and his Word that you will find those things antecedent, which are not very nice.

"SCHOLARS ARE AGREED?" "Speculations about geological time vary enormously." Lord Kelvin's estimate is 25,000,000 years. Prof. Huxley's estimate is 400,000,000. Their disagreement is only a small matter of 375,000,000 years.

Concerning canals on Mars: "Camille Flammarion, Paris, says, 'The proximity of Mars has enabled the discovery that the canals are unusually overflowing.' . . . Daniel G. Barton, University of Pennsylvania says, . . . 'So far there is no satisfactory evidence canals exist' " (Kansas City Star, 1924).

Concerning life on Mars: "The year on Mars is twice as long as our earthly one, hence plants and insects have twice the time in which to evolve. Consequently long grass, huge fruit, gigantic plants, birds abnormally powerful in song and wondrous in appearance, ornament the the landscape" ("The Great Divide," Denver, 12-24-24). **"Donald H. Menzel, Princeton University, says, . . . 'Life as we know it, or any other form of life, could not exist (on Mars) there' "** (The Kansas City Star, 1924).

"Dr. Coffin, to the students of Williams College, Williamstown, on the occasion of the College Commencement June 21st, ult., Dr. Coffin's subject was: 'The entering into life of the Graduating Class' and says, 'It seems to be agreed that life upon our planet began in the sea and that the great masses of seaweed were our remote ancestors.' Scientific dogmatism was denounced by Dr. R. A. Millikan, Nobel prize winner and internationally famous physicist, in an address before the American Chemical Society meeting in Los Angeles on August 7th, declared that the developments of the last quarter of century of all the physical sciences should teach men of learning to be more thoughtful and modest. 'The pathetic thing is that we have scientists who are trying to prove Evolution which no scientist can ever prove' " ("The Temple Watchman," Aug., 1925).

These conflicting statements illustrate the way "scholars are agreed."

So-called "Assured Facts" of Science. Professor G. Schwalbe says, "It often happens that, upon a few facts, theories are based, which are stated with so much conviction as easily to lead those who have no special knowledge of the subject to regard them as assured scientific certainties : . . . Kellogg says that Professor Gustav Wolff (Beitrag zur Kritik der Darwinschen Lehre) 'looks on the theory of Sexual Selection as wholly discredited.' ("Darwinism To-day," p. 125.) . . . Professor G. Schwalbe, in Darwin and Modern Science, says: 'A theory which derives man directly from lower forms without regarding apes as transition types leads ad absurdum . . . The farther down we go the more does the ground slip from beneath our feet . . . If we regard man as directly derived from primitive forms very far back, we have no way of explaining the many points of agreement between him and the monkeys in general.' . . . Concerning the evolutionary hypothesis, Haeckel says, 'The evidence on which we build is imperfect, and always will be

imperfect.' Messrs. Dewar and Finn say that Haeckel's History of Creation . . . is built on a fallacious foundation . . . Sir J. W. Dawson, in "The Story of the Earth and Man," says: 'I saw . . . a series of genealogies . . . by . . . Haeckel . . . Nothing could more curiously contradict actual facts. . . . Dr. Russel Wallace says, . . . Haeckel's . . . assumption of superior knowledge seems to be put forward to conceal his real ignorance of the nature of life itself.' . . . (What is true of Haeckel is true of others).

Professor W. B. Scott . . . says: 'The ludicrous discrepancies which often appear between the phylogenetic "trees" of various writers have cast an undue discredit upon the science.' Professor August Weismann says: 'In regard to the genealogical tree of organisms as a whole we can only make guesses' " (T. B. Bishop's "E. C." pp. 90, 91, 93, 95, 96, 102, 117, 271).

"In chemistry, physics, biology and embryology what a shifting of theories has characterized the scientific world! A text-book on these subjects that is ten years old can no longer be used in colleges and universities . . . Time was . . . when the atom was the ultimate particle of matter, sure! All of us thought that the 'atomic and molecular' theory of matter was settled once for all. And how eruditely did we talk about the atoms! But now-a-days . . . the atom is not near small enough to be the ultimate particle of matter; it is composed of ions and electrons; and it requires many thousands of these smaller particles to make the various kinds of atoms. Once, too, the Universal Ether—the Ether of Space—was necessary among the scientists as the substratum of all palpable substance, the connecting link in all space, and the purveyor of gravitation . . . Now . . . the existence of this Ether is doubted by many scientists . . . Many . . . deny that matter is an entity at all; but what seems to be palpable substance, they say, is not real matter, but only centers of electrical or other energy—as if nothing could be endowed with force and could become phenomenal. The fact is, at present the physicists and chemists are 'all at sea' regarding the nature and composition of material substance. What a fluid unstable thing, anyway, is human science! How the wind will blow tomorrow no one knows." ("The King's Business").

And so we see so-called "assured facts of science" are full of uncertainty and fiction.

"'Whatever may be said of Jonah and the whale,' says an exchange, 'the highbrows tell us science is infallible. Especially is this true of young men who have perhaps just been awarded a 'degree,' or are just "called to preach." It is sad to note that many of these would-be scientists are among the younger men in the ministry.' These boys forget that Edward Everett Hale avers that he examined the scientific themes written at Harvard during four decades, and that he found that not a single theory advocated was found to be true in his day.

'Very little scientific theory is now what it was a generation ago, but for the ignorant and dogmatic, the current theory is science now as the current theory was science then.' So says Browne.

Herbert Spencer was a great thinker, yet, he speaks of the **'utter confusion of current opinion upon all fundamental questions.'**

Dr. Reudiger of George Washington University, in his 'Principles of Teaching,' says: 'The schools are usually a generation behind their times in their teaching, and a text-book in science is considered out of date if ten years old.' . . . **'I think future generations will look back with the same wonder on the popular materialism of the present time**

as we look back on the old popular belief in astrology and witchcraft, or the ancient Greek conceptions of the physical world.' Thus declares Dr. Haldane of Oxford in *Hibbert Journal*, April, 1923 . . . The Victoria Philosophical Institute, London, declared in 1884: "As yet no scientific evidence has been met with, giving countenance to the theory that man has been evolved from a lower order of animals." ("The Living Word").

"Professor Elliott Smith says, in *Primitive Man*: 'The earliest members of the human family **must have been** merely apes with an overgrown brain, and probably the first bodily changes that occurred were the modifications of the legs' " (Bishop's "E. C." p. 271). This "scholar" has no hesitation in building on a "must have been" foundation. His deductions must be wrong when built on such a foundation.

"Lord Halsbury, the President of the Institute, said: 'I wish to make a general protest against the notion that a gentleman who calls himself a "professor," without any sufficient qualification, is thereby placed in a position of authority, and can make statements without a particle of evidence to prove them. I may be prejudiced in my view by my experience as a lawyer, but in court we are expected to give full proof in support of every assertion, and if we do not, it is naturally assumed that it is because we cannot do so. A "professor" on the other hand, appears to consider himself relieved from any such anxiety. . . . But being a "professor," he does not consider himself obliged to substantiate even this assertion.' (Trans. Victoria Institute, Vol. xlvii, p. 357) . . . Messrs. Dewar and Finn say in *The Making of Species*: 'Men of science not infrequently charge the clergy with adhering to dogma in face of opposing facts; it seems to us that **many of the apostles of science** are in this respect **worse offenders than the most orthodox** of Churchmen' (p. 378)." (Bishop's "E. C." pp. 271, 293-5.) Why shouldn't a Churchman be dogmatic? He has the Word of God to stand on. "In the beginning, God created the heavens and the earth" (Gen. 1:1). "God created man in His own image" (Gen. 1:27). "All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made" (Jno. 1:3).

Forever and forever,
 "The Word of our God shall stand"
 Forever and forever
 "The Word of our God shall stand."

Science destroys its own theories: "Herbert Spencer, E. D. Cope and others did much to criticize natural selection as inadequate to do what was attributed to it . . . Herbert Spencer said, 'either there has been inheritance of acquired characters, or there has been no evolution' " (Geo. McCready Price's "Q. E. D." p. 80). Professor Weismann says: . . . 'Acquired characters of whatever kind are not transmitted from parent to offspring.'

"Professor Keith says: 'When we look more closely we see that every bone of man's body is present in the gorilla, they occupy exactly the same place in the skeleton; each bone shows the same leading features; the differences relate merely to proportion, size, and detail.' . . . Professor Huxley says: 'Every bone of a gorilla bears marks by which it might be distinguished from the corresponding bone of a man, and that, in the present creation, at any rate, no intermediate link bridges over the gulf between *Homo* and *Troglodytes*.' " (Bishop's "E. C." pp. 60, 61.)

Charles Darwin asserted that "natural selection" was a major factor in transmutation of species. "Alex. Graham Bell, says: 'Natural selection,

does not and cannot produce new species or varieties or cause modifications of living organisms to come into existence. On the contrary, its sole function is to prevent evolution' " (Price's "Q. E. D." p. 81).

"Herbert Spencer said: 'That every variation, to be of any use to a species, requires a number of concurrent variations, often in different parts of the body,' to which Dr. Wallace replies, 'The argument is entirely fallacious, . . . All these assumptions are the very reverse of the known facts' " (Bishop's "E. C." p. 108).

De Vries, Professor of Botany, Amsterdam, advocated "mutation" as the cause of evolution. He says, "Mutation assumes that new species and varieties are produced from existing forms by sudden leaps" (Bishop). Darwin said that natural selection produced evolution by "slight successive variations" . . . "never" . . . by "a great and sudden leap."

Professor Nageli advocates an "inherent driving force in organisms . . . towards progressive evolution." Prof. Eimer repudiates any special internal force of evolution (Bishop's "E. C." p. 220-1).

Prof. Conklin said "Evolution can take place only by means of changes in the germ-plasm." S. J. Holmes, University of California, says, "we know nothing of changes in germ-plasm which we postulate as the cause of variability."

Darwin claimed evolution was the result of gradual progressive changes in life forms. Prof. Edward Hartman says, "The origin of species by minimal changes has not been demonstrated."

Evolutionists have ruined the theories of each other and have destroyed its credibility. The theory stands to-day a wretched wreck, testifying to the credulity and gullibility of man.

Scientific Gas and Guesses: "It is generally **supposed** that the more complex plants have descended from the simpler ones" (John M. Coulter, Head of Department of Botany, University of Chicago, in a book on "Plants" p. 3, part 2). In this text book supposed to deal with the origin of life, God is ignored and His name not mentioned. Isn't a student thus taught to disregard God as the source of life and to discredit the account of creation as set forth in His holy Word? The supposition is not "general," as asserted but has its origin and dissemination in a comparative handful of "scholars," who seem never to have learned that they "live and move" and have their "being" in God. "Supposed:" See Webster for the meaning of the word, as here used. Doesn't it mean "the fraudulent substitution of one thing for another?" Does Coulter's statement charge the public with fraud? People generally, know that the "complex plants have descended" from antecedent species of the same "kind." Many a farmer boy and grade teacher could give some "scholars" pointers on the "descent" of "complex plants." What do you think of a "scholar" who can write a "text-book" on Botany, dealing with the origin of the myriad forms of wonderful and exquisitely designed plant life, that furnishes the food on which his daily life depends, and yet do it ignoring God, and His name, and devoid of gratitude to the Creator? "Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name . . . Give us this day our daily bread" (Matt. 6:9-14). Is he worse than the degenerate who despises the mother who bore him and refuses to mention her name? Do you want your sons and daughters to grow up with this attitude toward God? If you do, wouldn't it be a good idea to send them where this sort of text-book is used and this kind of teaching takes place?

See pages 155-6, for proof that Chamberlin and Salisbury's College Geology has a guess work foundation, just as Coulter's Botany has. Darwin's two principal works were intricately interwoven with guess

work foundations. In them, "The phrase, 'we may well suppose' occurs over eight hundred times."

"Professor Gilbert Murray, the great Cambridge scholar" blows bubbles thru his "gill arches" in his lecture entitled, "The Herd Instinct." He says, "At the Natural History Museum, South Kensington, close to the entrance, you can buy for the sum of four-pence a most fascinating little book on 'The Fossil Remains of Man.' It is official and **I presume** authoritative. And it tells how, in very remote times, before there was any South Kensington Museum, or any England, or, I believe, in the strict sense, any Europe, there lived in swampy forests in various parts of the world, troops of little lemur-like tree-dwellers. They were, **I suppose**, rather like small monkeys, but much prettier. They had nice fur, good prehensile tails, and effective teeth. Then there fell upon them, or some of them, a momentous change, a hypertrophy or overdevelopment of one part of the body. This kind of special increase, the author tells us, seldom stops till it becomes excessive. With the lemurs it was the brain that began to grow. It grew and grew, both in size and in complexity. The rest of the body suffered in consequence. The fur became mangy and disappeared. The prehensile tails wasted away. The teeth ceased to be useful as weapons and in the end, ladies and gentlemen, after incalculable ages, here we are" ("The Temple Watchman," Aug., 1925).

God has written: "**Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools**" (Rom. 1:22).

Dr. Hendrick Van Loon says, "We do not know how or why or when the human race began its career upon the earth." Yet, God's Word reveals all three of these things. "Dr. Van Loon says, 'man's remote progenitor . . . lived in the damp blackness of vast forests;' yet on the next page we read: 'In summer he was exposed to the scorching rays of the sun.' . . . At one place he says of the first man: 'What did he look like?—We do not know. We never saw his picture.' . . . Later he says, 'He was a very ugly and unattractive mammal. . . . He was quite small. The heat of the sun and the biting wind of the cold winter had colored his skin a dark brown. . . His head and most of his body were covered with long hair. He had very thin but strong fingers, which made his hands look like those of a monkey. His forehead was low, and his jaw was like the jaw of a wild animal which uses its teeth both as a fork and knife. . . . Early man, less intelligent in many respects than the squirrels, had not known how to preserve anything for the future,' ("The Living Word").

Don't some statements made by "Doctors" indicate that the lineal descendants of men who had less intelligence than the squirrels are not all dead yet? "Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools." Who says so? God says so. (Rom. 1:22).

"Professor Wood Jones, says: . . . 'Today we have a **bewildering complexity** of genera and species of missing links.' . . . Professor August Weismann, says, . . . 'In regard to the genealogical tree of organisms as a whole we can **only make guesses.**' . . . **We really still know nothing certain about** the great problem of **Evolution.** . . . At the Anthropological Congress at Lindau, in 1899, in speaking of Klaatsch's opinions as to a hypothetical ancestor of ape and man, Professor Johannes Ranke remarked: . . . 'The facts, however, upon which Herr Klaatsch claims to base his ingenious theory, **do not at present exist**, and I must protest against his assuming that they have been really furnished by zoology and palaeontology any more than by anatomy . . . **All else is still a matter of hypothesis**, (guesses), and if anyone

attempts to use it in order to produce a finished picture, **the result is a work merely of the imagination**' (Quoted in *Modern Biology*, p. 463). . . . Professor J. Reinke, in *Der gegenwartige Stand der Abstammungslehre* . . . says: 'The only statement, consistent with her dignity, that science can make, is to say that **she knows nothing about the origin of man**' " (Bishop's "E.C.," pp. 96, 100-1, 120-1).

Evolution has a guess work foundation with a guess work super-structure, supported by guess work girders. These "guess work girders" of this "guess work super-structure" are enwrapt with "gas" from the "gill arches" of evolution's "scientific" supporters.

The most irrational man is the rationalist. He claims it is more reasonable to believe that "erratic force" evolved man by way of the one cell, jelly fish and monkey route, than to believe that man (the earthly masterpiece of God's craftsmanship), was created by an omniscient, Almighty God. Yet the rationalist finds fault with the Christian's "faith," but it is evident, multiplied times over, that the rationalist is the gullible one.

Evolution Ethics: Concerning Mr. Akeley's distorted representation of the gorilla, the Sunday School Times prints the following:

"Mr. Carl Akeley is a taxidermist in the employ of the New York Museum, and his article gave several photographs of various anatomical parts of a gorilla then recently killed in Africa, these photographs being professedly for the purpose of showing that for many years important resemblances between the gorilla and man have been overlooked. . . . Sir E. Ray Lankester, is one of the foremost zoologists in the world. The latter declared that Mr. Akeley's photograph of the foot of the gorilla is "entirely misleading, since it suggests a resemblance between the hallux [great toe] of the gorilla and that of man, which does not exist" (*Nature*, January 5, 1924, p. 10). . . . Sir Ray Lankester says that the parts in this photograph are "**strangely distorted**" and "**made to present a false resemblance to the foot of man.**" He goes on to say, "I wish to record my opinion that the actual gorilla's foot from which Mr. Akeley's cast was taken was distorted by **post-mortem** changes and by pressure. . . . His statements on the subject are even more plainly so. . . . It is not the fact (as Mr. Akeley would have us believe) that the gorilla's big toe is much more like that of man than that of any other animal." . . . Two sources of error were introduced into the photographs of Mr. Akeley, and Dr. Lankester does not at all hesitate to imply that both of these sources of error were deliberately designed for the purpose of showing a false similarity between the foot of the gorilla and that of man. . . . Sir Ray Lankester further says: "Mr. Akeley's article was from a 'photograph of a cast deceptively illuminated and made to present a false resemblance to the foot of man'." He goes on to say that "Mr. Akeley himself has wisely abstained from publishing any attempt to defend or excuse his fantastic photograph of the gorilla's foot." . . . "Is the figure published by Mr. Carl Akeley in the *World's Work* a trustworthy document?" That question is finally answered in the negative. . . . one cannot always trust the accuracy or even the **bona fides** of the more ardent advocates of man's ape ancestry, even though these men may occupy high positions in the scientific world. Indeed, many of my readers are already aware that the great American Museum of Natural History, in New York City, has been for many years converted into an establishment strongly devoted to carrying on a propaganda to prove man's evolution from the lower animals. One large department in this institution has been set apart for the exhibition of fossils and casts of apes and prehistoric man, many of these exhibits being

quite as misleading as the photographs which we have just been discussing. And when we remember that this museum is visited by probably a million people every year, we can see the immense possibilities in the way of misleading the public which are presented by these exhibits," (p. 339, 5-31-24).

Mr. Carl E. Akeley of this New York Museum, sculptor and African hunter, says that the lion is a "gentleman," the gorilla "affectionate," and the elephant "charming;" it's man and not the animal who is "bestial." If so, "it disproves evolution" for man instead of having evolved, has degenerated. But the evolutionistic theologians of the Grant and Potter type, "have been assuring us that sin is merely the remains of man's heritage of animalism. . . . If animals are such fine creatures, man never could have inherited his meanness from them. It must come from some other source. In this way evolutionists annihilate one another." Mr. Akeley "made 'The Chrysalis' the statue representing a youth emerging from a gorilla" (Leander S. Keyser, D.D.). This exhibit was pulled off in Potter's ultra-modernistic church, New York. It was a disgrace to Christendom; an insult to sound fathers and mothers and blasphemy against God Almighty, who has said: "God created man in His own image."

A man who will lie about the Word of God concerning creation, will lie about the world of God. "Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools" (Rom. 1:22).

"In 1907, Professor Ernst Haeckel in his scientific work . . . published in a pamphlet, *Das Menschen-Problem*, diagrams showing the embryos of man and of various types of apes, for comparison. Dr. Arnold Brass, of the Kepler-Bund, an association formed at Frankfort to reconcile science and religion, brought out at Leipsic, in 1908, another pamphlet, *Das Affen-Problem*, in which he asserted that many of the diagrams were inaccurate, and that others had been deliberately falsified. . . . One of the accusations made by Dr. Brass against Haeckel was that he had taken drawings of other biologists and altered them—taking away fifteen or sixteen vertebrae from one monkey-embryo and altering the name, and adding tail-vertebrae to another. He also added to a human embryo eleven vertebrae not in the original drawing. . . . Haeckel's reply in the *Munchner Allgemeine Zeitung* of January, 1909, contained the following admission:—

"To put an end to this unsavoury dispute, I begin at once with the contrite confession that a small number (6 to 8 per cent.) of my embryo diagrams are really forgeries in Dr. Brass's sense; those namely for which the observed material is too incomplete or insufficient as to compel us . . . to fill in and reconstruct the missing links by hypothesis and comparative synthesis. . . . I should feel utterly condemned and annihilated by the admission, were it not that **hundreds of the best observers** and most reputable biologists **lie under the same charge**. **The great majority** of all morphological, anatomical, histological, and embryological diagrams . . . **are not true to nature**, but are more or less doctored, schematized, and **reconstructed**" (Quoted by T. B. Bishop, Member of the Council, Victoria Institute, in "Evolution Criticized," pp. 323-5).

SCIENTISTS TESTIFY EVOLUTION IS "NONSENSE"

The eminent scientist, Virchow, of Berlin says, "It is all nonsense. It cannot be proved by science that man descended from the ape, or from any other animal." Dr. Rudolph Virchow "for thirty years" . . . "pre-

sided over the debates of the Anthropological Society of Berlin, where questions as to skulls from all parts of the world were constantly being discussed. Herr A. Lissauer says of him: "To estimate rightly the services of Virchow as an anthropologist, the whole history of anthropology would have to be written" (Bishop). Dr. Virchow is referred to in the *Encyclopedia Britannica* as the father of pathology.

"If the Bible said anything so idiotic as these guessers put forth in in the name of science, science would have a great time ridiculing the sacred pages" (W. J. Bryan).

Dr. Leavitt, ex-President of Lehigh University: "All the facts of the past cycles of years are against Darwinism. Protoplasm evolving a universe is a superstition more pitiable than the Paganism which worshipped the image of Diana, as the mother of creation."

Huxley says: "So long as the evidence at present adduced falls short of supporting the affirmative, the doctrine must be content to remain among the hypotheses (guesses)."

"Take the eye, the only guess that I have seen—that there was a time when eyes were unknown—that is, a necessary part of the hypothesis and since the eye is a universal possession among living things, the evolutionist guesses that it came into being—not by design or by act of God—but just happened, and how did it happen? A piece of pigment, a freckle, appeared upon the skin of an animal that had no eye. This piece of pigment or freckle converged the rays of the sun upon that spot, and when the little animal felt the heat on that spot, it turned the spot to the sun to get more heat. The increased heat irritated the skin so the evolutionist guesses, and a nerve came there, and out of the nerve came the eye! Can you beat it? But this only accounts for one eye; there must be another piece or pigment or freckle soon afterward, and just in the right place, in order to give the animal two eyes. . . . There was a time when animals had no legs, and so the legs came by accident. How? Well, the guess is that the little animal without legs was wiggling along on its belly one day when it discovered a wart—it just happened so—and it was in the right place to be used to aid it in locomotion; so, it came to depend upon the wart, and use finally developed it into a leg; and then another wart and another leg, at the proper time—by accident—and accidentally in the proper place. Is it not astonishing that any person intelligent enough to teach school would talk such tommy-rot to students, and look serious while doing so? . . . (From a publication by a New York Minister) . . . Man has grown up in this universe, gradually developing his powers and functions as responses to his environment. If he has eyes, so the Biologist assures us, it is because light waves played upon the skin, and eyes came out in answer; If he has ears it is because the air-waves were there first, and the ears came out to hear. Man never yet, according to the evolutionist, has developed any power save as a reality called it into being." "There would be no fins, if there were no water, no wings if there were no air, no legs if there were no land. . . .

"You see I only called your attention to 40% of the absurdities. He speaks of eyes, ears, fins, wings and legs—five—I only called attention to eyes and legs—2. The evolutionist guesses himself away from God, but he only makes matters worse. How long did the 'light-waves' have to play on the skin before the eyes came out? The evolutionist is very deliberate; he is long on time. He would certainly give the eye thousands of years, if not millions, in which to develop; but how could he be sure that the light-waves played all the time in one place, or played in the same place generation after generation, until the development was com-

plete? And why did the light-waves quit playing, when two eyes were perfected? Why did they not keep on playing until there were eyes all over the body? Why do they not play to-day so that we may see new eyes in process of development?" (W. J. Bryan, *In His Image*).

"Here is what they mean: Away back yonder somewhere, nobody knows where—away back yonder some time, nobody knows when—away back yonder somehow, nobody knows how, one time, from some unknown source, something moved in the universe, and that something moved just a little bit, and it was a little germ, and then it became a protoplasm, and that protoplasm moved, and then it began to move a little more, and then after a little while began to climb, and then after a while it dropped on the ground, and it began to move again, and became elongated and got bumps on it, you understand, and these little bumps began to move, and to be used like arms and these arms began to grow, and those arms became legs; and finally it got a little cartilage and a little back-bone, and then it grew a tail, and then it had an eye, and then two eyes, and then got some holes and then got two ears, and then after a while it grew hair, and after a while it got in the sea and had fins, and had four legs, and after a while it got up in the tree, and grew a wing, and then after a while it had a sweetheart, and they began to live in the trees, and the big ones began to eat up the smaller ones, and some lived in caves, and some dwelt in the trees, and after a while one began to throw cocoanuts at another one, and by and by one of them looked up at the sky, and rain came down and washed all the hair off of his face, and this one that had the hair off ran and stole a suit of clothes, and became a professor in Baylor University, or some other university" (J. Frank Norris).

"There was published in a Philadelphia paper, in November, 1920, an address delivered in that city under the auspices of 'The Extension Course,' from which we quote the following:

'Evidence that early men climbed trees with their feet lies in the way we wear the heels of our shoes—more at the outside. A baby can wiggle its big toe without wiggling its other toes—an indication that it once used its big toe in climbing trees. We often dream of falling. Those who fell out of the trees some fifty thousand years ago and were killed, of course, had no descendants. So those who fell and were not hurt, of course, lived, and so we are never hurt in our dreams of falling.' Such absurd speculations offered as scientific truth by a college professor are enough to fill a layman with disgust, and almost contempt for college professors and modern science" (Prof. L. T. Townsend, D.D., S.T.D., M.V.I.).

Some evolutionists and higher critics accept every absurd fraud that pseudo-science and pseudo-history set forth, while they discard the plain, reasonable, consistent statement of facts set forth in Scripture and confirmed by Jesus Christ. Some of their fiction would make the most venturesome fairy story writer blush for its shame. "Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness forever. And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of his saints. To execute judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him," the Lord Jesus Christ (Jude 13, 14, 15).

REASON REJECTS THE THEORY OF EVOLUTION

It cannot be demonstrated that any specie in nature is the result of evolution. Therefore, species are not the product of evolution. Since

it cannot be demonstrated that evolution of species occurs in nature, the evolutionary hypothesis is without evidence and would not even be permitted in court. Evolution therefore, has no case against the Bible as it accounts for life by God.

See pages 130 and 263, for evidence that the minds of many scientists have become so warped and perverted that they are without faith in a personal God. Since they have no God to account for the origin of life, they resort to the expedient of the man-made God, Evolution.

Man's heathenism has swung to low levels and man's civilization has reached fair heights, but at no time has man ever been less than man. The history of teeming millions of mankind proves this and no scientists can demonstrate otherwise.

Many pseudo-scientific "scholars" imagine evolution of species is a fact and that they have outstripped the great world of humanity in the game, and left them behind, as species of poor boobs, ignoramuses and bigots.

Evolution makes light of Christian belief in miracles, yet has no difficulty in believing all life on earth came from one cell.

"God created man in his own image" "Madest him a little lower than the angels" (Gen. 1:27; Heb. 2:7). Therefore, man is not the product of "erratic force" or evolution. Evolution starts with "erratic force" and makes no satisfactory accounting for the existence of matter, nature or this "erratic force." The Bible does: "God created." "From the beginning of the creation which God created" (Mk. 13:19). It is safer to adhere to the age-old accepted facts of the Bible, than to be gulled by the upstart fallacy of evolution.

The sin of adultery has a venereal disease fruitage. This confirms the Word of God. ("Thou shalt not commit adultery"), and it is nature's testimony to the authenticity of the Bible.

Evolutionists concede that their hypothesis requires millions of years to make it workable. No one knows how or when the strata were formed. Therefore, no one can prove that the strata were formed millions or even hundreds of thousands of years ago, nor that life on earth is even a hundred thousand years old. See p. 246. Therefore, the evolutionary theory has never been substantiated.

That God made man's body and cares for it, is evidenced by nature's supply of daily food; injure the body and nature heals the wound, etc.

Sir J. W. Dawson says, "Order and system cannot come of chance." The evolutionary hypothesis requires that chance evolution resulted in the various forms of life. Life is orderly, designed and controlled by law. Facts everywhere teach that accident does not normally result in law and design. Therefore, evolution did not produce the various forms of nature and life.

Evolution debases man and exalts beasts.

A MODERN SCIENTIFIC COURSE IN FLY-LOGY

"Don't be discouraged, poor little fly,
You'll be a chipmunk by and by.
And years after I can see
You'll be a full-grown chimpanzee.
Next, I see with prophet's ken,
You'll take your place in the ranks of men.
Then in the great sweet bye and bye,
We'll be angels, you and I.
Why should I swat you, poor little fly?
Prophetic chum of my home on High.
That's what Darwin says, not I."

"The Water Spider: is also an air breather, but it lives habitually under the water. A short distance under the surface of the water it spins an egg-shaped cell with an opening underneath through which it can pass. This cell is securely attached to some object so that it will remain submerged. The body of this spider is covered with hairs which inclose air, and this prevents it from becoming wet.

"The cell having been constructed, the spider proceeds to fill it with air. The hind legs are covered with hair, and they are of such shape that they can secure a large bubble of air which it carries under the cell and releases. The air rises to the top of the cell, expelling the water. By repeating the process the cell is filled with air. In the upper part of the cell the eggs are placed and surrounded by a cocoon. About one hundred young are hatched and reared in a single cell" (Fairhurst, "O. E. C." pp. 220-1). "God created." This alone accounts for the water spider.

Spinnerets: "Spiders are provided at the posterior end with two or three pairs of appendages called spinnerets, which are homologous with legs. The office of the spinnerets is to reel out the silk from the silk glands, the tip being perforated by a myriad of little tubes through which the silk escapes in excessively fine threads. An ordinary thread, just visible to the naked eye, is the union of a thousand or more of these delicate streams of silk. These primary threads are drawn out and united by the hind legs." "God created." This alone accounts for the spinnerets.

The Electric Organ of the Skates: "In these fishes it has been shown to be a true electric battery. . . . It is well known that the electric eel and the torpedo use their batteries for stunning other animals." "God created." This alone accounts for these electric organs.

Mr. Darwin admits that 'it can be clearly shown that the most wonderful instincts with which we are acquainted, namely, those of the hive-bee and of many ants, **could not possibly have been acquired by habit**' (Alfred Fairhurst, A.M., Prof. of Natural Science, Kentucky University, in "Organic Evolution Considered," pp. 220-2, 155, 184, 190, 204, 217).

"The leading biological writers of the day generally pursue their enquiries and speculations as to the origin of life in the world," by ignoring God and His 'Divine revelation.' . . . Professor Haeckel's system is an entire 'denial of any Supreme Creator or Governor of the Universe. . . . **He denies that man has a higher nature of any kind.** . . . According to Haeckel, this evolution of the Universe has been going on from everlasting. . . . At the meeting of the British Association at Dundee, in 1912, there was a discussion on The Origin of Life. Professor Schafer presided, and there were ten speakers. There were speculations as to whether life had arisen from the organic world, whether it had originated in some other way on the earth itself, or whether it had been brought in some way to the earth from infinite space, but so far as the Times' report shows there was no mention even of the possibility that life was of Divine creation. What a contrast to the declaration of that eminent man of science, the late Lord Kelvin, who said: "**Scientific thought is compelled to accept the idea of creative power.**" (Bishop's "E. C.," pp. ii, 164-5, 280).

"Dr. Howard A. Kelly of John Hopkins University, one of the most eminent scientists and surgeons says, 'To the consistent evolutionist, God is a superfluity.'"

Wisdom From a Watermelon: "Under the influence of sunshine and shower a little watermelon seed . . . gathered from somewhere

two hundred thousand times its own weight, and forced that enormous weight through a tiny stem and built a watermelon. . . . outside . . . a covering of green, within that a rind of white, and within that a core of red, and then it had scattered through the red, little seeds, each one capable of doing the same work over again. What architect drew the plan? (Where did it get its coat of green, its rind of white, its core of red, its flavor, its orderly construction and harmony and its seeds with power to reproduce itself?). . . . Until you can explain a watermelon, do not be too sure that you can set limits to the power of the Almighty, or tell just what He would do, or how He would do it. The most learned man in the world cannot explain a watermelon, but the most ignorant man can eat a watermelon and enjoy it. God has given us the things that we need" (W. J. Bryan). An omniscient, Almighty God as Creator, alone accounts for the myriad wonderful forms of matchlessly constructed plant and animal life in the world. Each of these lives in itself, even the simplest form, is veiled in mystery, so far as the mind of man is concerned.

Seven evidences that man was made by God: The human **heart**, carefully study its construction, note its purpose, power and perfection; the human **ear**, a labyrinth of exquisitely designed and marvelously functioning parts; the human **hand**, the wonder of its construction and its ability to perform with accuracy and lightning-like rapidity; the human **nervous system**, instantly responding to and keeping track of every slight change or condition—immediately transmitting all news to headquarters; the human **eye**, matchless marvel of craftsmanship, delicately, exquisitely, wonderfully made. No wonder Darwin conceded to this statement: "To suppose that the eye . . . could have been formed by natural selection seems, I freely confess, absurd in the highest degree;" the human **brain**, intricately formed and with wisdom fashioned, the medium connecting the seen with the unseen world; the **spirit of man** reverencing God, communing with the great Father, preparing for eternity. For any one of these to develop by accident would be a miracle; for all of them to develop by accident in nature is unthinkable. Nature, in her structure, everywhere, testifies of the design, mind and providence of God. The most convincing proof that man was created by God, is man himself. God, alone could have made him.

"Darwin says: . . . 'If it could be demonstrated that any complex organ existed which could not possibly have been formed by numerous, successive, slight modifications, my theory would absolutely break down. But I can find no such case'" (Fairhurst's "O. E. C.," p. 153). Nature has cited plenty of cases, broken down Darwin's theory and testifies that God, alone, could be its Creator. "The closing paragraph of the great Geology finished by Dana shortly before his death, states, 'Whatever the results of further search, we feel assured, in accord with Wallace, who shares with Darwin in the authorship of the theory of Natural Selection, that the intervention of a Power above Nature was at the basis of Man's development. Believing that **Nature exists through the will and everacting power of the Divine Being**, and that **all its great truths, its beauties, its harmonies, are manifestations of His wisdom and power**'" (Fairhurst's "O. E. C.," p. 265).

God has revealed Himself to man in {
Creation.
Revelation, and
Incarnation.

Marvelous numeric designs and laws dominate the celestial bodies, the natural world and the written Word of God. **These numeric laws are common to all.** See "The Law of the Octave" by E. J. Pace; Dr. Ivan Panin's and J. W. Grant's works on Numerics, etc. These laws and designs speak of the unity of the universe and of the mind and providence of God. They are a convincing proof of the Divine inspiration of Scripture. There is not one chance in billions that unity, order, design and the laws of nature came by chance. If they did not come by chance, then they did not come by evolution. "Sir J. W. Dawson says: 'Order and system **cannot** come of chance.' Dr. Wallace said: 'We are forced to the assumption of an infinite God by the fact that our earth has developed life, and mind, and ourselves' (The World of Life, p. 393)," (Bishop's "E. C.," p. 301).

That man is the masterpiece of God's craftsmanship, and nature created for him is evidenced by multitudes of facts about us; the atmosphere is just right for man's needs; the sun is placed to give the right amount of heat and light at the right time; the marvel of the seasons; the clouds carrying water for rain; crops; underflow for well water; ice expanding after it gets to a certain degree of cold, so it will stay on top of the water and protect the life below instead of continuing to contract, which is the normal law of nature; day for work and night for rest, etc.

Darwin admitted that if beauty in nature had been made for man, it would ruin his theory. Ride over the grass-grown prairies, through the tree-clad valleys, up the wind-swept, rock-ribbed, snow-capped mountains; behold, the sun as it sets, shooting all through with its rays the light, lingering, feathery clouds—they become radiant with blue, violet, purple, gold, crimson: as their fantastic forms change and alter, they are a regular fairyland of beauty and wonder. See the rainbow as it hangs, a thing of beauty in the heavens. Notice the myriads of flowers, with their marvelous forms, exquisitely fashioned and designed with matchless, delicate tints and colorings. They all testify of the master Artist, the master Designer and the master Craftsman of all the ages. Reason, Nature and Revelation teach that they were all made for man. God ruined Darwin's theory by making nature a thing of beauty for man's benefit and blessing. "For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish but have everlasting life" (Jno. 3:16).

Nature was made for man and man was made for God, therefore, neither of them are the result of "spontaneous generation" or evolution.

Instead of "erratic force" within protoplasm, accounting for life, it's God, that accounts for this life.

Evolution degrades a man's soul and exhorts his flesh; it robs a man of God and light, and substitutes monkey-mist and midnight.

Man reads, writes, reasons and radios around the world in a moment of time; he blasts the mountains from their foundations and fashions sky scrapers, he harnesses electricity and hundreds of miles away machines turn out devices that declare man was not made from the beasts of the field. He delves into the facts of Biology, Geology, Mineralogy, Chemistry, etc.—into the very facts and laws of God, and brings forth multitudes of blessings for the race. This is the science of matter in action and not pseudo-science in destruction. And may God bless that long line of noble scientific heroes who have been true to Him, and who have suffered, toiled and won the victor's crown.

Man builds the submarine and dives into the deep; the airplane, and wings his way far out into the great blue. . . . Man's soul arises and

aspires to heights beyond the blue of heaven. He thinks of loved ones who beckon him from heights beyond the sky. He turns from sin and ruin; kneels in simple faith at the feet of Jesus Christ, and commits the keeping of his soul to Him for time and for eternity. God meets the repentant sinner; gives him a new life, "eternal life;" he arises a new creature in Christ Jesus, a son of God by adoption. He **knows** that he has met God, he is **conscious** that he has been "born again," and that **the greatest scientific fact of all the ages** has been realized in his own life. The new man, as he lives clean and righteous before God, has the conscious presence and companionship of Him, Whom to know is to love; Whom to know is to long to be like; Whom to know is to have "life eternal." This is the science of God in action as it blesses man for time and for eternity. This man **knows** that he knows he has had an experience that was not born of earth or of evolution. The cleaner this man lives, and the truer to God he stands, the more thoroughly he knows that the doctrine of evolution is a monstrous perversion of the gospel of redemption, and that evolution robs a man of God for time and for eternity.

"'We are born for a higher destiny than that of earth. There is a realm where the rainbow never fades; where the stars will be spread out before us like the islands that slumber on the ocean; and where the beautiful beings that here pass before us like visions will stay in our presence forever.'—Bulwer.

'Death, judgment, heaven, hell, eternity, God—these are the realities. To ignore them is the supreme folly of man. For a man, with the capacities and destiny of human nature in him, to ignore these truths, is as unscientific as it would be for a geologist to ignore granite; or an astronomer, gravitation.'—Bishop Cyrus D. Foss, D.D., LL.D." ("The Golden Dawn," by Rev. J. H. Potts, A.M.).

If evolution were true, then the Bible would be false. If false, then there is no hereafter, no heaven.

"For **we know** that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens" (2 Cor. 5:1). How do you know? God says so.

"There are loved ones in the glory
Whose dear forms you often miss,
When you close your earthly story
Will you join them in their bliss?

Chorus:

Will the circle be unbroken
Bye and bye, bye and bye?
Is a better home awaiting
In the sky, in the sky?

In the joyous days of childhood,
Oft they told of wondrous love
Pointed to the dying Saviour,
Now they dwell with Him above.

You remember songs of heaven,
Which you sang with childish voice,
Do you love the hymns they taught you,
Or are songs of earth your choice?

You can picture happy gath'ings
 Round the fire-side long ago,
 And you think of tearful partings,
 When they left you here below.

One by one their seats were emptied,
 One by one they went away,
 Now the family is parted,
 Will it be complete one day?"

—Ada R. Habershon.

*ANTI-EVOLUTION EVIDENCE

H. G. Wells says that "The current idea of those qualified to form an opinion seems to be that" . . . (the ancestor or origin of man) "was a 'ground ape.'"

Maj. Leonard Darwin, son of Charles Darwin, says, "No scientific man disputes evolution . . . of man from an unreasoning animal." (Kansas City Star, 6-6-1925).

Text books on the sciences in High Schools and Colleges usually teach the evolution of species, including man, from the beast.

The Field Museum in Chicago has a display of "monkeys" for the purpose of teaching that man has a "monkey" for his ancestor.

The "Hall of the Age of Man" (The "Hall of the Age of Bunc") in New York City has a "schematized," "doctored" exhibit for the purpose of showing that man is the descendant of monstrous beasts. It is evidently intended to discredit the Biblical account of the creation of man by God.

In the Hutchinson News of 12-30-1925, and under the heading "Skeletons at Yale (University) A Monument to Evolution," we read as follows: "As soon as one enters the door of (Peabody Museum), he is in the midst of a series of exhibits outlining the story of evolution. Catching his eye at once is a series of five skeletons. A placard tells what they are." [The five skeletons consist of four "monkeys" (small graded to large) and a man.] "Scientists believe that man and the ape descended from common stock. For that is all that science ever claimed—that man and the ape were cousins, not that man descended from the ape." (This article states that science never claimed that man had an ape for his ancestor. Wells claims that those qualified to speak, say that man did have an ape for an ancestor).

If the preceding statements and exhibits are true, then what God has said in His Word about creating "the first man, Adam" in "the image of God," is false. If the Bible is false, we ought to know it. If evolution is false and a humbug, shouldn't evolution and its "scientific" scholars and teachers be **driven out of every educational institution in America?**

The Bible is "the Word of God." The jurisprudence system of our government is founded on its laws. The individual or institution that engages in discrediting it and destroying faith, is in the most dangerous and damnable business on earth.

Evolution teaches that it is an assured fact that man is the product of evolution from animal ancestors. Darwin's son says, "No scientific man disputes" it.

Prof. Wood Jones says, "We really still know **NOTHING for certain** about the great problem of evolution." All right, then, Mr. Evolutionist,

*These authorities quoted for "Anti-Evolution Evidence" were taken from Mauro's "Evolution at the Bar;" the "King's Business;" A. Patterson's "Other Side of Evolution;" Prof. L. T. Townsend, D.D., S.T.D., M.V.I. "Collapse of Evolution;" W. J. Bryan's "In His Image;" Dr. T. B. Bishop's "Evolution Criticised," and other places.

we refuse to listen to anything you have to say on the subject and advise you to keep your mouth closed until you know something for certain.

Dr. R. A. Millikan, Nobel prize winner and internationally famous physicist, says, "**No scientist can ever prove**" "**evolution.**" All right, we will **never** accept it then. Dr. Millikan states that efforts made by scientists to prove evolution are "**pitiable.**" This would also apply to the efforts made by the New York and Field Museums as well as Yale University.

T. H. Huxley says "it is not proven and **not provable.**" Then we need not fear that the Scriptural account of creation by God will be proven false by its enemies.

The Victoria Philosophical Institute declared "as yet no scientific evidence has been met with, giving countenance to the theory that man has been evolved from a lower order of animals," p. 204.

"Dr. D. S. Gregory of New York. . . (says) 'It is a strange fact that no great scientific authority in Great Britain in exact science, science that reduces its conclusions to mathematical formulae, has endorsed Evolution' (Alex. Patterson, in "The Other Side of Evolution").

Prof. W. Branca says "Palaeontology . . . **knows no ancestors of man.**" Yet they try to prove the evolution of man by Palaeontology, p. 241.

Dr. T. B. Bishop says there is not "the least trace . . . amongst the fossils" of an animal ancestor of man. Yet, they try to prove the evolution of man by that, of which there is **not "the least trace."** No wonder Prof. Samuel J. Holmes says "the evolution theory" is "bankrupt," pp. 242.

Sir Roderick Murchison says, "Our geologic record does not afford **one syllable of evidence in support**" of the theory, p. 242.

Dr. Ethridge of the British Museum says the theory is "utterly false," p. 242.

Sir David Brewster declares "**We have absolute proof of the IMMUTABILITY of species,**" p. 173.

Sir J. W. Dawson says, "The certainly known remains of man. . . cannot be older . . . than from seven to ten thousand years," p. 246.

Prof. Winchell says, "The very beginnings of our race are still almost in sight," p. 223.

Dr. Rudolph Virchow says, "There exists no . . . man-monkey," it's a "phantom," p. 255.

Lord Kelvin said that it's "an unproven hypothesis," p. 259.

Dr. Traas, the Palaeontologist, says, "The idea that mankind is descended from any Simian species is certainly the most foolish ever put forth by man," p. 254.

Prof. Wm. Bateson says it's "**MONSTROUS fiction which true men of science NEVER** regarded as more than a speculative theory and **NOW HAVE, with practical unanimity repudiated,**" p. 259. Please note that he says "**true men of science**" have practically repudiated the theory.

Dr. William Hanna Thomson, former president of the New York Academy of Medicine says, "**Evolution never was a cause of ANY-THING. . . it is ABSURD TO RANK MAN AMONG THE ANIMALS,**" p. 255.

No wonder the common people are disgusted with the crooked statements and methods of pseudo-science and scholarship. No wonder people are disgusted with such "humbug" exhibits as are found in the "Hall of

the Age of Man," the Field Museum, Yale University and elsewhere. These persistent attempts to delude, deceive and dupe the people are arousing their resentment. "Humbug" text books have hoodwinked the children of American fathers and mothers, about as long as they are going to stand for it. The day of the "dopester" with "scientific training" has about ended. **The people of our commonwealth are not going to permit pseudo-scientists and pseudo-educational institutions to discredit the Bible on whose laws our government was founded.**

God has spoken to men through the Bible and invites sinful men to turn to Christ and righteousness and fit themselves for time and for eternity. Christian fathers and mothers are not going to permit the antichrists to destroy the faith of their sons and daughters in the Bible and Jesus the Christ.

PROFESSOR AGASSIZ, who had no superior as a scientist, says: "As a paleontologist I have from the beginning stood aloof from this new theory of the transmutation of species. . . . Its doctrines in fact contradict what the animal forms buried in the rocky strata of the earth tell us of their own introduction and succession on the surface of the globe. The theory is a scientific mistake, untrue in its facts, unscientific in its methods, and MISCHIEVOUS IN ITS TENDENCY. . . . **There is not a fact known to science** tending to show that **any being** in the natural process of reproduction and multiplication **has ever diverged from the course natural to its kind**, or that **a single kind has ever been transmuted into any other.**" THEN IT'S HIGH TIME TO STOP THE EVOLUTION HUMBUG IN HIGH SCHOOL, COLLEGE AND ELSEWHERE.

DAWSON says: "Distinctness of species, and reproducing as a distinct species is a distinctive part of a creative plan, **revelation tallies perfectly with natural science**, i.e., each specie is permanently reproductive, variable within narrow limits and incapable of permanent intermixture with other species." "Revelation tallies perfectly with natural science." **Then stick to the Bible.**

PROF. HAECKEL: "Most modern investigators of science have come to the conclusion that the doctrine of Evolution, and particularly Darwinism, is an error, and cannot be maintained. And he gives an **impressive list of 'bold and talented scientists'** who, he admits, **have abandoned** the theory of Darwin, though at one time they advocated it." **Even Haeckel finally admitted the doctrine of evolution was "an error" and "could not be maintained."**

DR. N. S. SHALER, professor of geology, Harvard University: "It is not yet proved that a single species of the two or three millions now inhabiting the earth had been established solely or mainly by the operation of natural selection."

PROF. DANA, in his Manual of Geology, says: "Science has no explanation of the origin of life." . . . "geology very strongly confirms the belief that man was not of nature's making."

PROF. H. W. CONN: "Evolution is beyond proof. . . . The difficulties offered to an unhesitating acceptance of Evolution are **very great.**"

DR. W. HAECKE, a zoologist of Jena says: "We the younger men must free ourselves from the Darwinian dogma."

DR. J. B. WARREN, University of California, said: "If the theory of Evolution be true, then during the many thousands of years covered . . . there would certainly be known at least a few instances of the evolution of one species from another. **No such instance is known.**"

DR. RUDOLPH SCHMIDT: "All these theories have not passed beyond the rank of hypotheses," (guesses).

THOMAS CARLYLE called Evolution "the gospel of dirt."

Evolution is the gospel of the devil.

"The Harmsworth Encyclopedia says: . . . 'If higher organisms have arisen, not from one but from many protozoon types, how is it that since the formation of the great animal and plant phyla at a remote geological period the existing Protozoa have **given origin to no new stocks?**' . . .

Professor Ernest W. MacBride (asks): 'If the Amoeba in past ages evolved into higher organisms, **what reasons can be given why it is not doing so now?**' . . .

Dr. R. C. Macfie, in Science, Matter and Immortality, says: . . . '**Can any sane thinker affirm** that one amoeba remained constant to type, while the other has, by its own inherent power, become fish, monkey or man?' . . .

Professor D. H. Scott says: 'As all admit, we know nothing of the origin of life; consequently, for all we can tell, it is as probable that life began, on this planet, with many living things, as with one. If the first organic beings were many, they may have been heterogeneous, or at least exposed to different conditions from their origin; in either case there would have been a number of distinct series from the beginning, and if so, we should not be justified in assuming that all organisms are related to one another.' . . .

Yves Delage, in L'Héredité, says that '**selection is powerless** to form species. Its role, however, is not nul, but it is limited to the suppression of variations radically bad, and to the maintaining of the species in its normal character. Far from being an instrument for the evolution of species, **IT GUARANTEES THEIR FIXITY**.'"

PROFESSOR C. C. EVERETT, of Harvard: "As man searches for evolution, All, as he looks upon it, is **as fixed as the sphinx that slumbers on the Egyptian sands**. All this story of transformation and activity is a dream."

DR. J. A. ZAHM: "The theory of Evolution is not yet proved."

PROF. OWEN: "No instance of change of one species into another has ever been recorded by man."

JOHN TYNDALL: "Those who hold the doctrine of evolution are by no means ignorant of the uncertainty of their data."

DR. GROETTE, in his inaugural address as rector of the University of Strassburg, rejected Evolution.

SIR J. WILLIAM DAWSON says: "It is one of the strangest phenomena of humanity; **it is utterly destitute of proof**."

The Darwinian doctrine of Natural Selection has been discarded by Spencer, Huxley, and other leading evolutionists, who thus leave the theory of Evolution, as it were, suspended in mid-air, without any method whereby it could work. Mr. Darwin himself had serious misgivings as to his theory, and never regarded it as established" (Mauro).

SIR CHARLES BELL, Professor, University College of London: "Everything declares the species to have their origin **in a distinct creation**, not in a gradual variation."

W. J. BRYAN: "There is not a single fact in the universe that can be cited to prove that man is descended from the lower animals."

ALEX. PATTERSON: "Evolution fails to account for the origin of matter. Spencer says this is the unknowable. So that Spencer's great philosophy rests on what he doesn't know and cannot find out. Darwin

said as to the origin of things, 'I am in a hopeless muddle.' Prof. Edward Clodd wrote: 'Of the beginning of what was before the present state of things, we know nothing and speculation is futile.'

EDWARD VON HARTMAN: "In the first decade of the twentieth century it has become apparent that the days of Darwinism are numbered."

"Dr. W. B. Scott, Professor of Geology and Palaeontology in Princeton University, U. S. A. . . . says . . . 'Widespread belief that naturalists have become very doubtful as to the truth of the theory of evolution, and are casting about for some more satisfactory substitute.' He quotes Professor Steinmann, of Freiburg, who says that 'in scientific as in lay circles, there prevails a widespread feeling of uncertainty and doubt'."

RUSKIN: "I have never yet heard **one** logical argument in its favor."

LUTHER T. TOWNSEND, D.D., S.T.D., M.V.I.: "Evolution, built by either the naturalist or supernaturalist, is **NOT SUPPORTED BY ONE SINGLE WELL ESTABLISHED FACT IN THE WHOLE DOMAIN OF SCIENCE**, philosophy or religion. . . . Every discovery during the last twenty-five and more years in these different fields of investigation and learning, those of geology, history, archaeology, anatomy, philology, ethics, and religion, have demonstrated the fact that so far as is known, the first inhabitants on earth who wore the human form were not brutes, nor even barbarians, as evolutionists tell us, but had bodies just as perfect, brains and intellects just as capable of working and languages just as complete in expressing thought as those of any people now living."

ST. GEORGE MIVERT, University College, Kensington: "I weigh my words and have present in my mind the many distinguished naturalists who have accepted the notion, and yet I cannot call it anything but a **puerile hypothesis**."

M. GASTON BONNIER, French scientist: "It is not scientifically demonstrated, either as concerns the passage of one species to another or as concerns the inheritance of acquired characteristics."

PROF. ELIE DE CYON, University of St. Petersburg: "The theory is **the most preposterous conception** that has been brought forward since the days of Empedocles."

PROF. FLEISCHMANN of Earlangen: "The Darwinian theory of descent has in the realms of nature **not a single fact to confirm it** . . . but purely the product of imagination."

PROF. DWIGHT of Harvard Medical School stated **some years ago**, "not proved that man came from lower animals . . . as a **scientific secret**, he said the **real leaders** in science are at a pause . . . when it is said man had an ape for (an ancestor) we are talking nonsense."

DR. J. HENRY, late secretary of Smithsonian Institution, and Prof. Arnold H. Guyot, of Princeton University, names that rank with those of any American scientist of late date, emphatically discredited the theory of evolution and are to be classed with Professors Agassiz, Shaler, Dwight and Everett."

J. HENRI FABRE, famous French scientist; rejected with impatience the theory of evolution. He says: "I see plenty of big words, but I should prefer **a few small facts**."

PROF. G. F. WRIGHT says, "The history of science is little else than one of discarded theories . . . things about which true science is certain are very few."

PROF. HUXLEY: "After much consideration, it is our clear conviction that, **it is not absolutely proven that a group of animals,**

having all the characters exhibited by species in nature, **has ever been originated by selection**, whether artificial or natural."

PROF. VIRCHOW, highest German authority in physiology: "The attempt to find the transition from animal to man has ended in total failure. The missing link has not been found **and never will be.**"

PROF. WILLIAM BATESON, world's famous English biologist: "There is **NO EVIDENCE** of any one species acquiring new faculties . . . **no origin of species.**"

PROF. LIONEL S. BEALE, King's College, London: "Not the slightest evidence from the facts of any section of living nature of which anything is known . . . **THERE IS NOT AT THIS TIME A SHADOW OF SCIENTIFIC EVIDENCE.**"

Evolution has **never** been proven; it **cannot** be proven and there is **NOT A SHADOW** of scientific evidence to support it. Big business, isn't it, this humbug of evolution? "Scholars" and educational institutions that destroy faith in the Bible, while they support evolution are in big business, aren't they?

Evolution has been destroying faith in the Bible, faith in Christ, and undermining the foundations of our government. President Andrew Jackson said, "The Bible is the rock on which our republic rests." President Grant said that the Bible is "The sheet anchor of our liberties," p. 275. Evolution is therefore a most dangerous and damnable enemy of the individual and of our commonwealth; yet, this arch-destroyer cries, "Let us alone." "Let us alone" is the cry of all robbers, murderers and destroyers. Why let this arch-destroyer alone, while it sinks its poisonous fangs into the life's blood of the child and of the commonwealth?

No government is worth living under that is not founded on Christianity. That evolution is Christianity's enemy and denies every fundamental thing that God has said in His Word, **both about creation and about redemption** has been shown. See pp. 176-177, 277-286.

"Scientists" and "scholars" should stick to the government and stick to the Bible, on whose laws the foundations of our commonwealth rest, or step out of our educational institutions. See pp. 274-276.

GLACIAL PERIODS

"The distinguishing feature of this period is its extensive glaciation, ice-sheets covering six or eight million square miles of the earth's surface where mild climates had prevailed not long before. . . . More than half the area glaciated during the Pleistocene period was in North America, and more than half of the remainder in Europe. The glaciation was, therefore, notably localized, though the whole world felt its effects. . . . Nearly half of North America was buried by ice, and strangely enough, it was the northeastern half of the continent rather than the northern. More strangely still it was the plain, rather than the mountainous part, which had most ice" (Chamberlin and Salisbury's "College Geology").

"Glacial period" gains its name from "a remarkable episode in which abnormal conditions of climate were involved" . . . "glacial deposits are divided into four and possibly six stages" . . . "Glacial advances . . . then intervals of ice recession . . . the earliest period being the longest" . . . "The glacial invasion was the last important geological event preceding the present epoch that exerted a wide influence upon the physical features of the earth."—"Geologists are unable to explain glacial periods." See topic, "Suggestions for Glacial Periods," p. 155.

"Man's arrival was preceded by the great Ice Age. If we knew just when the Ice Age ended, we should know pretty accurately when man

first appeared. Sir Charles Lyell gave us a span of 850,000 years. Sir John Lubbock has divided that number by four, and is content with 200,000. Croll and J. Geikie say 80,000 years have passed since the end of the Glacial period. Sir Joseph Prestwich thinks it cannot be more than 20,000, or 30,000 years at the outside, figures in which the Duke of Argyll seems to agree with him. There is a big difference between 850,000 and 20,000! And yet these are the 'certainties' for which ever so many people have exchanged the teaching of the Bible! But there is more than the striking fact that science is climbing down in this way from its hundreds of thousands of years to meet the Bible. Those numbers are based more or less upon theory. But, where accurate measurement has been employed, the Bible is still more fully vindicated. Our rivers have ploughed out their channels since the ice was cleared away from the surface. Niagara has had to cut through the rocky gorge down which it hurls the huge mass of water which forms the falls. At what rate has Niagara cut its way through those rocks? **It has ploughed out seven miles.** Lyell estimated that the work was carried on at the rate of **one foot a year**, and set the whole time down as 35,000 years. But careful observations, made by a New York Commissioner, brought it down to 10,000 years" (Dr. John Urquhart).

"The last ice age was probably some 10,000 years ago" (Robinson and Breasted's "History of Europe," p. 6).

"The great ice sheet . . . was not withdrawn until 10,000 years ago, approximately" (Prof. Holmes).

"Mr. Gilbert, of the United States Geological Survey, has since brought it down to 7,000.* Sir J. W. Dawson† believes that **even that figure has to be reduced**, and names a number of similar testimonies; and so **we are actually brought down by the latest science to the Bible dates**" (Dr. John Urquhart).

Whether men accept the truth or not, the Bible is the Word of God. The statements the Bible actually makes about the creation of man, his age and history are absolute facts and they "cannot be broken," because they are **the absolute facts**. Pseudo-science and pseudo-history have been drinking at the fountain of fiction, and their minds are addled, and their methods are absurd.

THE PRE-GLACIAL MAN A MYTH

"It may be said that human relics have not been found, in America, in gravels known to have been deposited in the glacial period, or before. All that have been reported from glacial gravels, have been found . . . in such positions as to show that they were buried in post-glacial time. . . . The existence of man in America in the glacial period or before is therefore not demonstrated. . . . There are two classes of formations in which good evidences of glacial man, if there was such man in America, are to be sought, viz., (1) in undisturbed till-sheets below horizons affected by surface intrusion, and (2) in interglacial beds, where overlain by till and protected from all assignable sources of subsequent intermixture. . . . These beds have not yet yielded human relics in America. . . . Of the less superficial finds, of paleolithic artefacts, many have been shown to be cases of relatively recent burial by natural means" (Chamberlin and Salisbury).

"The efforts to place human fossils on the far side of the glacial period in order to secure their greater antiquity have been most persistent, as

*See Journal of Transactions of the Victoria Institute, vol. 27, p. 41.

†Modern Science in Bible Lands, pp. 99-101 (Third Edition).

everyone familiar with these subjects knows, but everyone does not seem to know that the outcome of all these efforts has met with what now may be called utter failure" (Townsend).

With reference to the finding of human and animal fossils in caves, we refer you to the following: "The association of man with extinct animals is a phenomenon that may mean the extension of man's presence backward, or **the extension of the animal's presence forward**; and to this double-faced problem research has not yet furnished a final key" (Chamberlin and Salisbury's, "College Geology"). This is an admission from those who hold the theory of evolution.

"Dr. Zahn says: 'We could not give a better illustration of the extremes to which the unguided human intellect is subject than the vacillating and extravagant notions of the antiquity of man.' The age of the peat beds of Abbeville, in France, in which human remains were found, was once estimated at 20,000 years. The estimate has been reduced to a fifth of that age. The remains of the animals found with man are supposed to prove his extreme antiquity. The remains of the mammoth were once cited as such proof. **BUT THE MAMMOTH HAS BEEN FOUND IN SUCH A STATE OF PRESERVATION THAT ITS FLESH HAS BEEN FED TO THE DOGS.** . . . Prof. Winchell tells us, '**The very beginnings of our race are still almost in sight.** . . . Geology agrees that man did not exist before the ice age' " (Alex. Patterson).

EVOLUTION'S STONE AGE MAN A MYTH

Paleontology: "The science founded about the beginning of the 19th century by Lamarck, Cuvier, Schlotheim, Sowerby, Parkinson, D'Orbigny and Goldfuss. Its early literature merely concerned descriptions and classifications of fossils. 'After the publication, in 1859, of Darwin's Origin of Species, it became evident that proof of this doctrine must be furnished largely by the paleontologists.' The early conceptions of paleontologists was that, 'Each fossil species was considered to represent a distinct entity separate from its allies and specially created . . . the term "species" in paleontology is a very arbitrary one . . . a species is determined, not by any strictly definable form but rather by the absence of transitional forms that would serve to link it, thru scarcely distinguishable grades of variation to its nearest ally' " (Int. Encyc., vol. 17, 1918).

If evolution is a fact there would not be any such thing as species, would there? Life would so blend that you could not tell where one "kind" began or the other ended. As a matter of fact, there is definite demarcation between a multitude of species. The natural world confirms the written Word. The God who wrote the laws of nature is the God who wrote the laws of the Bible.

These Paleontologists once believed in a special creation; then in evolution. Which view was right? "God created"—"after its kind." Who says so? God says so.

The paleolithic and neolithic stone ages are regarded by some as **preceded** by a stone age, which is preceded by other stone ages. These stone ages are regarded by still other "scholars" as divided into still other stone ages and as you investigate you wonder if these "scholars" instead of being "block heads" are not "nigger heads."

"Flint implements . . . have been found in several places in the lower strata, the age of which goes back very far indeed beyond the Bible dates. . . . In every case the evidence has, on inquiry, completely broken down. You know, of course, that the Quaternary is our own

geological age. The Tertiary is the next older, and is divided into four sections, the two latest of which are the Pliocene and the Miocene. Well, Dr. Notling, while geologizing in Burmah, came upon some human-shaped flints imbedded in strata about ten feet thick. These lay at a mountain foot, and 4,000 feet of Pliocene strata towered above it. What could be more natural than his conclusion that man must have lived in Miocene times? . . . Mr. Oldham, one of the Indian Geological Survey, got Notling to show him the spot, and then a second discovery was made. The strata, in which the flints were found, were on a spur which ran out at the hill foot. A flint could easily be swept from the surface on the heights above and get embedded in the conglomerate on the spur. The terraces above were searched, and lo! there were the shaped flints lying in abundance on the surface. A more recent case is that of the flints of Thenay, in France. Those were found in Miocene strata, and the learned Abbés, who made the discovery, were themselves impressed by it. . . . They found, on further search, that early excavations had been made to reach the beds of marl which lay underneath, and that the material on the surface, which had been swept to right and left during the operations, had afterwards fallen into the pit, and the Quaternary had thus been buried in the bosom of the Tertiary!" (Dr. John Urquhart).

Nature's forgeries: Specimens of "Eoliths" offered as evidence of evolution are **made by nature**. "Dr. G. F. Wright discusses some of the discoveries of worked flints in France and England, . . . says: 'It would now seem that the evidence for the artificial character (that they were made by man) of the chippings on eoliths is **insufficient** to establish their genuineness' (p. 338), (Bishop's "E.C.", p. 139). Yet these "eoliths" are the evidence evolution has offered to prove there was a "stone age" man of great antiquity.

Dr. Keith concedes that the humanity of some of the "eoliths" is questioned. Sir Charles Lyell had some polished bones offered as evidence of the work of primitive man. He placed similar bones among the beavers and afterwards recovered them, ground and polished, "so nearly like the others as to leave no doubt that in both cases the same agency had been employed."

"Virchow said at the Congress of Moscow. . . . 'We found flint chips, but we were far from being convinced that these flint chips were distinguished in any respect from the debris which is found in the ground everywhere, and which results from the disintegration of a siliceous soil.'

Dr. C. Hercules Read, President of the Society of Antiquaries of London, says: . . . 'Natural forces, . . . earthquakes, landslips . . . must crush and chip flints, and break up animal remains, grinding and scratching them in masses of gravel and sand. . . . The bulb of percussion has come to be regarded as the hall-mark of human manufacture; **but recent investigations have shown that the intervention of man is not necessary**, and that **natural forces frequently** produce a similar result. . . . There can be no doubt that much time and energy have been wasted . . . in following up archaeological will-o'-the-wisps' " (Bishop, pp. 140-1).

Man's forgeries: Prof. Arthur Keith, in his *Antiquity of Man* gives illustrations of a tendency to forge flint implements.

"Edward Simpson—acquired notoriety by the manufacture of sham antique and geological specimens, which he turned out in great numbers. Some of his 'relics of the Stone Age'—fish hooks, ax heads, and so on—are treasured in museums as genuine specimens of the handiwork of pre-historic man" (Wichita Beacon, 3-18-25).

Are some scientific-school-room-"scholars" gulled by other things than evolution? And yet some of them say that the great mass of mankind is unqualified to judge of natural truths before their eyes every day, because "they have no scientific training."

Science's forgeries: "When Columbus discovered America, all the natives of the western Hemisphere were in some part of the Stone Age" (W. M. West's "Ancient World," p. 5). The stone cultural development of a people is no evidence of man's antiquity, as the facts clearly prove.

"We have . . . the stone, bronze and iron 'ages' in existence somewhere **in the world to-day** . . . the explorers in Asia Minor found that the bronze age was **before** the stone age" (Prof. T. Geo. Graebner).

The modern cannibal, bush-man, cave-man, tree-man, etc. is "primitive" as much as men of this type of 5,000 years ago. It is simply a testimony of human degeneration. The condition may be recent or remote.

"Some very primitive savages to-day have only a few words" in their language (W. M. West's "Ancient World," p. 6). The Greeks, many centuries ago had the most perfect language the world has ever known. So language itself is not an evidence of the age or of the "evolution" of the people who use it.

It's a false theory: "We find **today** the same classes of people with their stone tools and pottery and living as prehistoric man lived. **There to-day exist men in every stage of the supposed progress from the cave man to the highest in civilization.** Such remains could be had in any burial place of these savage peoples. Prehistoric man, so-called, is still with us and we can interview him as to his state and history. . . . This is a false theory. We have all these 'ages' existing to-day. On the other hand, Dr. Livingstone found **no stone age in Africa.** Dr. Schliemann found in the ruins of Troy the bronze age below the stone age. The early Egyptians used bronze, the later ones stone tools. **In the Chaldean tombs all these are found together.** Europe had the metal age while America had the stone age" (Alex. Patterson). Be sure to see, "The Stone Age" under topic, "Robinson and Breasted's History in Conflict with the Bible," Vol. 2 of this work.

THE MISSING LINK

The following from The Kansas City Journal-Post, July 23, 1922, indicates the "wisdom of this world" as per some "scholars."

"LONG LOST LINK FOUND"

London—The "missing link" between man and monkey has been found. Where civilization began and the steps by which it was diffused from Egypt all over the world are problems that have been solved. These remarkable claims are made by Prof. Grafton Elliot Smith of the University of London in the first volume of the new twelfth edition of the "Encyclopedia Britannica," which is about to appear. . . . He sweeps away as out of date and unsound the theories of his recent predecessors. Even the views of Professor Edward Burnett Tylor of Oxford, who wrote the "Anthropology" article in the last edition of the "Britannica," published in 1911, are specially repudiated. Mankind springs, says Prof. Elliot, from the Siwalik Hills in the foothills of the Himalayas. This district bred anthropoid apes in the Miocene period. Geologists quarrel about how long ago—measured in years—Miocene times were. Perhaps three or four million.

Dr. R. A. Millikan, Nobel prize winner, says it's "pathetic." Dr. William Hanna Thompson says it's "absurd." Dr. Wm. Bateson, dis-

tinguished English biologist, says it's "monstrous fiction." May God help the young man or woman who has to use as a reference book an Encyclopedia that edits such absurd yet dangerous material. If this is "scholarship," the world is tired of it.

Museums sometimes line up about a dozen monkeys—the lower and smaller suggestively graded up to the larger and higher, and the argument is, these are some of the "links" from monkey to man. Do monkeys build submarines, flying machines, or worship and hold communion with God? The gulf between monkey and man is wider than the sea. If there was ascent to man there would be thousands of missing links. If you are a father and made out of the kind of stuff God uses when He makes a man, tell us how many missing links there are between the baby that nestles on your wife's breast and its brute ancestor. Their hypothesis presupposes a gradual blend, one link to a higher link. Is it "scholarly" to hunt for the missing link? It isn't "horse sense." If there is one "missing link," there are necessarily many. A half century of phantom-quest has been in vain. No "missing link" has ever been found. None exists. (See Gen. 1:2—2:3.) Hell will be overstocked with "scholars" and "scientists" who are missing linkers. "Not many wise men after the flesh . . . are called." You talk it over with God Almighty, while you are on your knees. We are quoting you what He says about it.

"MISSING LINKS" THAT WON'T "LINK"

PILTDOWN MAN (Sussex, England): . . . "The **discoveries extend over a period of several years**, but the fragments **seem** to have been concentrated **within a comparatively limited area**. They comprise a number of pieces of a skull. . . . The skullcap is represented by three pieces of very great thickness. Part of the lower jaw, **a canine tooth**, part of a nasal bone and of one of the bones from the nasal cavity complete the list. . . . Objection has been taken chiefly to the mode of reconstruction of the skull as first exhibited. **Some authorities doubt the correctness of associating the various fragments as parts of one skeleton**. . . . The brow region of the skull (of the Piltdown man) is . . . more suggestive of the modern-type of (man) *Homo primigenius*, and the temporal bone is also in important respects similar to those of modern skulls. . . . **The Piltdown fragments . . . do not differ essentially from modern human skeletons**" (Int. Encyc., Vol. 14, pp. 755, 752-3).

Dr. Keith, anthropologist of the Museum of the Royal College of Surgeons, says: "We can say with certainty that the forehead of *Eoanthropus* (the Piltdown man), was well formed. It was high, prominent, and of a width equal to that of a modern human skull. . . . Not beyond the limits known to occur in living races, for instance, in the Tasmanians" (Bishop's "E.C.," p. 25).

"For the curious thing about this skeleton is that it cannot be distinguished from that of a modern Englishman who had but recently been buried. There is nothing about it that suggests the Simian origin of this Englishman's skeleton. The fact therefore, seems well established that this recent discovery is the skeleton of a real Englishman that had received a Christian burial in an artificially constructed grave that had been covered by surface washing and disturbances. We therefore seem justified when saying that no anthropologist is today in position successfully to controvert the statement of Lord Avebury that, 'There is no absolute proof that man co-existed in America or in Europe with the pre-glacial mammoth and mastodon' " (Townsend).

The Piltdown man was simply man, and is, therefore, automatically eliminated as proof of the evolution of man from beast.

"THE CALAVERAS SKULL now in the California State Museum. This has been shown recently to be a hoax. It was placed in a mine shaft 150 feet deep, by Mr. R. C. Scribner, a storekeeper at the mine, as a practical joke. This he lately acknowledged to the Rev. W. H. Dyer, of Los Angeles, a clergyman of the Episcopal church" (Townsend).

THE COLORADO SPECIMEN. Prof. Stephen Bowers of the Mineralogical and Geological Survey of California, gives this account of another such discovery: "A few years ago the newspapers contained an account of the discovery of a skeleton in Colorado, by a Columbia College professor, which he was pleased to call the 'missing link' between man and the apes. He gave this remarkable creature an antiquity of **a million and a half years**. The friable bones were carefully wrapped in cotton and shipped east. But scarcely had the learned professor gotten away with his prize when certain cowboys came forward and claimed the bones to be that of a pet monkey which they buried but a dozen years previously" (Townsend).

A million and a half years old "missing link" dwindles to a dozen years old monkey when it leaves the hands of the Columbia University "scholar" with "scientific training."

CROATIA SKELETONS. "The late find of skeletons at Croatia, Austria, is heralded as the discovery of a connecting link. But these are skeletons of men and not of brutes. They are degraded men and nothing is better known than the possibility of degeneracy in man. We have degenerates now with all the peculiarities of these low specimens, retreating brows and jaws and flat faces. Degeneracy does not prove evolution. While the shape of these skulls is low and long it has not been shown that their cubical capacity is much less than that of normal man" (Townsend).

Concerning the Croated specimens, Dr. Otto Hamann, says: "**Such specimens** of frontal cavities are **turning up yearly in our dissecting rooms**, and are seldom wanting in our anatomical collections, and the same may be said as to the formation of the lower jaw" (Quoted by Bishop, p. 52).

UNCERTAINTY OF SKELETON EVIDENCE. "The evidence of bones and other remains is now generally suspected. It has been found that even in the case of recent remains, as in criminal trials, experts are often unable to decide whether they are human or brute, recent or remote, and what part of the frame they occupied."

NEW ORLEANS SKELETON. "The enormous ages which have been credited to these remains are well illustrated by the discovery of a skeleton at New Orleans while digging for the gas works. From the depth of the stratum in which it was found it was estimated by scientists at the age of 57,000 years. Soon after, the gunwale of the skeleton's Kentucky flat boat was found in the same stratum, and the age therefore of the remains was reduced from 57,000 to 50 years. The evidence from peat bogs, stalagmite formations, stone, iron and bronze tools are all now considered unreliable by scientists. So many exposures of mistakes in the estimate of age from these have been made, that the whole is looked upon with suspicion" (Patterson's, "The Other Side of Evolution").

PRE-MOUSTERIAN MAN: "Abbeville (p. 196). Acheulean implements, etc., found by M. Boucher de Perthes in 1832. Moulin Quignon, near Abbeville (p. 197). Human jaw found in lower gravels of a pit, also a tooth. At a conference in 1863 the French geologists decided that the

jaw was authentic, while **the English regarded it as a forgery**. Opinion is now almost unanimous in regarding **it as a worthless relic**" (Bishop, pp. 16, 17).

JAVA SKELETON or PITHECANTHROPUS: "The once famous Java skeleton for a time had the reputation of being the missing link, . . . In the month of September, 1891, Dubois, a Dutch physician, discovered a tooth on the island of Java, several feet below the surface of the earth; one month later he found the roof of a skull about three feet from where he found the tooth, and in August, 1892, he found a thigh bone forty-five feet further away, and later, another tooth. . . . A year or two after these discoveries the world's famous zoologists met at Leyden, and among other things examined and discussed were the remains of pithecanthropus. Ten of those scientists concluded that they were nothing but the bones of an ape, seven held that they were those of man, and seven concluded that they were really the missing link connecting man and the ape. So that of twenty-four of the most eminent scientists of Europe, only seven, not one-third, ascribed any importance whatever to this pithecanthropus erectus. But the amusing thing about this celebrated paleontological affair was a later explanation that accounts for the different opinions of those Leyden experts, though rather hard on the experts; it was given by Professor D. C. Cunningham of Dublin, one of the highest authorities in Great Britain on questions of comparative anatomy. His conclusion was that those different bones do not belong to the same animal at all, some of them being those of a monkey or baboon, the rest human" (Prof. L. T. Townsend, D. D., S.T.D., M.V.I.).

"The distance (about 46 feet) between the thigh bone and the skull-cap (as they lay in the alluvial river deposit which yielded them) has been considered **too great to allow of the association of the two fragments**" (Int. Encyc., Vol. 14, p. 754).

"Dr. J. H. F. Kohlbrugge, in *Die Morphologische Abstammung des menschen* (pp. 8, 9), . . . mentions the possibility that bones of a man and of an ape may have been washed together into the same stream, or that an ape and a man may even have been drowned when engaged in conflict together. . . . Professor E. Metchnikoff, says: 'However, the facts about this creature are meagre, and have been interpreted differently.' Professor Hertwig, in his *Lehrbuch der Zoologie*, says: . . . 'The opinion that is most probably correct is that the fragments belonged to an anthropomorphic ape of extraordinary size and an enormous cranial capacity, and with a relatively very large brain.' (See *Modern Biology*, p. 466). . . . Wasmann says: . . . 'Macnamara has recently submitted the skull of a chimpanzee and the much discussed Pithecanthropus cranium to a very careful comparison and examination, in consequence of which he has arrived at a similar conclusion—namely, that the Pithecanthropus was a true ape of large size.' . . .

"Pithecanthropus was declared by Professor Virchow, . . . to be an ape. We have seen (pp. 34, 35) that this view is supported by Professors Richard Hertwig, Macnamara, Brañca, Hamann, Bumüller, Ranke, W. Krause, and even Klaatsch, and by the Rev. E. Wasmann. Then, in a recent pamphlet, *Primitive Man*, Professor Elliott Smith says that 'several leading palaeontologists, such as Professors Boule and Obermaier, still maintain that Pithecanthropus was really an ape' (p. 8), and in his paper on *Early Man*, in the *Geological Magazine* for January, 1917, Dr. Smith Woodward, who has recently examined their arguments, says that there is some reason to suspect that the Java specimen was 'really a gigantic and precocious gibbon.'"

Wasmann, in his *Modern Biology and the Theory of Evolution* (translated from the German), says: "It is nothing short of an outrage upon truth to represent scanty remains, the origin of which is so uncertain as that of the *Pithecanthropus*, (Java Skeleton) as absolute proof of the descent of man from beasts, in order thus to deceive the general public" (p. 465). . . . In regard to some speculations of Professor Schwalbe as to possible ancestors of *Pithecanthropus*, Kohlbrugge remarks: "This opinion, compared with others that have been cited, shows us that we have here not to deal merely with comparisons with one, two, or three unknown forms, but that the number of the great unknown grows so large that our actual knowledge becomes a small point, upon which a hypothetical pyramid is built with its basis in the air" (T. B. Bishop, Member of the Victoria Institute, in his "Evolution Criticized," pp. 33-5, 262).

Such scant circumstances as exist has resulted in the most able scientists coming to this conclusion; that the Java bone fragments were either human or simian, or some of the fragments were human, the others simian. The evidence surrounding the fragments is so incomplete, so uncertain and unreliable that it could not in justice be admitted as testimony to establish fact.

The Java evolution humbug, is therefore, automatically eliminated as evidence to prove that man is evolved from beast **on both** of the above grounds, **either of which** would in justice bar it from admission in court as evidence.

Some pseudo-"scientists" and "scholars" would rather have a monkey for their ancestor than God for their Creator and Redeemer.

"CRO-MAGNON (France).—The skeleton known as that of the 'old **man** of Cro-Magnon,' . . . The most prominent characters are the great stature and strength, as evinced by the length and massiveness of the limb bones, the skull being proportionately large. Judged by the skeleton, **the men** of the Cro-Magnon race have not since their appearance been surpassed as regards physique, no matter what subsequent epoch be selected for comparison" (Int, Encyc., Vol. 14, p. 759).

This specimen and other Cro-Magnon specimens (Menton-Barma, Grande, Cavillon, Grotto des Enfants) are simply specimens of "man." "They had massive skulls. . . . It is a question whether the Cro-Magnons were not the earliest men of whom we have any certain knowledge, since we have seen how doubtful is the geological evidence as to the Neanderthal and Spy men and Eoanthropus" (Bishop, p. 275).

The *Encyclopedia Britannica* under Archaeology, says that the artistic and skillful pictures in the caves of France were made by Cro-Magnon men. These pictures, therefore, in no wise substantiate the claims of evolution.

"Dr. Duckworth, in *Prehistoric Man* (p. 51), says that the Grimaldi skeletons could be **matched without difficulty by skeletons of even recent date**" (Bishop, p. 7).

The Cro-Magnon man was simply man and is, therefore, automatically eliminated as proof of the evolution of man from beast.

THE HEIDELBERG MAN: "Mauer (near Heidelberg, Germany).—A single lower jaw, discovered in 1908. . . . It recalls the form of the jaw in a gorilla or a large orang-utan, it is clearly not to be identified with either of these forms. The chin is retreating, but characteristic human depressions are found beneath it. . . . On the whole, **the human characters are predominant**, so that Dr. Schoetensack named the

form thus represented *Homo heidelbergensis*" (Int. Encyc., p. 754, Vol. 14).

"The muscles of mastication must have been of great strength, yet the markings for their implantation on the mandible are those seen in human jaws . . . never on the mandibles of anthropoid apes . . . no simian plate, nor any trace of it, in the Heidelberg mandible" (Dr. Keith).

"The teeth are actually within the range of variation provided by human beings of races still extant, though commonly regarded as 'primitive'" (Dr. Duckworth).

"In that particular disease or disturbance of growth, acromegaly, which sometimes attacks men or women, the jaws and the parts of the skull concerned in mastication are particularly liable to become overgrown" (Dr. Keith).

"The jaw (of the Heidelberg man) is very large, and must have belonged to a man of huge frame, but it has been matched by a modern Indian's in every way" (Guy Fitch Phelps' "Absurdities of Evolution," p. 24).

"As to the Mauer Jaw, of which so much has been made, we shall notice the warning of Professor Branca that the whole of a skull cannot be inferred from a jawbone. Kramberger has shown that the Heidelberg jawbone very closely resembles that of a modern Eskimo skull. . . . **Among the Eskimos of to-day, similar lower jaws are found to the Heidelberg man.**—Prof. Branca" (Bishop's "E.C.," pp. 18-19, 57, 265).

The Heidelberg man was simply man and is therefore, automatically eliminated as proof of the evolution of man from beast.

NEANDERTHAL MAN: "The Neanderthal skull was found in 1856 in Prussia. It had a narrow receding forehead and thick ridges over the eyes. It was claimed by the evolutionists as from two to three hundred thousand years old. Dr. Meyer of Bonn examined the evidence, and found it to be the skull of a Cossack killed in 1814. **Many other scientists agreed with him**" (Townsend).

"The Gibraltar skull holds a unique place (in the Neanderthal race). **In no other specimen** is the base of the skull preserved."

"The skulls of Neanderthal and Spy . . . all have a capacity . . . considerably more than that of various living men. . . . **In no sense, then, can the Neanderthal bones be regarded as the remains of a human being intermediate between Man and Apes**" (Alfred Fairhurst, A.M., Professor of Natural Science in Kentucky University in his "Organic Evolution Considered," pp. 367-8). "The Neanderthal man seems to have been in some instances even better provided with brain material (if the mere weight be taken as a test) than the average (man) *Homo sapiens* of to-day" (Int. Encyc., Vol., 14, p. 750).

Professor William Fielding Ogburn—Columbia University, says, "But no one questions that the Neanderthals were of the genus *homo*" (K.C. Star 5-31-24).

"The outstanding fact in regard to Professor Keith's book 'The Antiquity of Man' is that, while he is a strong advocate of the descent of man from animal ancestors, he entirely rejects, as 'missing links' in the chain, some skulls that have been considered by other biologists as the most important: amongst them, the 'Neanderthal' man, and his supposed relatives in Europe. . . . 'These Spy men,' says Professor Keith, 'were typical representatives of the Neanderthal species, with large, robust skulls, holding brains which, in point of size, were **above the average of the modern European.**' . . . Rodolph Wagner was of opinion that

the skull might be that of a modern Dutchman; . . . Professor W. Branca says: 'The diluvial age of the Neanderthal skull has, through Rauff's enquiries, been proved to be absolutely doubtful. The Neanderthal skull must finally be struck out of the list of apparently safe diluvial skulls' " (Bishop, pp. 1, 12, 42, 44).

"Le Conte says: . . . **'The earliest men yet found are in no sense connecting links between man and ape.'** The Engis skull, one of the most ancient that has been discovered, is said to be 'a well-shaped, average human skull.' . . . The Neanderthal skull . . . 'is in no respect intermediate' between man and ape, being 'truly human' " (Fairhurst, p. 230).

"In no sense can the Neanderthal bones be regarded as the remains of a human being intermediate between men and apes," says Huxley. Professor W. Branca, in "The Position of our Knowledge of Fossil Man," says: 'This diluvial, inferior type of skull has been found today amongst the Australians,' and Professor H. Klaatsch says that the Australian skull is still lower in type than the Neanderthal skull. . . .

"Branca also says (p. 44) that Virchow, on the occasion of an Anthropological meeting at the Hague, had declared that he had then **seen upon the street men with just such skulls as those of the Neanderthal type.** . . .

"Professor Kollmann, of Basle . . . says: 'There is in my view a probability that the retreating forehead and the projecting orbital ridges of the Neanderthal group perhaps belong to the category of phenomena which must **indicate individual variations of Homo sapiens** . . . In the far-distant Continent of Australia just as strongly marked orbital ridges and retreating brows are to be found as in the skulls of the Neanderthal-Spy group. Spencer and Gillem give the portrait of an Australian whose retreating brow and strongly marked orbital ridges are clearly like those of the Neanderthals . . . **The projecting orbital ridges and the retreating brows of the Neanderthal-Spy group are extreme forms of variability in the white races of Homo sapiens, but ARE NO MARKS OF A SPECIAL RACE.**' " (Bishop, pp. 14, 43, 54, 266-7).

"Upon extending enquiries it was found that the **NEANDERTHAL TYPE OF SKULL** is one which still **HAS REPRESENTATIVES IN ALL NATIONS**" (Dr. G. F. Wright's "Man and the Glacial Period," p. 276).

Luther Burbank said that the skull of Mr. Bryan "visibly approached the Neanderthal type" (Kansas City Times, 12-22-24). Not a bad type of skull to be descended from, is it? Doesn't it disgust you to think you were ever impressed with what "Museums," "Science," "Newspapers," "Scholars" and Modernist preachers have had to say about the Neanderthal missing link? Men of this type have lived through the years side by side with other variant types.

The Neanderthal man was simply man, and is, therefore, automatically eliminated as proof of the evolution of man from beast.

Strata do not establish Age of Fossils: Sir Henry H. Howorth says: "Geology has not made a single advance movement in its theoretical aspects . . . for over seventy-five years." Other scientists confirm this.

Large sized, well preserved fossils are found in stratum. Perhaps this stratum though many feet thick was formed quick, before the bones had a normal chance to decay. No one knows how or when the strata were formed, nor that conditions were the same then as now. There is evidence

that they were not. No one can prove that any of the "stratum" is 100,000 years old, and therefore it's impossible to tell the age of fossils by the stratum in which they are found. No one can prove that any stratum was even 10,000 years in forming. This hypothesis of great age for fossil strata is guess work. **We simply don't know.** Scripture states that God reconstructed the earth and fit it as a home for man. (Gen. 1:3-2:4). No one knows the method used, nor how rapid its process, and God does not say. Scripture is silent on the subject of the age of the strata. See pp. 137-139, 148-149, 153, 165.

"A fossil is not necessarily old because it is found in Cambrian or Jurassic, or Cretaceous beds" (Prof. Geo. McCready Price in "Sunday School Times," 6-14-24, p. 372).

"It will be understood that the discovery of a fairly complete skeleton in a gravel bed is in the majority of instances suggestive of an interment subsequent to, perhaps later by many millennia than, the deposition of the material in which the bones were found" (Int. Encyc., Vol. 14, p. 749).

On pages 163-65, proof is presented that strata formerly regarded as "old" are now found on top of "young" strata. So one stratum is not necessarily older than the other.

"Every few years fossils of some type of animals are discovered at an horizon **far lower** than the lowest at which they had been previously found to exist" (Zoology, p. 64, Prof. MacBride).

"A fossil found in the Jurassic is not necessarily any older than another fossil found in the Cretaceous or the Tertiary" (Prof. G. McCready Price, in S. S. Times, June 28th, 1924).

The fossils **are not found** in strata in the blend or gradation set forth and required by the evolutionary hypothesis.

"**In no place on earth** do we find anything like this whole geological series together. Seldom do we find more than two or three systems together in any one locality and usually only parts of one or two systems" (Prof. Geo. McCready Price).

Since fossils are not found in nature in a gradual blend, therefore, the deductions of evolutionists are absolutely unwarranted.

"No traces of the long lost link of man's ancestors . . . have yet been discovered" (Dr. Wallace remarks on the "Geological Antiquity of Man," in Darwinism, p. 456).

"Neither the supposed ancestral apes, nor the hundred hybrid forms which the theory surely requires, have left the least trace of their existence amongst the fossils" (T. B. Bishop, p. 274).

Dr. J. G. Wolf found a fossil in Patagonia in the Tertiary formation. He said: "The fossilized skull is, of course, that of a man who lived some millions of years ago." Dr. Franz Boas, anthropologist of Columbia University, in connection with Dr. Wolf's find said that the Java man-ape was half a million years old, and that the Cro-Magnon man was "about 100,000 years old" (Associated Press, about 1924).

Between Garden City and the neighboring town of Dodge City, Kansas, the Tertiary formations are exposed and the old Santa Fe trail runs right through this formation. Years ago the pioneers undoubtedly camped on this formation. If a man had died and they had buried him there, he would have been in the Tertiary formation. Then all we would have needed to produce a man "some millions" of years old from the Tertiary formation, would have been to get Dr. Wolf to come along and dig him up in less than a century afterward. Slides, caves or tunnels closing in on inmates, fissures, earthquakes, depositions from inundations, etc., have undoubtedly resulted in human remains being inclosed in

strata of the so-called older type. Therefore, when fossils are found in a stratum it is not certain evidence that death occurred at the time the stratum was formed. At different places over the earth, the so-called older strata are exposed, thus facilitating recent or accidental fossil enclosures in same. There are only a thimbleful of fossil specimens that are now offered as evidence of the evolution of man. They have been found on or near the surface. This, of itself, discredits deductions of hundreds of thousands of years of age for these fossils. See the "Colorado Specimen," p. 227, and you will see how easy it is for some "Doctors" to find a dozen years old monkey and "doctor" it up and proclaim it to all the world as a million and a half years old missing link. And this is evidence of "scientific training" that is supposed to be the ear mark of great wisdom?

See the history of the "Java Skeleton," p. 228, and "Cro-Magnon Man," p. 229. In the case of "Java Skeleton," we see that it is worthless as proof of the evolution of man. Also see pp. 246-8. No facts exist that justify the statement that it is half a million years old. No man-ape ever existed. The "Java man-ape" is a humbug. Types like the Neanderthal and Cro-Magnon specimens exist today. Finding a similar fossil-man would be as apt to indicate its age was recent as remote, wouldn't it? It certainly does not prove that he is a hundred thousand or million years old. Man is not of great age, and his advent is recent. See pages 222-5. Historical facts, and Revelation prove this. Turn the pages of history back a few thousand years and they are silent. **This silence is eloquent testimony to the absence of man.**

"Hitherto no very ancient human remains have ever been found in the New World. All previous discoveries found on this side of the Atlantic have, one after another, been proved to be merely the remains of Indians of no very great antiquity, or of races immediately preceding those we call the Indians. Even in the Old World, the much-discussed human remains such as the Neanderthal skull, the Heidelberg jaw, the Piltdown skull, and the magnificent skeletons classed together under the general name of the Cro-Magnon race, **cannot justly be regarded as of very great antiquity.** . . . I have rather reluctantly come to the conclusion that **none of these specimens really represent men who lived before the Deluge**" (Prof. Geo. McCready Price in "The Sunday School Times," June 28th, 1924).

The next article you see by Dr. So-and-So, of So-and-So University, about a fossil-man, a million or a hundred thousand years old, should be cut out and filed away under the heading, "Evolution Humbugology." See "Age of Man," p. 243 and Vol. 2 of this work.

Inferior Specimens No Proof of Antiquity: "Nothing has ever been found in fossil fields to compare with the human shapes of the Pentecost Islands, or the beastly peoples of the Gilbert River, in Australia. The skulls presented by evolutionists are respectable compared to the abortions of the Arunta tribe; and the heads of the Workii people in Australia are ten degrees nearer the ape than anything exhibited by materialists. Those people have the coveted arches above the eyes, so much prized by evolutionists, and all other marks of degeneracy. The Piltdown man is a Beau Brummell compared to the Tasmanians or the Batta tribes. And what shall be said of the Hairy family of Mandalay, Shwe Maong and Andrian, or the terrible brute shapes of the Vedda people of India? Why do not evolutionists present these skulls and forms to prove their theory? Why? The reason is ready—to do so would be to prove degeneracy in nature, rather than Evolution, for these people

are classed as real humans, and listed as the finished product of Evolution" (Guy Fitch Phelps' "Absurdities of Evolution," p. 112).

Man is a sinner. The further away from God and the deeper down in sin he has gone, the more his degradation. In Scripture, at the time of the Flood, Noah **alone** found "grace in the eyes of the Lord." "And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually." "The earth . . . was corrupt before God and the earth was filled with violence" (Gen. 6:8, 5, 11). At this period of history, some men must have reached a depth of degeneration and bestiality that was lower than anything on earth today. If the fossils of these men could be found, they should be more bestial than anything yet found, and it would confirm the Scripture's record that "the earth" at that ancient time was "corrupt before God." Since they were destroyed by a flood, they might be found in groups, even huddled in caves with animals, endeavoring in common danger, to escape the engulfing waters. Or while the convulsions of the earth were producing the flood ("all the fountains of the great deep" were "broken up." Gen. 7:11), their bodies could have been washed into deep fissures or crevices which could close and cover them. Centuries later we may find these bestial type fossils embedded in the so called older strata, and thus have another record from the past confirming the Scripture's account of the flood and the earth's corruption before God.

A thousand years before the flood, and before its depth of sin, there should have been some noble types of men of fine proportions and sizes. If we could find their fossils, we could expect at least some of them to be of this high type.

For several thousand years since the flood, bestial types have been present along with the better types. Contrast Abraham and David with the Canaanites, Hittites, etc., whom Scripture represents as "full of iniquity" and whose faces are represented on the monuments by some decidedly bestial types. That there has been variation in man, is certain. The degraded Bushman, the Negro, the Caucasian—speak of man's variation. Man's variation has been between the highest and the lowest types. Interbreed them and their offspring is not sterile. This shows they are of the same species. See p. 196. **This is not evolution of species.** To use an argument based on variation of the species, man, to fight the battles of evolution as against the Bible's revelation of creation, is like using a rotten straw to knock over the rock of Gibraltar.

"Professor Virchow . . . in his address at the International Congress of Prehistoric Archaeology and Anthropology at Moscow in 1892 (which appeared in the Popular Science Monthly for January, 1893), declared that '**all men having a simian appearance are simply pathological variants,**' and this was several years after he had examined the Neanderthal man and the Spy skeletons. . . . The Encyclopedia Britannica says: (of Virchow) 'He may, in fact, be called the father of modern pathology'" (Bishop, pp. 56-7).

Under the heading, "Little Change in Man in Twenty-Five Thousand Years," the Kansas City Star of May 31, 1924, states: "Prof. William Fielding Ogburn of the department of sociology, Columbia University, . . . says: 'It is doubtful whether natural or biological man is fundamentally different from the Cro-Magnon man or cave man. . . . The evidence of biological measurements, since the last ice age, is certainly very slight, **if existing at all.**'"

No man ever lived 25,000 years ago and no one can prove that any man ever did. Guesses about the age of strata will not permit one to enter court to testify. See "Age of Man" in Vol. 1 and 2 of this work. Since man's anatomical changes for millenniums have been "very slight if . . . at all," it disproves the hypothesis of evolution and confirms the Scripture which "cannot be broken." Man has never been anything less than man. God created your sons and daughters for a higher destiny than the beasts of the field.

Dirth of Bones Affords Scant Evidence: Evolutionists have cited the Neanderthal man and Cro-Magnon men as proofs of man's descent from animals. It is now conceded that they were men, whose types live today. See pp. 229-231. **Since they were men, they and their fossil remains are therefore, automatically eliminated as proof of the evolution of man from beast.**

"Nothing so suggestive of the immediate evolution of man has yet been found to compare with the Trinil (Java Skeleton) and Mauer (Heidelberg man) fossils" (Int. Encyc., Vol. 14, p. 752). So the case of evolution has its most solid foundation resting on these two specimens. In the latter, there is a "single jaw bone" as evidence; in the former there is a **roof** of a skull, two teeth and a thigh bone. The "Scholars" and "Scientists" have their case resting on a thimbleful of bones. On p. 227 attention has been called to the unreliability at any time, of this kind of evidence. The Mauer jaw of the Heidelberg man belongs to a real man, whose counterpart is found today in living man. See p. 229. This automatically eliminates the famous Heidelberg man as proof of man's evolution from beast. Our thimble is not so full of evidence. We now have the Java fragments of bone **found at different times**, covering a period of over a year and **at some distance apart**. Wasmann declared this evidence so dubious that it is "nothing short of an outrage" to offer it as proof of "the descent of man from beast."

Kohlbrugge in referring to the uncertain data of the Java bones and the only legitimate deductions that could be drawn therefrom said it was an "hypothetical pyramid . . . with its basis in the air," ready to topple over when touched by a wind.

We have called attention to the observations on the Java skeleton made by Professor D. C. Cunningham of Dublin, one of the highest authorities in Great Britain, on questions of comparative anatomy. He said the bones did not belong to the same animal—part belonged to a baboon or monkey, the rest human. We have further called attention (p. 229) to the fact that the Java evidence is of such an uncertain and unreliable character as would prohibit its introduction in court as testimony. Therefore, it automatically eliminates itself as evidence to establish man's evolution from beast.

There is no justification for referring to the Java skeleton as an "ape-man." No ape-man ever existed. How do you know? God says He made the animals each "after its kind." Millions of living men and thousands of living "apes" confirm the Word of God. A man is always a man; an ape, an ape. Nature everywhere confirms this. The Java "ape-man" is an evolution humbug and not entitled to any consideration as a proof of evolution of man from beast.

Evolution is mighty sick when it is so hard pressed for missing link evidence that it will cling to a single rotten straw of this kind. And yet evolution admits that there is "nothing so suggestive" as proof of evolution as the Java skeleton and Heidelberg man. **And when evolution makes this confession it admits it is an impostor and a humbug.**

'Yet, "scientifically trained" evolution for half a century has been in quest of a missing link that never existed—a "phantom" as Dr. Virchow called it. "The wisdom of this world is foolishness with God" (1 Cor. 3:19). "Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools." "From the beginning of the creation God made them male and female" (Mk. 10:6). "God created man in His own image." Who says so? God says so! (Gen. 1:26-7). It's time mankind was sitting up and taking note of the fact that the Bible is "the Word of God."

Brain Capacity Inferior in Degraded and Diseased Types: "Cope says: 'The cranial capacity . . . of the man of Java is 1,000, and that of the lowest normal man 1,500 cubic centimetres. This last statement, with regard to the least capacity of the normal skull of man, is not correct, as the author himself shows on the same page.' . . . Virchow has pointed out that some of the Nigritos possess a remarkably small cranial capacity, as little as 950 cubic centimetres, and an inhabitant of New Britain only 860 cubic centimetres" (Fairhurst's "Organic Evolution Considered," pp. 367-8).

There are idiots who have a brain capacity of less than 900 centimetres. The missing-linkers should be able to find an ancient idiot. A small brain case does not prove that the specimen is a "missing link." "The head-hunters of the headwaters of the Amazon . . . through a peculiar operation not clearly understood by scientists, shrink the head from normal to the size of an orange or a doll's head."

"Eoliths," "reconstructions," "illustrations," etc. have been forged by some "scholars." Why not forge a brain case? A man who will lie about the Word of God, concerning creation will lie about brain cases, if he thinks the case of evolution demands it.

Reconstruction of Fossil Fragments, Unreliable: The "Dawn" or Piltdown man: "The reconstructionists have deliberately practiced fraud in working out human shapes and heads. . . . They fastened on the jaw of a chimpanzee, getting a fang tooth in the wrong place through their ignorance. The shape set forth has no more place in actual fact than a ghost story, and those on the inside know it. Some evolutionists have exposed this fraud, yet this hideous hypocrisy, consummated in the name of science, appears in the 'Hall of the Age of Man' in New York and in the Field Museum in Chicago as if it were a true reproduction" (Guy Fitch Phelps' "The Absurdities of Evolution," pp. 20-1).

Professor R. I. Pocock, in *Conquest*, London, Jan., 1922, says, "Some of the ablest American osteologists claim that the Piltdown-man was reconstructed from the skull-top of a man and the lower jaw of a chimpanzee."

Pseudo-scientists claim they are "persecuted" by religion. Why not lose confidence in them? Christianity doesn't care to be robbed of the Bible and Christ by deluded devil-lootionists. We have seen pp. 226-227, "The Piltdown fragments . . . do not differ essentially from **modern human skeletons**" (Int. Encyc.). Yet this Museum of New York and other museums have constructed a bestial monstrosity and palmed it off on the public as, "the Dawn" or Piltdown-man. Big business isn't it? No wonder the common people are disgusted. Isn't this Piltdown "reconstruction" a fraud and evolution humbug, perpetrated and executed by devil-lootionists? "When . . . Dr. Smith Woodward . . . came to replace the missing parts (in the Piltdown skull) of the jaws, the incisor and canine teeth, he followed simian rather than human lines . . . an approach to symmetry and a correct adjustment of parts came **only after many experimental reconstructions**" (Bishop, p. 23).

"Professor Keith says: . . . 'I was all along alive to the fact that we have as yet **no means of drawing any accurate conclusion** as to the shape of forehead from **so small a fragment** of it as was found by Dr. Dawson at **Pitldown**' . . . In skull reconstruction, . . . nothing is truer than that one mistake leads to another and the effect is cumulative. . . .

"Dr. Duckworth says: 'The reconstruction of the facial parts of the Neanderthal skull, as prepared by Professor Klaatsch, is shown to be **much** exaggerated' (Prehistoric Man, p. 36). . . .

"It becomes a very serious question, . . . how far it is possible to rely on arguments as to the early history of man drawn from these 'reconstructed' skulls. . . .

(Some evolution reconstructionists are like crooked lawyers. They **make** it appear like they **want** it to look.)

"In the case of most of the other Neanderthal specimens there were serious difficulties attending the 'reconstruction' of the remains"—Prof. Obermaier. . . .

"Professor Osborn says in his preface to *Men of the Old Stone Age*: . . . 'The representations which have been made, chiefly by French and German artists, of men with strong gorilla or chimpanzee characteristics are, I believe, unwarranted by the anatomical remains' (T. B. Bishop's 'Evolution Criticised,' pp. 23-7-8-9, 59-265-6).

The devil-lootionists reconstruct the human race thru falsehood and fraud. "Future discoveries . . . may . . . prove that *Homo sapiens* . . . arose suddenly as a mutation from some quite lowly form" (Int. Encyc. Vol. 14, pp. 753-4). "A human skull . . . has been found in Broke Hill, Rhodesia . . . says Prof. Sir Arthur Keith. . . . The skull is the oldest human relic ever discovered. . . . Bones found in the same cave indicated **the world's most ancient man walked upright** while the **structure of the cranium** shows a **mental type considerably higher** than the lowest form of human life existing today. This discovery . . . throws a new and strong light on man's earliest history" (The Kansas City Star, 1-22-25).

Dr. T. B. Bishop of the Victoria Institute said that he thought the fine Cro-Magnon specimens might be the oldest fossils we have of man, pp. 229.

"In the beginning . . . God created man in His own image" (Gen. 1:1, 27). The sudden "mutation" (referred to by the Int. Encyc. p. 235), was from "the dust of the ground" and due to the touch of God and His breathing "into his (man's) nostrils the breath of life" (Gen. 2:7). "With God all things are possible." Evolution's version is "with one cell all things are possible." Instead of this superior fossil-man (p. 237) throwing "A new light . . . on man's earliest history" it simply confirms the old light of the Word of God. Original man was a masterpiece. He sinned, degenerated and the low types resulted. Evolution has perverted the truth and destroys faith in "the Word of God" concerning creation and redemption.

Before me lies a clipping from a Kansas City Star publication. (One of the best papers published in this or any other country, yet like man, it has its imperfections.) There are three pictures. The first is labeled "Ape Man of Java," the second "The Neanderthal Man" and the third "Cro-Magnon Man." They are "reconstructions" which the fossils do not justify. See p. 236. Underneath is written, "From ape to man, the chain as it appears to evolutionists." The ape-man is a monstrous looking beast, the second less so, the third pictures a strong massive, yet animal type of man. If this pictures truth, then the Bible is false and man needs

no redemption. What he needs is evolution by "erratic force" or "spontaneous generation." Man is fallen, degenerated and needs a Saviour, whom God has graciously provided in Christ Jesus, "Who came to die;" "Who died to save;" "Who lives to keep;" "Who comes to reign."

Let us reconstruct this story of the race as God has recorded it. You will then start with a man higher than any living type. When man fell, lower types developed; some slowly, some rapidly. High and low types have persisted thru the centuries. Take the man "in God's image," number it "one" and you have "primitive man" of Scripture; take the Neanderthal type, number it "two" and you have a type of fallen man centuries ago; take a living specimen of the terrible brute shape of "the Workii people" of Australia, number it "three" and you have a specimen of the depths to which the species, man, can degenerate as a result of the devil-loom of the race. A human race that has within its folds multitudes of the lower type, has not done any too much evolving. Underneath, we will write, "From man to bestial degradation, as it appears from God's revelation and nature's confirmation." Now take this lower type—turn him over to the Lord Jesus Christ in regeneration and God can and will make him a "new creature in Christ Jesus." See the result of John G. Paton's missionary work among the cannibals of the New Hebrides.

"Dr. Bruner Bey says: 'These most ancient skulls surpass in size the average European skulls' "(Quoted by Phelps in "Absurdities of Evolution," p. 114). Now let's "reconstruct" again and put the Cro-Magnon **first**, the Neanderthal **second** and the Heidelberg man **third** and reverse the order of evolution and you come somewhere near having the truth about the devil-loom of man. Go back thru the centuries, hunt the "missing link" that will link present degenerate man back up with the man made in God's image, and you will find Him about 1900 years ago, as the God-man, the Lord Jesus Christ "Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution (reconstruction) of all things" (Acts 3:21).

Let's reconstruct again. From pages 229-232, we see that **there exist today, living types who are duplicates of the Heidelberg, Neanderthal and the Cro-Magnon men.** This demonstrates that none of these are in any sense "missing links." **They are variations of the species, man.** There is no justification in the existing facts for assigning great age to any one of the three types. The evidence indicates the Cro-Magnon specimen to be **older** than either the Heidelberg or Neanderthal specimens. So the fallacy of the arrangements and deductions made about these types by evolutionists are disgusting. Yet museums, magazines, newspapers, periodicals and text-books consciously or unconsciously are broadcasting this brand of humbug over the land. It gets into the homes before the developing minds of the boys and girls. It results in skepticism about God, the Bible and Jesus Christ and is undermining and destroying Christianity, law and government. Christianity of Scripture and Christianity of Modernism are two vastly different things. Modernism has trampled under foot the Scripture, departed from the gospel, and is undermining the government.

"Now I beseech you, brethren, by the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, that ye all speak the same thing, and **that there be no divisions among you**; but that ye be perfectly joined together in the same mind and in the same judgment" (1 Cor. 1:10).

"The Missing Link" Horse Humbug: The evolutionist says, "Deposits of fossils in America tell the complete story of the horse's evolution" (sounds like "bunc" right from the start, doesn't it?). . . .

His toes were five, his teeth were far different." Any school teacher or farmer boy could tell you this "buncedooleology" about the evolution of the horse from a little hunch-backed, five-toed animal would make a "horse laugh." "Nothing is known of Merychippus but the teeth," yet, this unknown quantity has been regarded as one of the chief "missing links" of the horse. It's easy to schematize **pictures** of the evolution of the horse. Haeckel has said: "The great majority of all morphological, anatomical and histological . . . diagrams . . . **are not true to nature.**"

No horse ever had a lineal ancestor with five toes. How do you know? God says He made them each "after their kind." And all nature echoes back, "Amen." See p. 192-196.

See pp. 240-241. Prof. Winchell, Prof. Conn and Sir J. W. Dawson state that **not a single instance of the change evolution asserts, has ever been known.** The world has been ransacked for a case of one species evolving into another species and **it has never been discovered. Since no species has ever evolved into another species, therefore the horse is not the product of the evolution of species.** Yet, evolution goes on deceiving the public with schematized charts of the evolution of the horse.

Messrs. Thompson and Geddes say in their "Evolution," "We are not even now able to state the lineage of the modern horse" (p. 23). Then they quote Deperet, who says: "**The supposed pedigree of the (horse) is a deceitful delusion**" (Quoted by Bishop). And the links are missing still. Yet, poor phantom-hunting deluded evolutionists are still trying to dupe the common people.

Mr. John T. Reid, mining engineer and practical geologist, found a fossil—a one-toed horse's foot of "draft-horse" size, in the Cretaceous formation of Nevada, which according to theory would make this "find" located in strata considerably older than the strata in which the three, four and five-toed animals were found, which evolution has regarded as the ancestors of the modern horse. Thus fossils disclose that **the horse is older** according to theory, **than its supposed most ancient ancestors.** Disgusting! And so another bubble has blown up for Evolution. Mr. Reid says: "**Although I was an evolutionist in the beginning, I have changed my mind.**" Countless thousands will do the same when they see how they have been imposed upon by pseudo-science, as she has endeavored to account for life and its origin apart from God in creation. Let the public eliminate this class from that fine body of scholarly men, who, seeking truth and sticking to the truth, have achieved a multitude of results, blessing the race. No man with "horse-sense" and no sound Christian has any warfare against Science, that is entitled to the name of Science. Pseudo-Science has a warfare against the truths of God in creation and in redemption and is seeking to betray Christianity, as Judas betrayed the Lord.

O, WHERE ARE THE MISSING LINKS?

The swan song of degenerate, dying evolution: "The proof of man's origin from some other primate is now past dispute. In fact, no scientist now doubts man's descent, less directly from all lower forms of life, and more immediately from a common ancestor with the anthropoid apes. . . . The discovery of the skull cap, femur, and molar teeth of the Javan so-called 'missing link' . . . affords satisfactory evidence of the descent of man from some gibbon-like ape" (Int. Encyc., Vol. 8, p. 231). It doesn't require creditable evidence to satisfy the "humbugologist." The above statements or similar ones are frequently made by evolution.

Don't the facts disclose that they evidence a perverted mind, which refuses to see or acknowledge truth?

Fossils testify, the missing links of animals are not here: "Not a single new species is known to have come into existence during the whole of the Pleistocene period" (Dr. Wallace's "World of Life," p. 257). (Quoted by Bishop, p. 178). Some say this strata was "millions of years" in forming. What! **"Not a single new species"** by evolution thru millions of years? That is what the rocks testify and you can't bribe them. **Then there has been no evolution.**

"For every single species that has been preserved for us in the rocks there are probably hundreds, perhaps thousands, of extinct species that have left no trace behind them" (Haeckel's "Our Protist Ancestors," Chap. 19). No wonder evolution worries about the "missing links." The theory requires "perhaps thousands" of them. Yet the rocks record **"no trace"** of them. "Darwin shows that, if the evolution theory is true, the number of intermediate varieties which have formerly existed must be truly enormous. 'Why, then,' he asks, 'is not every geological formation full of such intermediate links? **Geology does not reveal any such finely-graduated organic chain**'" (Quoted by Bishop in "E.C.," pp. 109-10).

The great Swiss geologist, Joachim Barrande states, "One cannot conceive why in all rocks whatever and in all countries upon the two Continents, all relics of the intervening types should have vanished."

Why are the "missing links" missing? God prohibited "intervening types," by the natural law of each "after its kind." **They are not in the rocks, because they never existed.** The created rocks confirm the Word of their Creator. The Bible is "the Word of God" and it's time men were accepting it as such.

Natural world testifies, missing links of animals are not here: De Vries' primrose, the Porto Santo rabbits, the Ancon sheep, etc. have been offered by Evolutionists as evidence of missing links. See the subject "Variation of Species," pp. 190, 195. The De Vries' rose was always a rose, the rabbits, rabbits, etc. There never was any new species from them. Therefore, neither they nor their offspring are missing links. As a juror in court, you are obliged to render your verdict in favor of the "preponderating" evidence. Hundreds of thousands of unquestioned cases of fixed species in nature as against a half dozen cases of variations like the De Vries' primrose, obligate you to render the verdict, "there is no evolution of species in the natural world."

A single cod fish can lay eight to nine million eggs—yet nothing but cods are ever reproduced. Millions of chances for evolution ("erratic force") to get in her work, yet God has prohibited it by making them each "after their kind."

"Why, if species have descended from other species by fine gradations, do we not everywhere see innumerable transitional forms?" (Darwin's "Origin of Species," p. 124). Darwin admits the transitional forms required by his theory are not in the natural world. Why? God prohibited them by the natural law, each "after its kind."

Prof. Winchell says: "We are ignorant of a single instance of the derivation of one good species from another. The world has been ransacked for an example, **(it) has not been discovered.**"

Prof. Conn, in one of the most recent works on Evolution says: "It is true enough that naturalists have been unable to find a single unquestioned instance of a new species. Museums are full of specimens . . .

yet not a single instance of the change evolution asserts has ever been known" (Alex. Patterson).

"But up to this hour, in spite of all efforts that have been made and all claims that have been advanced, there is not on record a single instance of any member of any species changing into, and becoming a member of another species" (The Word and Way, 1-8-25).

"No case is certainly known in human experience where any species of animal or plant has been so changed as to assume all the characters of a new species" (Sir J. W. Dawson's "Origin of the World," p. 227).

The natural world confirms the written Word of its Creator, each "after its kind." **The links are not here; never were and never will be.**

Fossils testify, "missing links" of man are not here: Sir Charles Lyell, in "The Antiquity of Man," says: "It is naturally a matter of no small surprise that . . . **not a single human bone** has yet been met with in the old alluvial sand and gravel of the Somme."

Dr. Wallace speaks of the "complete absence of human or pre-human remains in all those deposits which have furnished . . . the remains of other land animals" ("Darwinism," p. 458).

"Professor W. Branca says: 'Palaeontology (the rock strata) . . . **knows no ancestors of man.**'"

"Neither the supposed ancestral apes, nor the hundred hybrid forms which the theory surely requires, **have left the least trace of their existence amongst the fossils**" (T. B. Bishop, Member of the Council of the Victoria Institute).

The rocks thru the ages, confirm the Word of the Rock of Ages. "From the beginning of the creation God made them male and female" (Mk. 10:6).

Dr. Bishop says: "We must clearly understand that the 'missing link' theory is now entirely given up" ("Evolution Criticised," p. 261). But the Doctor over-looked the obsessed "phantom" fiends. A recent paper ran this head-line: "Hot In Quest Of The Missing Link," and a noted (?) scientist was named. But why be so hot in quest of the missing link? Hasn't pseudo-science been citing us for fifty years to so-called instances of missing links? Are not museums full of disgusting schematized monstrous exhibits of missing links? Don't they point the public to them and say, "here is your relative as shown by the 'blood test?'" Some men rebel when accused of having a trace of negro blood. Why not rebel when accused of having monkey blood? No wonder the people of Tennessee resent the accusation made by "scholars" that they are related by blood to the monkeys. It is a wonder that at least every southern gentleman with rich red blood in his veins does not arise in righteous indignation and crush evolution and crowd her devotees out of their schools, colleges and seminaries.

The great Virchow said: "**There exists no . . . man-monkey, and the connecting link remains a phantom.**" The phantom fiends can't find the phantom horse links, the phantom animal links nor the phantom human links. They are missing still. **Almighty God prohibited "missing links" by the law of each "after its kind."** And it's time men were recognizing this fact and accepting God's Word on this subject. All any man knows about the origin of life is by revelation.

Natural world testifies the "missing links" of man are not here: See pp. 222, 236. Professor Dwight, formerly with Harvard Medical School says: "It is not proved that man came from the lower animals."

"If there was a common ancestor of all the present ape-world and man, why have we the four kinds of anthropoid apes, and the many kinds of monkeys, all living in the world at present, and why have all the representatives of the 'humanoid' stem, as it is called, in its different stages, **disappeared entirely?**" (T. B. Bishop, Member of the Council of Victoria Institute in "E.C.," p. 112).

DR. WILLIAM HANNA THOMSON, former president of the New York Academy of Medicine says: "The Darwinian theory is now rejected by the majority of biologists. . . . Evolution never was a cause of anything. . . . **It is absurd to rank man among the animals.**"

There are no transitional forms. Therefore, there has been no evolution of species.

Evolution's Strongest Evidence: "One of the highest scientific authorities in America, Prof. Thomas Hunt Morgan, of Columbia University . . . said, 'The direct evidence furnished by fossil remains is by all odds the strongest evidence that we have in favor of organic evolution'" (Quoted by Price in "Q.E.D.," p. 100). But Haeckel says: "The first of our documents, palaentology (fossils), is exceedingly incomplete." Yet, hasn't a good-natured, long-suffering public allowed themselves to be duped and gulled thru the years with "exceedingly incomplete" proof of evolution? The natural world testifies that their hypothesis is a hopeless "humbug."

PROF. SAMUEL J. HOLMES of the University of California has well said, "the evolution theory" is "bankrupt" (Science, 9-3-15).

SIR RODERICK MURCHISON said, "I know as much of nature in her geologic ages as any living man, and I fearlessly say that **our geologic record does not afford one syllable of evidence** in support of Darwin's theory."

DR. ETHERIDGE, of British Museum, famous expert in fossilology, says, "In all this great museum there is not a particle of evidence of transmutation of species. This museum is full of proofs of the **utter falsity** of these views."

Evolution's "strongest evidence" is "exceedingly incomplete" and the "geologic records" do "not afford one syllable of evidence" to support it, and it is "utterly false."

The efforts that pseudo-science has made for half a century to bribe the cold, helpless, inanimate rocks into betraying their Creator and testifying that man is a product of evolution from the beast by "spontaneous generation," instead of the masterpiece of God in creation, would make an ordinary Judas Iscariot blush with shame. The fossil rocks, the natural world and the Word of God, all testify that God has prohibited "intervening species" or "missing links" by the natural law of reproduction; each "after its kind." Every country boy and county school teacher knows that this is so. The dead world, the living world and the living Word of God all testify that there are no "missing links" that linked the species. All nature echoes back, "Amen." "The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth his handywork. Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge" (Ps. 19:1-2). All nature glorifies its Creator and Redeemer, and confirms His precious Word. Evolution alone, is vile. It has denied what God has said in His Word about creation and robbed two generations of faith in the Bible, and its Redeemer, the Lord Jesus Christ. Countless thousands have gone to Christless graves and doomed eternity, yet the destroyer and murderer (Evolution) demands "let us alone." This arch-destroyer cries out to her enemies, "no scientific training," "ignoramus," "bigot," "persecutor," etc. What about your son? What about your daughter?

Has sin ceased to wreck and ruin human lives? Is there no judgment? No need of God and redemption? Life will soon be over. "Where" will they "spend eternity?" **"What shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God?"** (1 Pet. 4:17).

Do you want evolution to continue to destroy their "faith," ruin their lives and damn their souls, or are you going to crush this damnable destroyer of the gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ; this enemy of the Word of God; this destroyer of faith in the Word of God; this enemy of Christianity, of God and of government; this anti-Christ?

AGE OF MAN

"M. Lalande, a French astronomer, not being able to think of any way, scientifically for starting the human family reached the conclusion that man was not started at all and therefore is eternal. . . . Thomas S. Hunt, from biological and evolutionary points of view, advanced the opinion that man has been on earth not fewer than nine million years. . . . Professor Lyell argued that two hundred thousand years at least should be allowed for human life on earth" (Townsend). How much confidence can one have in such scientists?

"European savages entered the Early Stone Age over fifty thousand years ago" (Robinson and Breasted's "History of Europe").

"The latest geologists have established the fact that not more than twelve or fifteen thousand years, **as an outside limit**, can be allowed for the entire life on earth of any being that has worn a human form" (Prof. L. T. Townsend, D.D., S.T.D., M.V.I.).

Geology confirms the **sudden** appearance of man upon the earth. Chamberlin and Salisbury ("C. Geology," p. 35) refer to the advent of man in suggestive terms, calling it "the **invasion** of the human race." This admission of "invasion" harmonizes with the Bible's record that God created man quickly and in His image.

"Professor Pierre Broca, who made a very careful study of the celebrated '**Cro-Magnon skull**,' belonging to the earliest stone age, employs these words: 'The great volume of the brain, the development of the frontal region, the fine elliptical profile of the anterior portion of the skull are incontestable evidences of superiority and are characteristics that usually are found only in civilized nations.' Professor Huxley, describing one of the oldest existing fossil skulls, says, that 'so far as size and shape are concerned, it might have been the brain of a philosopher.' And what is true of the skull is equally true of other parts of the human body. A scientist, skilled in these subjects, who has examined statuettes recently discovered in Crete, employs these words: 'I spent a long time studying the muscles and veins of the Cretan forearm of four thousand years ago, as shown in some of Dr. Evans' wonderful photographs. Their arrangement is identical to the smallest detail with that of the surface veins and muscles in the arm that writes these words. These statuettes constitute, in my opinion the oldest exact anatomical records in the world, and my study of them leads to the conclusion that in four thousand years there has been no change in even the minutest details of the forearm of man.' . . . And from biological and physiological points of view the human race not only has not gained a step since the dawn of history, **but on the whole, sometimes slowly, sometimes rapidly, has been deteriorating**" (Townsend).

"Max Mueller says, 'What do we know of savage tribes beyond the last chapter in their history? They may have passed through ever so many vicissitudes, and what we consider as primitive may be for all we

know a **relapse into savagery, or corruption** of what was something more rational and intelligible in former ages.' Where to-day is the Hindu race that could build the Taj Mahal? 'What Greek race to-day could reproduce the architecture or statuary of their ancestors? . . . 'The flower of Babylonian art is found at the beginning of Babylonian history' . . . **Prof. Frederick Starr** of the Anthropological department of Chicago University, **says that the American race is reverting to the Indian state.** He bases this on measurements of faces of 5,000 children. This is a dismal outlook. It is not what Evolution has promised us. The followers of Evolution have reason to be indignant at such a turn in its course" (Patterson).

"Virchow says: 'We must really acknowledge that there is a **complete absence** of any fossil type of a lower stage in the development of man. Nay, if we gather together all the fossil men hitherto found, and put them parallel with those of the present time, we can decidedly pronounce **THAT THERE ARE AMONG LIVING MEN** a much greater proportion of individuals who show a relatively inferior type, **than there are** among the fossils known up to this time' " (Mauro). These statements agree with the Bible's record of man's creation and fall and consequent degradation.

"The dynasties of Egypt were once cited against the Bible narrative, but these have been reduced to moderate figures. A thousand years was taken off by one discoverer recently from the age of the middle kingdom. There is a question whether the Egyptian dynasties were successive or in some cases contemporary. There is also the well-known fact that the Egyptians had years of varying length. They often counted dynasties by years of three months and also of a month! Dr. Flinders Petrie lately discovered in the tombs **of the kings, preceding the first dynasty** of Egypt at Abydos, Grecian pottery of Mycean clay, ("the second millennium, B.C."), and this in a tomb estimated to date from 5,400 B. C.! The same kind of estimating is now being done from the Assyrian tablets and their records. We must remember these old kings were great boasters and liars, too. We don't know the basis of their calculations. Perhaps Assyria also had three month years. . . . The ancient dates given in the inscriptions found in Nuffar recently, are already suspected by scholars. The date for the temple uncovered there was 3,200 B.C. This number is the product of forty multiplied by eighty; evidently a round number for eighty generations, and not at all a careful or exact chronological statement. . . . Prof. A. H. Sayce of Oxford, writes: '**The light that has come from the remnants of the past has been fatal to the pretenses of critical skepticism. The discoveries of Abydos have discredited its methods and results. They have shown that where they can be tested they prove to be ABSOLUTELY WORTHLESS.** It is only reasonable to conclude that methods and results, that thus break down under the test of monumental discovery, must equally break down in other departments of history where no such test can be applied. **It is not the discoveries of the higher critics, BUT THE OLD TRADITIONS** which have been confirmed by archaeological discovery.' This statement is made by one of the most able archaeologists and semitic scholars in the world. . . .

Dr. Friedrich Pfaff, professor of natural science in Erlangen, thus sums up the evidence from geology as to man: '(1) **THE AGE OF MAN IS SMALL, EXTENDING ONLY TO A FEW THOUSAND YEARS.** (2) **Man appeared suddenly:** the most ancient man known to us is not essentially different from the now living man. . . . The conclusion

we are led to is that the Scripture account of man, which is one and self-consistent, is true. . . . This account of man we accept by faith, because it is revealed by God, **is supported by adequate evidence** solves the otherwise insoluble problems, not only of science and history, but of inward experience, and meets our deepest need. . . . **The more it is sifted and examined the more well founded and irrefragable does it prove to be'**" (Patterson).

"Large areas in Europe and North America . . . were buried under glacial ice thousands of feet thick, while the civilization of Babylonia was in its heyday" (Dr. Wright's "Significance of the Glacial Epoch," p. 195).

"Mr. J. Y. Buchanan, F. R. S., says . . . 'the glaciers in the Chamonix district amounted then to fully one-eighth of the total amount of sinking since the last ice age. But the recent shrinkage of the glaciers has taken place in fifty years; therefore at the same rate the whole shrinkage from the extension of the glaciers in the ice age to their present state **may have taken place in 400 years.**' The reviewer of 'Comptes Rendus' says: 'This important conclusion gives us a weird feeling of intimacy with the ice age, all the more because we are accustomed to hear geologists talk of periods of time in big figures.' . . . 'The enormous diminution of the Rhine glacier in half a century' is also spoken of," (Bishop's "E. C.," p. 136).

"Inattention to the actual facts, and lack of true scientific imagination have conspired to **exaggerate beyond all reason** the length both of geological time in general, and of post-glacial time in particular during which man has been an inhabitant of the earth" (Dr. Wright's "Origin and Antiquity of Man," pp. 480-1).

"There is no evidence at all to prove that man is very ancient on this continent. All ascertained facts seem to point to the conclusion that no human being preceded the Indians in America. Where the Indian came from is uncertain, but their straight black hair, their peculiar physiognomy and other physical traits show that they are surely derived from the same ancestry as the Asiatic Mongols. **There is nothing whatever to show that man has been in America longer than four, or five thousand years at the utmost.**'

"Professor Edward Hall, late secretary of the Victoria Institute of London, a specialist on these matters, in an announcement, June, 1903, says: 'Not in one single case in the whole of Europe or America has a trace of man's existence been found **below** the only deposits which we have a right to assume were developed and produced by the great ice sheets of the early glacial periods.' The opinion is concurred in by Professors Haynes, LeConte, Boyde, C. H. Hawkins, Dr. Gandry, John Evans, W. H. Holmes, M. Favre and others, all being scientists of as high standing as any that can be mentioned. Granting, therefore, that man did not appear until after the climax of the ice age, a fact at present as well established as any other in geology, and following the lead of experts as to the date of that age, there can be fixed on scientific grounds pretty accurately the beginning of the human family.

"The late Professor G. Frederick Wright, who gave almost a lifetime to this and kindred subjects and who has the unchallenged reputation of having been one of the ablest glaciologists in this country, reached the conclusion that the ice age ended not earlier than from seven to ten thousand years ago. Prof. Joseph Prestwich collected much evidence during his lifetime, showing that the close of the glacial period falls within the limit of twelve thousand years. The opinion of M. Adhemar and Dr. James Croll is that it closed not earlier than eleven thousand years ago. Prof. R. D. Salisbury and Dr. Warren Upham, among the most recent of

American geologists, think that from seven to ten thousand years is a fair estimate. In a review article (1900) this last named scientist, speaking of the post-glacial era, makes this statement: 'From the studies of Niagara by Wright and myself, coinciding approximately with the estimate of Winchell and with a large number of estimates and computations collected by Hansom from many observers in America and Europe, it certainly seems well demonstrated that this period (post-glacial) is between seven and ten thousand years.' "

"The certainly known remains of man, . . . cannot be older, according to the best geological estimates, than from seven thousand to ten thousand years" (Sir J. W. Dawson's "The Meeting Place of Geology and History," p. 21).

"Dr. William Andrews is of the opinion that the ice age, though lingering still in Alaska, in Greenland and on the mountain plateau of Norway, was completed nearly as it now is 'not further away than from five to seven thousand five hundred years ago.' The words of Prof. Winchell are not only confirmatory, but graphic and suggestive: 'Man has no place till after the reign of ice. It has been imagined that the close of the reign of ice dates back perhaps a hundred thousand years. There is no evidence of this. The fact is that **we OURSELVES came upon the earth in time to witness the retreat of the glaciers.** They still linger in the valleys of the Alps and along the northern shores of Europe and Asia. The fact is, we are not so far out of the dust, chaos and barbarism of antiquity as we had supposed. **The very beginnings of our race are still almost in sight.** Geological events which, from the force of habit in considering them, we had imagined to be located far back in the history of things **are found to have transpired at our very doors**' " (Townsend).

Evidence indicates there was no man until about 6,000 to 7,000 years ago. History discloses that prior to 2,500 to 3,000 B. C., you are in the pre-historic period of man. **In between, would lie the time of man's advent or "invasion."** This corresponds with and confirms the Word of God. This subject matter is continued under the topics, "Age of Man," and "The Dispersion Of The Races," Vol. 2.

SUMMARY OF SOME OF EVOLUTION'S BULWARKS: "Men of science . . . are apt . . . to forget the **extreme** imperfections of what is known" (Huxley).

To be entitled to testify in court, one must "know" and then must have the "preponderance" of evidence to get a favorable decision. Can evolution qualify? If it doesn't, we are obliged to conclude it is because it can't.

"To the consistent evolutionist, God is a superfluity" (Dr. Howard A. Kelly of John Hopkins University).

Among other fundamentals, three things stand out, each being absolutely necessary, before the typical evolutionary hypothesis could even hope to "work." A primal life cell, "intervening types," and man, "millions of years" old. If any one of these fails, then the typical evolutionary hypothesis is utterly discredited.

"Millions of years" old man: Science is aware of the stability of species, (each "after its kind"). Evolution knows that if its hypothesis is to have any semblance of feasibility, it must retire from the evidence of all nature which contradicts it, to the land of fiction in the age of "millions of years" ago.

See pp. 163, 245-246, Dr. G. Frederick Wright, Mr. J. Y. Buchanan, F.R.S., Prof. Joseph Prestwich, Sir J. W. Dawson and others tell you, in sub-

stance, that the grossly exaggerated estimates of time for the geological and glacial periods and other events are not justified by existing facts.

See pp. 243-246, Chamberlin and Salisbury, Prof. L. T. Townsend, Alex. Patterson, Prof. A. H. Sayce, Dr. Friedrich Pfaff, Prof. Edward Hall, Professors Haynes, Le Conte, Boyd, C. H. Dawkins, Dr. Gandry, John Evans, W. H. Holmes, M. Favre, Dr. Wright, M. Adhemar, Dr. James Croll, Dr. Warren Upham, Sir J. W. Dawson, Dr. William Andrews and Prof. Winchell are the different authorities quoted for the various individual statements which follow: Combined, they tell you in substance that man's advent was "an invasion;" "since the glacial periods;" and about six to ten thousand years ago.

The historic period of man begins about 2500 to 3000 B.C. Therefore, the evidence confirms the Word of God. Both agree that man's advent was only a few thousand years ago. Therefore, man is not the product of animal evolution, thru millions of years. The "million years" hypothesis is therefore, discredited by facts, history and "the Word of God." The preponderance of evidence obliges an impartial juror to render a verdict against it.

"The upper Triassic fauna does not appear to have descended from the Permian. . . . Early geology held there was a **complete destruction of all living things on earth** at the close of the Paleozoic era" (Chamberlin and Salisbury's College Geology). "The crust of our earth appears to be a vast mound, which God has heaped over the remains of **many** creations" (Dr. G. H. Pember). On pp. 152-4, 161-3, evidence has been offered showing that Scripture indicates that during the earth's past ages, all living forms of life were destroyed and the present forms of life were a result of a later special Divine creation. This is confirmed by Agassiz who says, "I hold it to be demonstrated that the **totality** of organic life was renewed. . . . **I do not believe in the genetic descent of the living species from the different tertiary divisions . . . I hold (them) to be specifically different.**" Therefore, no man can prove that any living form of life on earth today had an ancestor living 25,000 years ago. **Therefore, no man can prove that any living form of life is 25,000 years old.** Therefore, the statements made by pseudoscience and scholarship that man is millions or even hundreds of thousands of years old is **absolutely without one solitary foundation of fact.**

Missing Links: See pp. 225-32, 239-43. The fossil rocks and the world of nature all about us testify that the "missing links" are a phantom. Nature everywhere is fixed by the law of species. Hundreds of thousands of species are constantly propagating by the billions, and the law is always each "after its kind." **Out of all these cases, not one known new species has ever developed.** The preponderance of known facts compels a juror to overwhelmingly reject the phantom hypothesis of "missing links." **They are not here.** God has prohibited them by the law of each "after its kind." The natural world of God confirms the written Word of God. They both testify that the doctrine of evolution of species is a putrid "humbug."

Science now accepts this proposition: "There is no life except from antecedent life." And nature and the Word of God are forcing them to accept this corollary, There is no life except from antecedent life **of the same 'kind.'**

Arthur Thompson, in "Science and Life," has this to say: "There is not a case known in which living organisms ever have arisen apart from **parent organisms of the same kind.**"

The deceiver's (Evolutionist's) first "sell:" A member of the British Association recently said, if embryonic life had been introduced into the chaos of this earth, as it is said to have been introduced, **it never could have survived.** "Embryonic life is never reproductive . . . and it's unpreservable" (A. C. Dixon's "Reconstruction," p. 21).

The typical evolutionary theory of life is founded on the proposition that all existing forms of life had their origin in a single life cell and postulates that there was no life before this primal cell. Science concedes and nature confirms that there is no life except from antecedent life. See pp. 189-90. **This primal life cell therefore never existed because there was no antecedent life from which it could obtain its life.** Since this primal cell never existed, therefore, the present forms of life never evolved from it and therefore the hypothesis of the evolution of species is a "humbug."

No "millions of years" old man. No "missing links." No primal life cell. It doesn't have a single crutch to prop it up. Evolution is dead. It should have been buried fifty years ago, and a half century of human life saved from unbelief and skepticism concerning the Word of God, and His revealed plans for redeeming the world.

Creation a necessity: The natural order of reproduction **does not result** in the formation of new species. See pp. 192-196. Therefore, the present species **necessarily** came into being thru an order **different** from that now existing. Life cannot come except from antecedent life. But God "hath life in Himself" (Jno. 5:26), and "in Him was life" (Jno. 1:4). **Therefore, original life forms necessarily came from God.**

"In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth" (Gen. 1:1). "All things were made by Him; and without Him was not any thing made that was made" (Jno. 1:3).

"A Universe without a creative mind is now considered scientifically impossible." This statement is the expression of the conviction of the "British Association of Science, 1907." This "creative mind" was necessarily either that of man or God. Man couldn't create a universe, therefore God did create the universe. When science admits the necessity of a "creative mind," **it admits that creation is a certainty.**

"Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created" (Rev. 4:11).

THE SITUATION

Pseudo-science is defeated in all her efforts to ignore God and explain and account for life apart from the Creator. It has been demonstrated that evolution is false and a "humbug." There is absolutely nothing left for man to lean or rest upon, except the solid Rock, the Word of God. For half a century, pseudo-science has made a vain quest for a "missing link" that never existed. For half a century, pseudo-science has been hunting in vain, for species that have been transmuted to higher species. For half a century, pseudo-science has been endeavoring to induce nature to testify that the Bible's account of creation is false. Pseudo-science has sent teeming thousands to Christless graves and doomed eternities. "Science" must reap what it has sown. "Not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble are called." Therefore, according to Scripture, hell will be well stocked with certain brands of scientists. This is not a trifling matter. **This is "the Word of God"** (1 Cor. 1:26). They will not mock God on the Judgment day.

There never has been a time when the believing child of God who has placed his case in the hands of the great Shepherd of the sheep, the master "Advocate" of all the ages, who never lost a case—could so certainly and firmly place his feet on the Word of God and rest with assurance and confidence on the fact that it is the "Word of God" which shall "stand forever." We rest in Him and on the promises of Him, who made all things and who guarantees us that if we come to Him, He will "in no wise cast (us) out" (Jno. 1:3; 6:37).

God's Word to forsake is a terrible mistake,
While life's journey we take, let us never forsake,
Its blessed old pages, which reveal to sages
Redemption's stages of the Rock of the ages.

Forever and forever
"The Word of our God shall stand."
Forever and forever
"The Word of our God shall stand."

We'll stand by its pages thruout all the ages
Until all nations hear thruout every known land,
The blessed old story of Christ, grace, and glory;
By His grace we shall stand against every hand.

DESTRUCTIVE RESULTS OF EVOLUTION

"It is easy to impose upon the majority of people by an appeal to 'Science' as an authority. Thus, we often hear it said, 'Science has discovered this,' or 'Science tells us that,' as if the matter were thereby conclusively settled. But it would be well to ask, who is 'Science'? and where does he live? And how comes he to know these things? The fact is there is no 'Science' in this sense. It is true that a few capable men have attempted to explore the field of Nature in various directions, and have ascertained a fact or two, to which they have added a thousand guesses. But they have left a million questions unanswered, without which no safe conclusions can be drawn. It is the commonest thing for 'Science' to contradict one day what it most positively asserted the day previous; so that, in view of the existing state of **complete** scientific **ignorance** on the subject of origins, it would be **absurd** to **accept** as **true** any **statement** on that subject in the name of 'Science.' A few years ago Mr. Thomas A. Edison, commenting upon the boasted progress of Science, said that if the same rate of progress were maintained for the next two thousand years, mankind might then be in a position to **begin** to draw conclusions" (Mauro).

There is no line of human industry that has done more to discredit God, the Bible and a righteous government in the home, in the state and in the nation, than that class of scientists who deny God's account of the creation of the heavens and the earth, and of life and man's consequent sin, apostasy and need of redemption. Without God, without law and without accountability, the human heart, naturally prone to sin, finds no restraining hand but that of "society" and that is ignored at will.

Science is fact. A fact about God and redemption is as scientific as any other fact, and it is of far greater scientific value than other scientific fact. If a thing is not fact it is not science. **Evolution is not science, as it is not fact.** Its only foundations are the nebular hypothesis (cloudy guess), hypothetical phantom cells, hypothetical phantom "missing links," etc. Evolution is monkey-mist, myth and midnight.

EVOLUTION IS CHRISTIANITY'S ENEMY

"Evolution was put forth as an anti-christian and infidel doctrine, and for fifty years it has supplied the platform from which,

and the weapons with which, Christianity has been assailed. Haeckel, the infidel naturalist, termed Darwin's "Origin of Species" the 'Anti-Genesis' and exultingly proclaimed that 'With a single stroke Darwin has annihilated the dogma of creation.' This antagonism between Evolution and Christianity is a fact which, we suppose, no sincere evolutionist would deny."

"Thomas Huxley: 'Not only do I hold it to be proven that the story of the Deluge is a pure fiction; but I have no hesitation in affirming the same thing of the story of the Creation' " (Mauro). (See the seven "Proofs of the Flood," Vol. 2 of this work.)

Many state governments prohibit the Bible from being taught in the schools and instead crowd the pupil's life so full of other things, they have no chance to learn of God or to fit themselves for eternity. In the modern school the student is taught, thru text books and by some unchristian teachers, that the Bible's account of creation and life are either doubtful or a "tale" or "myths." The "majority" of the young American students find little interest, therefore, in the usual Sunday service that some "modern" preachers conduct. Many a man in the pulpit and teacher in the Sunday School class have themselves been raised up on this anti-God, anti-Bible account of the creation of life, of sin and of redemption. Hence, the boy or the girl so instructed, is unable to find a balance wheel or guide for the problems of life. So out into the ocean of sin they go, some swiftly, some slowly—but all surely headed toward the harbor of eternal doom and death. "The soul that sinneth, it shall die." "Be sure your sin will find you out." Your sins will follow you thru life; they will follow you to the judgment bar; they will follow you thru eternity. (The only preachers or teachers who will take exception to the above, will in all probability be those of whom the statement is true. "It's the hit dog that hollers.")

"The arch-enemy of God and men has manoeuvred this 'Christian' country into the position where the accepted canons of education forbid the teaching of the Bible to the children of the tax-payers, but permit the teaching of **the most anti-Christian** and unscientific doctrine that ever made a bid for public favor" (Mauro).

If the Bible is the Word of God the surest way to damn the soul of your boy or girl for time and eternity is to teach them its statements are false. If there was only a ghost of a chance that the Bible is the Word of God, it would be supreme folly to destroy the faith of men and women in its pages. "If any man will do His will **he shall know** of the doctrine whether it be of God or whether I speak of myself." (Jno. 7:17). It is "the Word of God," so guarantees the Son of God, Who was God, incarnate.

DISTINCTIVE RESULTS OF EVOLUTION AND KINDRED TEACHINGS.

HISTORIANS MISREPRESENT THE TRUTH ABOUT MAN: Many histories are written by devotees of evolution. They have warped and "schematized" the records of the past with the purpose of trying to convince the reader that modern man is a regular "house-a-fire" when it comes to evolving in response to the "spontaneous generation" within him. They have deified fallen man and exalted his word, and they try to dethrone a holy God and destroy His Word. Man, created in God's image, was a master. Sin and degradation entered his life. The degraded type or individual that evolution points to as a "missing link" is simply a man in ruin. The lower type of people are "races in ruin." No nation has ever lasted as leader but a few centuries. They all fall back from their

heights to lower levels. Babylon, Egypt, Greece, Rome and Spain are illustrations.

An article was just read about an "eminent scholar" of Columbia U. in which a statement was made to the effect that the mind of Cro-Magnon man was but that of a babe's, compared to an Edison. Some marvelous devil-looting of the modern "scholar" isn't it? The man of today stands on six thousands years of previous experience and achievements. Therefore, it requires less "brains" and ability, accordingly, to build a New York sky scraper than it did to build the Great Pyramid. Do the facts, with all man's present machinery (the accumulations of centuries) demonstrate that the old builder was a babe in mind, compared to the present builder, or do they demonstrate that the old builder, with scarcely any tools or equipment had a master mind?

The Great Pyramid covered thirteen acres and consisted of some 2,300,000 massive stones. "The huge granite blocks of which the pyramids are built were transported 500 miles. By what knowledge of mechanics was this task made possible? Who gave the Egyptians the knowledge and the skill to polish these granite blocks like glass and to fit them so that the joints cannot be seen? You know that the pyramids in spite of their weight of millions of tons have not settled in any part to the extent of a measurable fraction of an inch. Mr. Ferguson, possibly the greatest living authority on architecture writes: 'Nothing more perfect, mechanically, has ever been erected since that time.' . . .

"These early Egyptian builders in the palace temple at Karnac put forth 'perhaps the noblest effort of architectural magnificence ever produced by the hand of man!'" (Theo. Graebner, Concordia Seminary, St. Louis, Mo., in his "Evolution of Man—The Verdict of History").

Museums exhibit poor, bungling handwork, then better grades, up to the best, to illustrate "the evolution of man" thru the centuries. In Lieut. Col. P. M. Sykes' History of Persia (Vol. 1, opposite page 60), is a picture of a "Pre-historic Vase." It's heralded as a great "find." But its duplicate is made **today** by the Mexicans. In primitive peoples of today, workmen can be found who turn out as inferior workmanship as that ascribed to pre-historic Egypt. By their side may sit skilled workers who turn out masterpieces. The degree of perfection of pottery and other workmanship neither demonstrates the evolution of man nor the age of man. It's rotten reasoning just as the doctrine of the evolution of man from animals is rotten reasoning.

" 'The farther we go back in Egyptian history,' says Professor Brugsch, 'the more perfect their works of painting and sculpture;' and Professor Renouf says: 'Of a state of barbarism or even of patriarchal life anterior to the monumental period, there is no historical vestige.' . . .

The statues and plaques carved in stone and wood to be seen in the Gizeh Museum prove that the priest mummifiers of Memphis four thousand years ago possessed a profound knowledge of anatomy. . . . Excavations in Italy have brought to light scores of finely finished surgical instruments for certain operations, which are in almost every particular of form like those re-invented in modern times and used by the most advanced surgeons of today. . . . The blades the Saracens turned out hundreds of years ago would cut one of our own blades in two like butter. . . . Modern ink fades in five or ten years to rust color, yet the ink of mediaeval manuscripts is as black and bright today as it was seven hundred years ago. . . . In Egyptian tombs we find fabrics dyed thousands of years ago that remain today brighter and purer in hue than any of our modern fabrics. . . . We can't build as the ancients did. The secret

of their mortar and cement is lost to us. Their mortar and cement were actually harder and more durable than the stones they bound together. . . . Dr. Hiram Bingham, assistant professor of Latin American history in Yale University, who in 1912 visited Peru, declares that the oldest remains of Peruvian civilization are the most perfect. . . . No marble could be more exquisitely cut. . . . So wherever we turn in the world's history we find, not progress from savage beginnings, but degeneration from an earlier perfection" (Prof. Theo. Graebner).

Prof. Conklin concedes that the equal of Aristotle, Socrates, etc., do not exist today. Prof. Galton considers that about 400 years before Christ, the Greek race was "On the lowest estimate as much above the English race of today as the English are above the African Negro."

Since man's sin and fall, there have been savages. Are not the once proud empires of Babylon, Egypt, Assyria, etc., represented by degraded descendants of former glory? Could their artisans of today reproduce or more than equal the work of their ancient ancestors? Where is their evolution?

The signet of the ring of Cheops, the Pyramid builder "is about the size of a quarter of a dollar, and the engraving is invisible without the aid of a glass. No man was ever shown into the cabinets of gems in Italy without being furnished with a microscope to look at them. . . . A gem once worn on the finger of Michelangelo—the engraving is two thousand years old, on which there are the figures of seven women. You must have the aid of a glass in order to distinguish the forms at all. . . . Rawlinson brought home a stone about twenty inches long and ten wide, containing an entire treatise on mathematics. It would be perfectly illegible without glasses" (Prof. Theo. Graebner).

Only in the past few centuries has man regained the art of making the microscope. Why should modern man with six thousand years of borrowed, previous achievements brag so much about his evolution and "modern mind?" Let him go back to the surroundings and times of David and write about a dozen lines, that will equal the matchless grandeur of the twenty-third Psalm. Let him go back to Egypt today with the lack of experience and equipment they had, and reproduce the Great Pyramid in all its perfections.

"The whole application of a supposed law of evolution to the history of the ancient oriental world, is founded on what we now know to have been a huge mistake" (Dr. Sayce).

The fallacy of historians who "schematized" history to "prove" evolution is "now known to have been a huge mistake," just as the humbug of the evolution of man from animals is "now known to have been a HUGE mistake."

Under the subject, "Robinson and Breasted's History in Conflict with God's Word" (Vol. 2 of this work), we have shown that this history is "schematized" and denies fundamental facts in the Bible from Abraham's time on back to the appearance of the first man on earth. Be sure to read this carefully, for in this history you will find distortions exposed by facts.

EVOLUTIONIST GEOLOGISTS MISLEAD: "No science has led the public thought so far astray as has that of geology."—Prof. Charles Lyell. "In the year 1860," he says, "the French Institute enumerated not less than eighty geological theories which were hostile to the Scriptures; but not one of those theories is held today" ("C. of E." by Prof. L. T. Townsend, D.D., S.T.D., M.V.I.).

"THE SCIENCE OF POWER:" "Benjamin Kidd shows that the theory of evolution as presented by Nietzsche has a dominant tendency

to paralyze everything in human life that is worth while. This is what he says: **'It denounces Christianity** as being a system calculated to make degenerates out of men, **denies the existence of God, overturns all standards of morality,** eulogizes war as both necessary and desirable, praises hatred because it leads to war, denies to sympathy and pity any rightful place in a manly heart and endeavors to substitute the worship of the superman for the worship of Jehovah.'

"The philosophy of Nietzsche is a threat to the world's peace and progress. And what is more alarming than the philosophy itself is the fact that it is finding its many advocates. It backs up the theory of evolution and Nietzsche names Darwin as one of the three great men of the century in which he lived. In Nietzsche's book, 'Joyful Wisdom,' he would have the Kaiser do as he did, that is, seek to have the world under one sovereign, the dream that 'lured the Kaiser into a sea of blood from which he emerged an exile seeking security under a foreign flag.'

"This terrible philosophy would convert the world into an arena of blood-shed, a conflict between brute beasts, each one trampling on every other and crushing out everything standing in the way. And we repeat the most fearful thing about it is that it is advocated by men of influence who ought to know better. The fact that Nietzsche died in an asylum for the insane should be a warning." (Townsend.)

NEWSPAPER WRITERS, thru the medium of national periodicals are preaching to the public that the Bible's account of creation and accountability is a myth. Why they advocate the monkey ancestry of man we can not quite understand. Not one of them ever appeared to us to have monkey blood in his veins or monkey brains in his head. Usually they are a foxy, keen, capable, clever, likeable lot; many college graduates among them who have been brought up on a strict diet of evolution. Many of their articles evidence little knowledge of and sometimes little respect for the Scriptures. Many of them have never made a proper personal investigation of the teachings and claims of God, and are therefore in no position to give the Bible a square deal. Some would like to do the square thing if they knew what to do. Many are skeptical about "the Word of God." If they really knew that the Bible was absolutely "the Word of God" (which it absolutely is), and that it offers deliverance and redemption to sin-wrecked lives and that redemption is actualized in thousands of individual cases, they could be expected to take a different attitude. Many of them have no personal knowledge of what it means to turn from sin to Jesus Christ and find a new life and the ability, through Christ, to have victory over sin. Many of these fellows are the product of the surroundings and age in which they live; as they live and move and write, they simply reflect the age. Give your newspaper writers a decent training concerning God's Word in the school, college and church and you will have a different type of reporter and one who will not be defending and broadcasting evolution which is Satan's gospel of creation, of irresponsibility to God, and of license to sin. If you don't bring your reporters up under different conditions, they will prove one of the most powerful weapons of anti Christ to wreck the church of God and Christian government.

ARTHUR BRISBANE, the popular writer, gases a bit through his "gill arches."

"The New York Journal of Tuesday, March 21, 1922, in the column which is conspicuous because the name of Arthur Brisbane is published at its head, contains the following reference to myself (Bryan): Sunday

was the birthday of William Jennings Bryan, sincere, useful soul. He celebrated it with a speech denouncing evolution. As he spoke, just at the bottom of his waistcoat, on the right side of his body, there snuggled a tiny vermiform appendix that could have refuted all his arguments. Evolution has made it vestigial, only a nuisance, but in some of Mr. Bryan's herbivorous relatives that appendix is more than twenty feet long, as compared with three or four inches in humans.

And the ear with which Mr. Bryan listened to applause is only an evolution of the gill with which his ancestor, the fish, allowed water to escape, after extracting the oxygen" (The Commoner, Vol. 22, No. 4).

Under the heading "Scientists Testify Evolution Is Nonsense" we have shown that Virchow, Germany's great scientist, says evolution is "all nonsense" and Dr. Leavitt says it is "superstition more pitiable than the pagan worship of the image of Diana" as the "mother of creation."

Dr. Edward L. Rice, of Ohio Wesleyan University, zoologist, professor in a school labeled Christian, is championing the cause of the anti-Bible, anti-God and evolution gang and says, "that there are 'a hundred and eighty unnecessary parts' in the human body, 'some of them seriously interfering with the running of the machine.' Then, turning against the Biblical doctrine of special creation, he springs the question: 'Would a divine mechanic of unlimited power create a machine of such palpable imperfection as the human body?'"

We think this a pertinent question, and will give the reply. In asking it, Dr. Rice must have forgotten that he himself professes to believe that God evolved man from the lower forms of life. Then God must be responsible for having evolved man's body with its 'palpable imperfection.' How, then, will evolution exonerate God? It would seem rather to increase His shortsightedness and blundering, because He took so many millions of years to bring forth so imperfect a result. So that argument is rendered futile. . . . **Competent physicians tell us that the vermiform appendix, the coccyx, the gall bladder, the pituitary and other endocrine glands perform a useful function in the human organism and that no man is complete without them**" (Leander S. Keyser, A.M., D.D., in "King's Business," Sept., 1925).

Professor J. Arthur Thomson's "The Wonder of Life" advances the idea of "vestiges" in man, says: "It must be frankly admitted . . . many . . . examples that used to be given of the re-assertion of long-lost ancestral characters were insufficiently criticized, and the list of so-called reversions has been **remorselessly thinned** by the more modern students of inheritance." . . .

"It has always been the custom to regard those organs whose function or uses are unknown, as useless, rudimentary, or vestigial organs. As our knowledge of the body has increased, the list of useless organs has decreased."—Dr. Arthur Keith, Anatomist and Anthropologist, President of Royal Anthropological Institute.

"Darwin himself said in his 'Descent of Man:' 'I am convinced, from the light gained during the last few years, that very many structures which now appear to us useless **will hereafter be proved to be useful**' " (T. B. Bishop's "Evolution Criticized," pp. 70, 71, 73).

"**He would be a rash man indeed who would now assert that ANY PART of the human body is useless**" (E. S. Goodrich's, "Evolution").

But man has not descended from a monkey. Dr. TRAAS, the Paleontologist says: "The idea that mankind is descended from any Simian

species whatever, is certainly the most foolish ever put forth by man writing on the history of man." "All the researches undertaken with the aim of finding continuity in progressive development have been without result. **There exists no proanthropos, no man-monkey, and the 'connecting link' remains a phantom**" (Dr. Rudolph Virchow). Dr. William Hanna Thompson, former president of the New York Academy of Medicine, says: "Evolution never was a cause of anything . . . **it's absurd to rank man among the animals.**"

Since man is not derived by evolution from any animal, therefore all this "buncology" about vestiges inherited from animal ancestors is pure humbug.

Man was created in "the image of God." He sinned and degenerated. This fallen man ("There is none righteous, no not one"), with his diseased, deteriorated body has "vestiges" of man's primal perfection. These "vestiges" are proof that man, created by God, sinned and degenerated as recorded in Scripture.

H. G. WELLS, another "popular" writer, who evidently has it all figured out that he can write a better Bible than God can, and initiate a better plan of redemption than God's Son—has evidently taken it upon himself in his humbug history of life, to teach the youth of the world that the Bible is false in its account of creation, and if not to be trusted in this matter, why of course not to be trusted in anything else.

Wells testifies of man's ascent from monkeys. Before he could qualify as a witness before a court, he would be required to show that he had facts for evidence (not fiction or guess work). If he couldn't do this, he couldn't testify. The court would rule that what he had to say was "incompetent, irrelevant and immaterial." He couldn't "fool" the court's time away, as he has the public's. H. G. Wells says: "We do not know how life began upon the earth" (p. 7, Vol. 1, Wells' History), and then instead of keeping his mouth shut since he doesn't know, he spends many pages that cost the readers time and money, to picture absurd, humbugs concerning something that he confesses neither he nor his pseudo-scientific-scholar-authorities know anything about. Since neither Wells nor the evolutionists know—it's time for the public and for papers to turn a deaf ear to them. The serpentine web, woven in these wasted pages, may be intended and evidently is aimed at destroying faith in God's Word; so Wells will find it incumbent to write a new Bible and redeem humanity?

And many minds who allow others to do their thinking will waste their time reading these pages. When thru, they will know as little about it as Wells confesses he does—that is, "**nothing.**" They (or Wells) could easily read the first 34 verses of the Bible and find out how "life began upon the earth" and find that God will not waste their time, as He counts time and words as precious. "Every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give an account thereof in the day of Judgment." Who said so? God's Son, Jesus. Wells says that He is the greatest man that ever lived and it's time Wells was falling at the feet of this master Teacher of all the Ages and learning of Him, who further said, "Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away." Wells admits Jesus was greater than he—then we will listen to Jesus, who says, "The Scripture cannot be broken" (Jno. 10:35). So it is useless for Wells to attempt to write a better Bible or improve on its doctrines of redemption or account of creation. Jesus gave authority to all the Old Testament as being the Word of God. See Luke 24. To the Jewish unbelievers and apostates, as to all unbelievers and apostates, God's Son says, you have made "void the Word of God by your tradition." Jesus, one greater than Wells, says the

Scriptures are "the Word of God." The Word of God then, as now, included Genesis 1-2 where it records that God created life. The Jews then attempted and Wells now attempts to set aside the Word of God by their traditions. (See Wells' History, pp. 1 to 175. Cf. Gen. 1-2).

Yes, those Jews claimed to be somebody, they named the name of God glibly, they even read the Scriptures and professed to be moral while Jesus told them they were full of "dead men's bones" and corruption. Jesus pronounced seven woes against those who set aside God's Word and exalted their own traditions. "You . . . hypocrites, . . . **ye blind guides**, . . . ye fools, . . . ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the damnation of hell?" Listen to Jesus, He is greater than Wells. Jesus further told them that God was not their Father, that their father was "the devil" and that they would do the works of their father and that their father, the devil, was a **liar** from the beginning. (See "the beginning of life" as pictured in Wells' history, and compare it with Gen. 1-2).

Jesus (Whom Wells admits as the greatest man that ever lived) further says to these people, "Ye will not come to me, that ye might have life"—"I give unto them Eternal life; and they shall never perish."—"I am the Good Shepherd, the Good Shepherd giveth his life for the sheep."—"If ye believe not that I am He, ye shall die in **your sins**." Jesus was either what he claimed to be—"the world's Saviour" or he was the greatest impostor of all the ages. If the greatest impostor, then he was not as Wells says, the greatest man that ever lived. You say Wells is a smart man. The "scholars" he refers to are among the educated men of our day. This depends upon whether your judgment or God's is to be relied upon. The scribes and Pharisees of Jesus' day were the "smart" and educated men of their time; yet, they did not manifest any great wisdom when they dealt with the things of God—"The wisdom of this world is foolishness with God"—"blind guides"—They "know not God." Man is a sinner; he needs a Saviour. **This is the greatest issue of all the ages.**

Yes, as Wells says, "Jesus was the 'greatest man that ever lived.'" His Word "shall not pass away" and Jesus says "from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female" (Mk. 10:6). So while Wells and his fellow devil-lootionists are groping in the darkness of death, the "unlearned (?) trustful, God-informed child, "**through faith**" understands "that the worlds were framed by the Word of God, so that things which are seen **were not made** of things which **do appear**." (Heb. 11:3). Yes, the "Scripture (Cf. Gen. 1-2) cannot be broken." "The Word of our God shall stand forever."

Now Brisbane has some "horse sense," (even if he seems to have "fallen" a bit for evolution), and knows that his dear, old mother never had a fish or a monkey ancestry. If Brisbane really knew how much God loved that dear, old mother of his and her boy, Arthur—so much that He "gave His only begotten Son" to die for them, as their substitute sin-bearer **that they might not perish**, but have everlasting life; and so that after the toil and strife of life is over that they might be reunited and be together thruout eternity—well, Brisbane would dump evolution overboard and make a pretty good preacher. See Brisbane's defense of the Bible and attack on modernism, p. 268-269.

And this man, Wells, who claims his ancestors were apes, and for whom God was gracious enough to offer His own Son in sacrifice, and who may think he can write a better account of creation than God can write, states with reference to the origin of man that "The current idea of those qualified to form an opinion seems to be that he was a "ground

ape" (Vol. 1, p. 63). And before his humbug history of the origin of life is hardly cold, the "scholars" and "scientists" are running over themselves in their efforts to disclaim man's origination from the ape. They now claim man originated from some animal (back in the land of mist), that had sense enough to skiddoo, before Wells arrived with his ape. Yes, the evolutionist is on the run, and it's time for Wells to write a new history of life and a new Bible, for no one can do the job better than God can, unless it be some marvelous animal who has had within himself the "erratic force" to rise from the slime of a cess pool to a jelly-fish, then to a monkey, thence to a deluded denier of "the Word of God." "Not many wise men **after the flesh**, not many mighty, not many noble, are called" . . . "The natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him" (1 Cor. 1:26; 2:14).

All the wisdom of the world is worthless in comparison with the loss of a human soul. The self-wise of earth are foolish in the presence of God; they are the "heady, highminded . . . having a form of godliness, but denying the power thereof . . . ever learning, and **never able** to come to the knowledge of the truth . . . **reprobate concerning the faith**" . . . "they did not like (or refused) to retain God in their knowledge" (2 Tim. 3:4-8; Rom. 1:21, 22, 28).

The "fall" and descent of man makes the low type of man look like a monkey, and makes the devil-lootionist think like a monkey. Show us a large group of devotees of evolution and we will show you a group of enemies of God and enemies of the Bible and enemies of Christ; and although there may be some sincere souls in their midst, as a group, they are destroying faith in God, faith in the Bible, and faith in Christ, and thereby damning souls for time and for eternity. The Bible is "the Word of God," whether the pseudo-scientists, doubters and skeptics believe it or not.

THE POPULAR SCIENCE MONTHLY, in an advertising circular (about Jan. 1923) entitled, "Just a sample of what **one** issue of this magazine contains" there is a picture all "deviled up," evidently to show the boys and girls that God was not needed in the matter of creation. This picture shows "How the earth was pulled out of the sun by the attraction of a passing star." You couldn't beat this for buncology if you tried a thousand years. Next to it is a ferocious picture of "The gorilla, man's nearest animal cousin,—note points of resemblance to the cave man above." Above "the gorilla-man," the acclaimed ancestor of the editor of that article, is the picture of a monstrosity of a beast-man wearing the label, "An early cave man: he lived in Europe some 50,000 years ago." This monstrosity never existed any place except in the disordered, God-dishonoring minds of the perpetrators of this insult to man, and blasphemy against God and His Word. This magazine is recommended for use by teachers in High Schools and Colleges. Your unsuspecting sons and daughters are taught through these suggestive pictures and statements to reckon the Bible and its account of creation as false and these demoniacal delusions as the truth. No matter how much "good material" a magazine of this type contains, it is not fit to be in the same house with a boy or girl who has to reckon with God and fit himself or herself for eternity. All one has to do to be eternally lost, according to the Son of God, is to reject and doubt Christ. "He that believeth not, shall be damned" (Mk. 16:16). And such things as this running through a young mind six days in the week will do more to destroy "faith" than the ministers and teachers can build up in any one day in the week. Don't trifle with this matter. The souls of your sons

and daughters are at stake. What good will all the scientific knowledge of the world do them, if they lose their own souls?

"In the American preface to 'The Glass of Fashion' these words are to be found: 'Darwinism not only justifies the sensualist at the trough and Fashion at her glass; it justifies Prussianism at the cannon's mouth and Bolshevism at the prison-door' (Bryan's, "In His Image"). If you want your son or daughter to join this gang, just allow their faith to be destroyed.

THE PULPIT: "A professor in Wesleyan University . . . said: . . . 'When we trace a continuous evolution from the nebula to the dawn of life and again a continuous evolution from the dawn of life to the varied fauna and flora of today crowned with glory in the appearance of man himself, we can hardly fail to accept the suggestion that the transition from the lifeless to the living was itself a process of evolution' " (Townsend). This professor certainly has a fish ancestor for he has not only swallowed the bait, but the sinker, cork, line, pole and all.

Many who now have charge of churches are surprisingly unfamiliar with the Word of God. A young man, trained in a leading seminary, said they spent one hour a week on the English Bible and when he came out he had a Bible that was practically a closed book to him. For a generation, at the school room or college fountain, they have been drinking in Satan's gospel of creation and salvation by evolution. Higher criticism and skepticism have blinded minds to the truths of God. This is a black picture, but the reality is blacker than the picture. Eternal heaven or eternal hell is the issue. It is no time to trifle.

Capper's Weekly (7-25-25), contained in large headlines on the front page, this statement:

"CHRISTIANITY IS NOT IN DANGER"

"No Actual Clash Between Religion and Evolution, Says Dr. Sheldon."

Dr. Sheldon is undoubtedly a fine Christian gentleman and has been used of the Lord to benefit mankind. That some of his views are unsound and working great harm, is evident. In the first place, anyone familiar with the teachings of evolution as it attacks Christianity, and anyone familiar with the warfare going on, as evidenced by the recent Darrow-Bryan trial at Dayton, Tenn. knows that there is a clash "between religion and evolution." The statement that "Christianity Is Not In Danger" is contrary to facts. Scripture and observation reveal that Christianity is in great danger and is being undermined and destroyed by false teachers and doctrines. Against Christianity, a great, powerful antichrist body is now forming. Proof of this is set forth throughout this manuscript, and particularly on pages 104 to 116 and 117 to 131.

Dr. Sheldon comes to the defense of the evolutionists, most of whom deny that the Bible is the Word of God and deny Jesus Christ as the Redeemer, as set forth therein. Dr. Sheldon says, "You are mistaken if you think I cannot be a Christian and at the same time an evolutionist." We know that a man can be a Christian and adhere to the heresy of evolution, but no man can be a Christian and believe in typical evolution and yet believe in and accept the great outstanding facts of redemption as set forth in Scripture. See them set forth, pp. 277-286. Dr. Sheldon further says, "I used to believe that God made the entire universe in 144 hours." God is not to blame for this heretical belief of Sheldon's, neither is the Word of God to blame. God has nowhere said in His Word that He created the entire universe in 144 hours. See pages 138, 148 and 165 and you will find what God says about the time He took to

make "the entire universe." Dr. Sheldon evidently still believes that the Bible teaches that God used only 144 hours of time to create the universe. This evidences his superficial knowledge of the subject he discusses. He further says, "Man started as man potentially," and that he believes "it took God and is taking Him vast periods of time to make man." If man was ever a brute, and the evolution theory requires that He was, it is absolutely impossible for anyone to prove that man started as man potentially. If what Sheldon says about potential man is true, and man evolved from animals, then animals are still potentially men. Furthermore, neither the facts in history nor in science justify anyone in making the statement that man has been in existence for vast periods of time. See "Age of Man," pp. 243-8. This statement is not only contrary to history, but it's contrary to the Word of God, which he claims to believe. The statement that it "is taking God vast periods of time to make man" is also absolutely contrary to the revelations of God, concerning the future of the race—"A short work will the Lord make upon the earth" (Rom. 9:28). See "The Age of Man" in Vol. 2, and see "The Kingdom Age," pp. 23-98. This last statement by Dr. Sheldon is only another evidence that he has not carefully investigated what God has said in His Word concerning the things whereof he speaks.

We think Dr. Sheldon is a fine Christian gentleman, but in this case, is propagating and defending dangerous doctrines that are destroying the church and faith in the Bible and its Redeemer, the Lord Jesus Christ. In the matter of evolution, Dr. Sheldon lines up, as it were, with the agnostic, Clarence Darrow, and anti-God, anti-Bible, anti-Christ scholars, who are opposed to the gospel as set forth in the Scriptures, and who are opposed to sound Christians who believe in the Bible.

Haeckel says, "**Creation by evolution**" is "**contradictory**" (Haeckel's "Tractate," p. 7). **So Sheldon's position not only contradicts evolution, but it contradicts "the Word of God."** Doesn't this type of preacher lead many men astray? **A preacher should stick to the Bible or step out of the pulpit.**

There are a few devout, Christian men, who advocate evolution in more or less of a typical form and who seem to have so little grip on the teachings of Scripture that they have not seen that evolution is diametrically opposed to the great outstanding facts and fundamentals of redemption. For proof that evolution denies every fundamental fact of redemption, see pp. 277-286.

"Lord Kelvin said: 'I marvel at the undue haste with which teachers in our universities and preachers in our pulpits are restating truth in the terms of evolution while evolution itself remains **an unproved hypothesis** in the laboratories of science'."

"Prof. Wm. Bateson, the distinguished English biologist . . . 'after forty years, **no evidence** has been discovered to verify his (Darwin's) genesis of species.' Surely our 'liberal' theologians, who teach as truth **that MONSTROUS fiction which true men of science never regarded as more than a speculative theory**, and NOW HAVE, with practical unanimity, **REPUDIATED**, are **UTTERLY** without excuse. . .

"Prof. Graebner: 'The warfare of philosophy against Christian faith is readily explained. Man is corrupt. He loves sin. He is conscious of his guilt and fears the penalty. Hence every avenue of escape is welcome, if only he can persuade himself that there is no God, no judgment.'" (Mauro).

"Science has rendered invaluable service to society; her achievements are innumerable . . . **Tolstoy** insists that the science of '**How to Live**' is more important than any other science. . . .

"It is no light matter to impeach the veracity of the Scriptures in order to accept, not a truth—not even a theory—but a mere hypothesis" (W. J. Bryan's "In His Image").

"Prof. Pfliederer writes, 'There is only one choice. When we say Evolution we definitely deny Creation. When we say Creation we definitely deny Evolution.' Prof. J. Sully says, '**The doctrine of Evolution is directly antagonistic to that of Creation**'" (Quoted by Patterson).

The deceiver (evolution) is a fraud and humbug. It has no fact to support it; **not one**. This drives you back to the Bible's account of creation and life. It has stood thru the "millenniums"—it will stand forever as it is "the Word of God." Will you discard the Bible with its gospel of light and life, for monkey-mist and midnight? The Bible is from God where all truth originates; Evolution is from Satan where all falsehood originates. They are strangers and enemies, as are their typical devotees.

Deception's "blood test:" It has been found that when human blood is placed in a certain solution, a chemical reaction takes place resulting in a precipitate. It has been found "that a precipitate could be obtained with the blood of anthropoids" ("monkeys"). Evolutionists realize that they lack evidence to justify their claim of man's descent from monkey, so they grab at a rotten straw and claim this test proves man's relationship to monkey. It does nothing of the kind. Their proposition is this: Any blood that shows a reaction under this test shows relationship to man, but nobody can prove that this proposition is true for it cannot be proven that the "monkey" is related to man.

Dr. W. J. Mayo of Rochester, Minn., says it is mere "nonsense" to say "that we are descended from monkeys."—Kansas City Times, May 20th, 1925.

Dr. William Hanna Thomson, former president of the New York Academy of Medicine says, "Evolution never was a cause of anything . . . it is absurd to rank man among the animals."

Since man has not descended from monkey, it's nonsense to say this blood test proves that man is related to the monkey.

"Dr. Hans Friedenthal . . . declared that in using the word 'blood-relationship,' he had never meant anything more than a blood resemblance in the chemico-physiological sense. It was a mistake on the part of writers on popular science to say that by blood-relationship he understood actual kinship, and **he protested energetically against having such an idea imputed to him**" (T. B. Bishop's "Evolution Criticized," pp. 66-67).

The "blood test" that proves man is not related to the monkey: Some preachers accept the monkeyed-with-blood test, but reject God's blood test. "Sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death." The sinner can escape the death penalty by applying "the blood" of Jesus Christ by faith. "Christ Jesus: Whom God hath set forth to be a **propitiation thru faith in His blood**" (Rom. 3:24-25). "When I see the blood I will pass over you." This "**blood test**" proves that there is **NO BLOOD RELATIONSHIP** between man and the beasts.

EVILS OF EVOLUTION AND FALSE SCIENCE IN THE

HOME, SCHOOL, STATE AND NATION

VIRCHOW, of Berlin, a master in his line, says of evolution: "It is all nonsense." . . . He went so far as to denounce the theory as **DANGEROUS TO THE STATE**, and demanded that it be **EXCLUDED FROM THE SCHOOLS**" (Quoted by Mauro).

"Notwithstanding the fact that Darwinism is no longer believed in the circles in which it originated, its influence for harm was never so great as now. The reason is that the theory has found its way into the theological seminaries, and into the school-books of the children, where it is doing the deadly and truly devilish work of discrediting, in the eyes of many, the statements of the Word of God. . . .

"A parent . . . tells of a text-book brought home by his seven-year-old boy, . . . 'Home Geography for Primary Grades.' . . . being taught to children of the most tender years. Discussing the subject of birds, this text-book for primary grades says: 'Ever so long ago their grandfathers were not birds at all. Then they could not fly, for they had neither wings nor feathers. These grandfathers of our birds had four legs, a long tail, and jaws with teeth. After a time feathers grew on their bodies, and their front legs became changed for flying. These were strange looking creatures. There are none living like them now.' . . .

"It is high time for parents to be awakened out of sleep as to the dangers to which their children are exposed in our modern schools. These are indeed 'perilous times,' and one of the greatest perils thereof is the teaching which is now being given to the young" (Mauro).

"The idea of a public school sprang from the minds of the American fathers who desired that each individual should be educated sufficiently to read the Bible for himself. . . .

"The New England Primer, which for more than a hundred and fifty years was the text book of all American schools, was made up almost entirely of Bible selections" (Moody Bulletin, Nov., 1924).

"President John Quincy Adams . . . said: 'The first and **almost the only book deserving of universal attention is the Bible. I speak as a man of the world to men of the world,** and I say to you, "Search the Scriptures." The earlier my children begin to read it the more confident will be my hopes that they will prove useful citizens of their country and respectable members of society.' "

"A teacher recently investigated 1,300 public school readers and spellers in the Congressional Library at Washington, D. C. It was found that those published around 1776 showed 50 per cent of the material on religious topics, 22 per cent on moral, and 28 per cent on other lines, while **those published around 1920 showed zero per cent on religious matters,** 3 per cent on moral topics and 97 per cent on other subjects" (The Word and Way, 5-10-23).

"Trained scientists spent three years and expended \$100,000.00 in discovering facts about children. . . . These children were from different sections of the United States, from various stations in life and from different types of homes and environments. It was found that over half of the children would lie, cheat and steal" (The King's Business).

The majority of our criminals are youths of school age. Where did they get this criminal impetus? It wasn't here when youths studied the Bible and served God. Leopold and Loeb, the Chicago University college students, who murdered Robert Franks said that it was done "In the interest of science, and therefore justified." They resented the thought that "they had done anything for which they should be called to account." No Bible training, means no fear of God and a refusal to recognize accountability. "A New York judge is reported as saying recently, 'What all American boys and girls need is a greater knowledge of the Bible' " (The Word and Way, 12-18-24).

In "The Kansas Industrialist" of 12-2-25, the official organ of the Kansas State Agricultural College, the following was printed as the ex-

pression of the religious views of a member of their class in Journalism: "College trained people are not going to accept the old, narrow, religious concepts. Religious interpretation, like everything else, is steadily evolving, and is thereby, gaining a greater appeal. It has come up through the days of religious intolerance, through the days when the brimstone and eternal damnation theories dominated to the present when more and more, religion is becoming a factor in everyday life." The article states frankly that the student has lost faith in the Bible doctrines of Christianity as preached during the last century by the mighty men of God. No "old" way, nor "narrow" way nor "damnation theories" for this student. This means no restraint: it justifies lust and opposes control or government. Scripture sets forth that the doctrine of redemption was delivered "**once for all forever**" (Jude 3, Am. V.); "Strait is the gate and **narrow** is the way" (Matt. 7:13-14). Jesus said, "depart from me ye cursed into **everlasting fire**" (Matt. 25:41). "He that believeth not shall be **damned**" (Mk. 16:16). The school-room and college has undoubtedly undermined this student's faith and perverted his mind as to the things of God. As he goes forth, a journalist, he will, undoubtedly broadcast his enmity against the Scripture. Is this what the Christian taxpayers of Kansas are paying their money to colleges and teachers for? The Pharisee, like "the modernist" talked glibly about "religion," yet rejected God and His Word. They laid great stress on religion being a thing of every day life, yet their daily religion was "tommyrot." Christ rejected both them and their religion. See Matt. 23. One who talks about "Religious interpretation . . . evolving" and has rejected the narrow way and the teaching of the Bible about punishment for unrepentant sinners is certainly not afflicted with a belief in or a practice of the things of God.

In "The Kansas Industrialist," 12-9-25, Prof. Eric Englund, after batting the air, finally says: "In all history science has never persecuted anybody, while religion has persecuted well nigh everybody. Science comes with no blood upon its hands; with an unsullied past and a fresh spirit. I see no difference between an enlightened interpretation of the teachings of Christ and the teachings of science."

We make no defense of any wrong in religion. For half a century this man's type of science has struck its serpentine fangs into Christianity, denied God, rejected His Word and undermined the church, our educational system and our governments. It is bitterly persecuting the church, and hurls the terms "ignoramus," "no scientific training," "bigot," "persecutor," etc. at the Christian. It has destroyed "faith" and has the blood upon its hands, of teeming thousands, whom it has sent to Christless graves.

This Fosdick phrase "enlightened interpretation of Scripture" is Satan's siren song. Scripture has been interpreted by Christ, Peter, James, John and the mighty men of God, for 1900 years. It is the Rock of Ages. Its fundamentals have never changed, neither has its plain, proper interpretation. God says, "Behold, I set before you the way of life and the way of death," and that the way of life is so plain that "way-faring men, though fools, shall not err therein" (Jer. 21:8; Isa. 35:8). There are just two ways, one is an acceptance of Jesus Christ, the other is the rejection of Jesus Christ. "The Word of our God shall stand forever." "The same yesterday, and today and forever" (Heb. 13:8). "The faith which was **once for all** delivered unto the saints." When a pseudo-scientist or typical modernist talks about the "enlightened interpretation of Scripture," he confesses that he either does not know the

Scripture, or that he has rejected it as a whole or in part. See pp. 277-286, for proof that the pseudo-scientist is diametrically opposed to the Word of God. When a man talks about the "evolution of religious interpretation," what he really means is the devil-looting of Christianity and the rejection of the Word of God. Some Professors are destroying the student's faith in the Bible and undermining our educational institutions and turning them into organs of anti-church and anti-Christ. Lust and lawlessness is the result.

"If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness, he is proud, knowing nothing . . . from such withdraw thyself" (1 Tim. 6:3-5).

Are not hard working farmers, laborers and business men yearly paying a tremendous toll in taxes to build great schools and pay salaries, where anti-Christ professors, cigarette sucking girls and virtue destroying boys hold high carnival, as they attack the things of God and violate most every law in the decalogue? O, yes, there are good Professors, good girls and good boys. Let's hope there are **lots** of them. Let this thing go on half a century longer and what per cent of good ones will be left?

"The instructor gives the student a new family tree millions of years long, with its roots in the water (marine animals) and then sets him adrift, with infinite capacity for good or evil but with no light to guide him, no compass to direct him and no chart of the sea of life!

No wonder so large a percentage of the boys and girls who go from Sunday schools and churches to colleges (sometimes as high as seventy-five per cent.) never return to religious work. How can one feel God's presence in his daily life if Darwin's reasoning is sound? This restraining influence, more potent than any external force, is paralyzed when God is put so far away. How can one believe in prayer if, for millions of years, God has never touched a human life or laid His hand upon the destiny of the human race? What mockery to petition or implore, if God neither hears nor answers" (W. J. Bryan).

"One professor in a large university said in an opening lecture of a seminary class in educational psychology, 'Check your soul at the door. Modern psychology has destroyed the soul.' . . .

"They say that at death synaptic nerve connections will dissolve; neurones will be dissipated; the brain will return to dust—the soul will be annihilated. Why be good? Why strive after the moral and Christian ideal?

"Modern sociology is undermining the nation, the home, the family, the sanctity of the marriage relations. It teaches that matrimony is not sacred; 'that soul mates should be as free to mate as birds in the spring-time.' Such teaching will destroy matrimony, debase child rearing, and make of the nation a second France. . . .

"Socially the dance, and sexually immorality, are rampant in our leading universities and colleges. **To morals there is practically no guard whatever.**" (Editorial in Sunday School Times, 1923.)

James H. Leuba, a professor of Psychology, Bryn Mawr College, Penn., asserts that belief in a personal God and personal immortality is declining in the United States. . . . He takes a book containing the names of fifty-five hundred scientists. . . . Upon the answers received he asserts that more than one-half of the prominent scientists of the United States, those teaching Biology, Psychology, Geology and History especially, have discarded belief in a personal God and . . . this is what the doctrine of evolution is doing for those who teach our children. . . . He questioned

the students of nine representative colleges, . . . forty to forty-five per cent of the men graduates have abandoned the cardinal principles of the Christian faith. . . . To show how these evolutionists undermine the faith of students let me give you an illustration . . . : A student in one of the largest State universities of the nation recently gave me a printed speech delivered by the president of the university, a year ago this month, to 3,500 students, and printed and circulated by the Student Christian Association of the institution. The student who gave me the speech marked the following paragraph: ‘ . . . If you cannot reconcile religion with the things taught in biology, in psychology, or in the other fields of study in this university, then you should throw your religion (the Bible, of course) away. Scientific truth is here to stay.’ What about the Bible, is it not here to stay?”

“**At the University of Wisconsin** a teacher told his class that the Bible was a collection of myths. When I brought the matter to the attention of the President of the University, he criticized me but avoided all reference to the professor. At Ann Arbor a professor argued with students against religion and asserted that no thinking man could believe in God or the Bible. At Columbia a professor began his course in geology by telling his class to throw away all that they had learned in the Sunday school. There is a professor in Yale of whom it is said that no one leaves his class a believer in God. (This came from a young man who told me that his brother was being led away from the Christian faith by this professor.) A father (a Congressman) tells me that a daughter on her return from Wellesley told him that nobody believed in the Bible stories now. Another father (a Congressman) tells me of a son whose faith was undermined by this doctrine in a Divinity School.” (W. J. Bryan).

“**The early schools of America** were founded by Christian people for Christian purposes. The first college in this country was **Harvard**. It had its start in 1638, through the generosity of a minister of the gospel. Its seal bears the motto, ‘For Christ and the Church,’ though of course, it is in Latin. One of the college’s rules was this: ‘Let every student be plainly instructed and earnestly pressed to consider well that the main end of his life and studies is to know God and Jesus Christ, which is eternal life, and therefore to lay Christ at the bottom, as the only foundation of all sound knowledge and learning.’ **Yale** was founded partly because it was feared that Harvard was forgetting its religious obligation. In his ‘History of Education in Connecticut,’ B. C. Steiner says: ‘The distance and expense of sending boys to Harvard were among the chief reasons for founding another college, though the suspicion of a looseness in Harvard’s religious tenets undoubtedly moved men somewhat.’ The founders of **Princeton** recorded it as their conviction ‘that without education piety would cease to be intelligent, and without piety the desire for education would be lessened.’ . . .

“**We have denied His Lordship.** Our boys and girls are no longer thinking of Him as Creator. Our public schools are teaching that the whole universe came into existence by blind force. It takes a prophet to see what we are coming to when the theory of evolution is taught in our public schools, in our colleges and universities. It is a denial of Him who ‘Created heaven and earth, and the things that therein are, and the sea and the things which are therein’” (J. Frank Norris).

Reference Books: The following is from the International Encyclopedia, 1918, under the topic, “Fall, doctrine of:” “Modern biblical scholarship regards the story of Adam not as history, but as a myth,

whose original purpose was not to explain the origin of sin, but the evils of life. . . . **Evolution has taken the place of Genesis** as the explanation of the origin of man—man has arisen from the brutes,—**There was no fall from pristine purity.** . . . Origin of sin and **human evil first** appears in the later Jewish, Mohammedan, and Christian religions." This is the denial of practically every fundamental teaching of the Bible.

Myers History, page 56 (speaking of Babylonia) "A most prominent belief from **first to last** was popular belief in spirits, particularly in **wicked spirits.**" History recites that man has always known of "human evil."

Before the flood, we read: "And Jehovah saw that the **wickedness** of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only **evil continually**" (Gen. 6:5).

After the flood, we read: "The imagination of man's heart is **evil from his youth**" (Gen. 8:21).

Thus we see facts in history and the Bible confirming the truth, that the author of the above Encyclopedia article is a falsifier of facts and not to be trusted. God's Son and God's Word state clearly that unless all sinners place themselves under the government of the Lord Jesus Christ, and trust Him for salvation, they will be eternally banished from God under an eternal curse (Mark 16:16; Jno. 8:24). In view of this fact, we would just about as soon you would turn a rattlesnake loose in the living-room with our boy or girl, as to have this or kindred books in their hands. A book with material of this kind in it, has no right to a place in a Christian home nor school library where boys and girls are being raised and fitted for eternity.

Professors: Edward L. Rice, Professor of Zoology in the Ohio Wesleyan University, a Methodist school, says, "I shall oppose sharply the present attitude of Mr. Bryan and Mr. Sunday toward evolution." Wouldn't it make the faithful founders of this school "turn over in their graves" if they knew that modern Wesleyan professors are denying the Word of God about creation, and "sharply" opposing as fine preachers of the gospel as this century has produced?

Prof. Rice might have truthfully added that he also sharply opposed "the Word of God," and the Word of the Lord Jesus Christ, who said, "The Scripture cannot be broken" (Jno. 10:35). Prof. Rice says, "In the first chapter of Genesis an inspired poetic statement of God's creative power, but no inerrant text-book of science." To Rice's statement that Genesis 1 is "no inerrant text-book on science" Leander S. Keyser, A. M., D. D., replies: Sound Christians do not contend it's a text-book on science, but "if it is not 'inerrant,' then it must be errant. What confidence can then be placed in it as a divinely inspired work? That would make God directly a fallible being or else one who intentionally deceives His people."

Prof. Rice lays great stress on his fund of scientific knowledge, and deplores the lack of this knowledge in the great world of mankind about him, and quotes the following statement from Van Loon as a proof of evolution: "it took man's ancestors about a million years to learn to walk on their hind legs." Marvelous evidence of profound scientific knowledge, isn't it? This is disgusting nonsense. Rice is a deistic evolutionist. Who would want to worship a god that required a million years to straighten a monkey's leg out? What would you think if God were to keep a child in suspense for a million years, while it learned to walk? God says He "created" man in a yom (day) and that on the resurrection morning He will transform "our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body," and do the job "in the twinkling of an eye" (Phil. 3:20-21; 1 Cor. 15:52). "With God all things are possible." The

pseudo-scientist as well as the farm boy knows that nature is fixed and not evolving in the sense of typical evolution. He knows the natural world all around him demonstrates this; hence the expedient of resorting to the statement that it took a million years to straighten a monkey's leg out. Van Loon's statement is conclusive proof that evolution is without evidence to establish its claims.

Prof. Rice says, "I recognize fully that I am no theologian." His Biblical statements confirm that he is "no theologian." Rice claims there are two different, conflicting accounts of creation in the Bible, in Genesis 1 and Genesis 2. Let Rice turn to Genesis 5:1-2. If consistent, he would then say there were three accounts of creation. Genesis 2 and 5 are recurrences to the record of creation of Genesis 1 for the purpose of amplifying or adding detail and are God's method in revelation. See the contents of Gen. 2 as dealt with in Vol. 2 of this work.

Prof. Rice "accused" Bryan "of driving American youths, who are devoted to science, away from the church." As a general statement of fact, this is as false as hell itself. One of the last statements written by the fingers of the great Commoner reads as follows: "Christians desire that their children be taught all the sciences, but they do not want them to lose sight of the Rock of Ages while they study the age of rocks; neither do they desire them to become so absorbed measuring the distance between the stars that they will forget Him who holds the stars in his hands." The facts are that Rice and his type are doing the very thing he accuses Bryan of doing. The denominations have teeming thousands in them who have never been "born again" and are not in the church of the Lord Jesus Christ. They serve society and not the Saviour. If Bryan's preaching of the truth drives these out of the church, it is better off without them. The author of this book is personally acquainted with students who attended Rice's school, and who left it spiritually deadened and shot to pieces with evolution and modernism.

There are few men in the present century who have won so many men to the church of the Lord Jesus Christ as have those heroes of the faith, Bryan and Sunday. Yet, Rice "sharply opposes" and undermines their work for God.

The eminent scientist, "Sir William Dawson, being a good Hebrew and Greek Scholar, had an immense advantage over the majority of scientists. . . . 'Is there any real discrepancy between science and the book of Genesis?' Sir William was asked. 'In my judgment, none.' . . . To my mind the first chapter of Genesis, in the way in which it has anticipated discovery and still holds the ground as something that cannot fairly be cavilled at, is itself a remarkable proof of the inspiration of the Bible. Those who attack Genesis either **do not understand it or willfully misrepresent it.**' 'What is your belief as to the origin of man?' he was asked. 'I know nothing about the origin of man except what I am told in the Scripture—that **God created him.** I do not know anything more than that, and **I do not know ANYBODY who does.** I would say with Lord Kelvin that there is nothing in science that teaches the ORIGIN of anything at all. **That man is a product, a divine creation, is all that I can say.** So with the first animal, it **must have been a product of absolute creation.** . . . I believe in the evolution of a leaf from a bud, of a chicken from an egg, but I do not believe in the evolution of anything from nothing, or of anything from something in which it was not potentially before." ("The King's Business.")

Prof. Rice demonstrates that he is neither an authority on the origin and processes of life, nor the teachings of Scripture. What level headed

Christians would want to trust their boy or girl to a teacher of this type?

Are not, two-by-four, pussy-foot, Word-of-God-denying college professors who hold down chairs in Christian schools being used as Satan's tools as they destroy faith in the Bible and redemption? Many of them are parrots. They cry forth that which they have heard some other "bird" say. When they undertake to tell such men as Sir William Dawson and Lord Kelvin about the origin of life and its processes and such men as Wm. J. Bryan and Billy Sunday, what the facts of the Bible are, they are clearly out of their class.

Wesleyan and other Universities have their good points and their good people, and may God bless them. But God pity the student whose faith is lessened or destroyed by any of these false or heretical teachings. Christians everywhere owe it to the Lord Jesus Christ, who died for them, to beat back to the facts of the Bible and to stop advocating and defending the doctrines of the agnostic, skeptic and heretic, while they fight sound preachers and oppose "the Word of God," about creation, man's fall and his need of redemption.

God has a right to demand that His children accept His Word about creation, yet the Rice type refuse to do it. If Rice won't believe what God has said about creation, how can he believe what God has said about redemption? The truth is, that most men who claim the title "Christian" yet advocate evolution, reject the Word of God, either in part or practically as a whole. Many a man behind a pulpit, or in a professor's chair, knows so little about the Bible that he couldn't pass a decent elementary examination on the Bible without making special preparation for it. Many preachers among this class oppose outstanding teachings of God concerning the cardinal things of redemption. They refuse to get down on their knees before God and take His Word and search its pages till they can know what they are about.

"A Chinese who came to our country to receive training for theological teaching in his own country, after spending several years in three of our greatest educational institutions—a denominational college, a school of religion, and one of our largest universities—said to the writer: 'When I came to America I believed in the Bible, in prayer, in conversion, I can't go back home and teach. **My professors have robbed me of my faith.**' A Hindu, a Ph.D., from a well-known state university, said to the writer: '**Your universities are not Christian. America is not Christian. Your schools make skeptics. They wreck faith and belief. I have even lost faith in my Hindu religion. I am returning to India to teach atheism and to fight Christianity**' " (Editorial in The Sunday School Times, 1923).

"Prof. George McCready Price says: . . . 'I have never heard of a single institution that has ever recovered from the blight of this influence when once it has obtained control.' "

THE MODERNISTIC MOVEMENT, centering around the doctrine of evolution, is turning out of the school-room and seminaries, anti-Christians who are anarchists. They oppose the Word of God, law and government. These products have abased Germany, are wrecking Russia and casting a blight over the world. There will be no recovery unless men turn back to God, to the Christ of the Bible, to law, and to government.

German Universities had much to do with fostering destructive criticism, modernism and the anti-Christ movement. It has been foisted on America (and other nations), corrupting our educational systems, destroying faith in the Bible, and undermining government. This modernistic

movement centered in New York and Chicago. From there it radiates. Its representative New York journal, "Christian Work," opposes the Bible and advocates "another gospel," and is therefore anti-Christ. One of their official letters contained this statement: "We are starting a campaign of expansion designed to pull into camp the younger generation of religious thinkers and leaders." They admit their business is to undermine and destroy age-old Christianity.

The following indicates the "signs of the times:" "Evanston, Ill., Jan. 2, 1926—. . . The thousand representative students from most of the nation's colleges . . . gave the cue to what is happening to the religious thought of the youth of the land. These coming leaders of the church, many from the popularly pictured cloistered seclusion of Bible schools and religious institutions, struck out fearlessly at the church as at present operated, and at old fashioned religious ideas. They showed few traces of belief in fundamentalism and directed their attack at denominationalism, at church doctrines, at missionaries and **at almost every accepted church custom** . . . Students aimed shots at the missionary activities of the churches. They questioned the desirability of trying to foist Christianity on peoples who have been trained to other religions" (The Topeka Capital).

These young men and women disclosed in this convention, the kind of "college training" they were receiving. It is probable that most of them never even read the Bible, and that only a small per cent could pass a decent elementary test as to its contents, without special preparation. Yet, they condemn it, its gospel, and its missionary program outlined by Christ. "Go ye into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature." Place the children of the coming generation under these coming school and church leaders, and when the children are mature they will have little faith in the Bible and its gospel.

"More than ninety-nine per cent of the College students of South America profess no belief in God. The Yoshiwara—the quarter in Japanese cities where 189,526 women and girls are kept in licensed vice slavery—was the first quarter to receive government permission for re-building after the earthquake in Tokio, and has been the swiftest and most beautiful of all the reconstructions."

Modern scholarship and science have given us submarines and super-sinners; radios and rabid robbers; flying machines and flying devils; flimsy morals and flagrant violations of law; stockingless legs and scarlet ladies; monster combines and men without a conscience; mercenary millionaires and multitudes in misery; war machines and millions murdered; modern methods and monkey men. Modernism has belted continents with steel bands and stole the bullion to buy the bands; she has made men rich then ruined their morals; she has turned night into day and then soused it with sensuality; she has discovered ether and destroyed faith in the Eternal.

Ingersoll, Tom Paine and Voltaire were all typical pioneer modernists. Ingersoll is defended by present day modernists such as Prof. Shaler Mathews, President Faunce of Brown University, etc. See p. 118.

"'Modernist' religious gentlemen propose to broadcast prayers and imitation Bible texts, based on present-day conditions. This they believe will be a great improvement on the Bible, which is out of date.

"Modernist improvement on the Bible would compare with the old Bible about as well as a badly managed orphan asylum compares with a real mother.

"Six verses from the Book of Job contain more power and spirit than a million modernist 'improvements.'

"If you don't like the Bible, Mr. Modernist, leave it to those that do like it and want it. Above all, and for heaven's sake, don't 'improve it' " (Arthur Brisbane in "Today," 1924).

"We are becoming so modern in everything that some of us are even trying to modernize God. I will take my religion in the Old Fashioned way" (James J. Davis, Sec. of Labor).

What Is the Matter With China? "Bolshevism is at the root of the matter and that the Bolsheviks not only aim at the overthrow of all law and order, but they are bitterly anti-Christian, aiming at the destruction of the Church and of the Home and all Christian standards of society. . . . The key to the Bolshevik Movement was revealed in a picture which was issued on the front page of an organ of the Bolsheviks, portraying a Russian workman with sleeves rolled up, and holding a huge hammer, at the foot of a ladder which he was about to ascend; and underneath was printed, 'I have already smashed our earthly thrones, I am going up to shatter the throne of God.' "

"They have been well taught by their Russian leaders, one of whom (Zinovieff, an apostate Jew, one of the master minds among the Bolsheviks), has said, 'We will grapple with the Lord God in due season. We will vanquish Him in His highest Heaven, and wherever He seeks refuge; and we shall subdue Him forever.' Even the little children in Russia are being taught by their school teachers to blaspheme God Almighty. . . . On a certain day each week their teacher placed on the wall a picture of an old man with a long beard, representing God, and then told the pupils to shake their fists at Him and spit at Him. . . . A youth of the Children's Communist League says . . . 'We, the young godless ones . . . are waging active war against our religious parents: We will climb up into heaven and sweep away the gods.' Posters have been put up on the walls of cities in inland China with such sentiments as the following: . . . 'Down with Government, Down with Christianity, Down with Confucianism and all other Religions, Down with the Home,' etc.

The spirit of anti-God, anti-Christ and anti-Government is sweeping the land. It is rising and overshadowing the world. Many young men and women are leaving the school-room and college with "faith" destroyed and minds perverted. As they step into leadership many of them turn their backs on God and refuse to submit to government. They are trampling under foot the Bible, whose laws of God are the foundation of all civilized jurisprudence. Unless stopped, this anti-Christ movement will undermine and wreck all governments. Chaos and anarchy will reign.

THE MENACE IN RELIGIOUS PUBLICATIONS AND PULPITS

"Practically all high officers of the larger denominations are held either by Modernists or professed Conservatists, who in reality have sold out to Modernism.

"Colleges and theological seminaries are with few exceptions, controlled by them (modernists) . . . The publishing houses of the denominations are under Modernistic control and the Sunday School literature which they issue is corrupted or devitalized by this same pernicious influence. . . . The International Sunday School Association has sold out completely to Modernism." (Grace and Truth, Mch., 1924.)

The following statements in quotations appeared in The Dearborn Independent (1-9-26), under the heading "**American Pulpit Captured by Radicals.**" "Churches Make Links in Chain of Alien and 'Red' Propaganda. . . . Many Ministers Lured by (Communism and) . . . Insidious Influence. . . .

“The same forces which have brought destruction to the great country of Russia are striving for the mastery of the whole world. . . . One of the six fundamental aims which it (Communism) teaches is: **Abolition of religion**. . . . We find, however, that many clergymen are found in the ranks of the radical Reds. . . . Men who, beginning as clergymen, have ‘graduated’ into the ranks of the Communists. These men undoubtedly belong to two groups—dupes and adepts; . . . (The dupes are) deceived by the beguiling phraseology. . . . (of) the Communist leaders, . . . (who) know how to camouflage their real objects, making them appear pacific and humanitarian; the . . . (adepts) unquestionably . . . know what they are doing. . . . A few energetic radicals early entrenched themselves in **leading theological seminaries**, where their influence upon the students has been felt later in **hundreds of churches throughout** the country. . . . A surprising number of persons . . . have . . . stopped going to church because they could not accept Socialism in the pulpit. . . . Certain so-called ‘Liberal’ church papers feed regularly to their clerical readers radical propaganda of whose source these readers have no suspicion. . . . Many . . . clergymen claim to be Socialists but not Communists, not realizing that **the two are identical** in aim. . . . ‘The idea of the Bolshevik is, we will not only **think** Socialism, **talk** Socialism, but we will **do** Socialism’—Lincoln Steffens. . . . Few persons realize how widely this propaganda has spread, not only in the churches but in the Y. W. C. A., the Y. M. C. A., and other **supposedly** religious organizations. . . . ‘Many persons are undoubtedly sincere in thinking that Christianity is not Incompatible with Socialism. They forget that the abolition of religion is the **cornerstone** of Socialism.’ . . . The Communist, printed in Chicago, says: ‘A religious or Christian Socialist is a contradiction of terms.’ . . . Bukharin, one of the leading authorities on Red philosophy, says, . . . ‘Some soft-headed Communists . . . say that their religion does not prevent them from being Communists. They say that they “believe both in God and in Communism.” Such a view is fundamentally wrong; . . . Between the precepts of Communism and those of Christianity there is an impassable barrier.’ One of the rallying cries of the Soviet army is: ‘We have abolished God.’ . . . In the Communist organ “Pravda” (N. 28, 5V, 1923), a certain teacher named Vorona is praised because under his care the children ‘have become anti-Christians and atheists.’ . . . Communists are doing their best to widen the breach between the Modernists and the Fundamentalists. . . . **The sudden tremendous enthusiasm among the radicals for Evolution, carefully camouflaged as a love of scientific truth, needs only to be investigated a little to disclose the fact that it is led by sympathizers with the government (Russia) which has starved and murdered its scientific men until they are almost extinct. They use Evolution as a weapon for diversion and for undermining religious traditions.** . . . It is a matter of deep concern . . . that . . . clergymen should allow themselves to be used to build Communism, which aims to establish atheism. . . .

“Another way in which Communists are using the clergy is by securing their aid in working to disarm all nations which would oppose them. Two years ago the rulers at Moscow decreed that the anniversary of the beginning of the Great War should be celebrated in other countries as Peace Day. Hundreds of churches obediently set aside the chosen day for this celebration, with no idea that the order emanated from the country **which maintains the largest army in the world**. Armed Communism teaching the world peace through the Christian Clergy!

"It is a fact of sinister importance that those who assemble in mass meetings and demand that our country shall disarm **never** urge disarmament for Russia. Other countries—Poland, France, England, Italy, the United States—are bitterly criticized for maintaining armies. With these countries disarmed, the 'comrades' in Russia, with their **huge** Red army, could easily carry out their design for world-wide domination" (The Dearborn Independent, Jan. 9, 1926).

For many centuries Scripture has revealed that "in the latter days" **the great enemy** of the people of God and His kingdom would be Russia and her allies. History, combined with Scripture indicates that "the last days" are at hand. See pp. 55, 62, 71. And true to the prophecies of God, out of Russia arises the great menace, which as a dark, ominous cloud overshadows the world, prophetic of impending doom. Russia, today is the great enemy of God and governments. See "Wars and Rumors of War in the last days," pp. 107, 108. See this *prophecy concerning Russia in the footnote below.

"One well-known radical propagandist has stated that their most fertile field is the theological school! . . . A distinguished lawyer . . . said recently: . . . 'There are bishops, priests, and ministers of all the churches, preaching various forms of Socialism. So long as the churches lack the courage or common honesty to stop these knaves, or fools, from using their pulpits to promote the wholesale robbery and slavery called Socialism or Communism, I find more consistency and inspiration in my profession and business than I do in the churches.' . . .

"A distinguished English clergyman . . . says: 'The "internationalism" of today is a force that works . . . toward a **world-wide Class War**. . . . **Its business is the overthrow of humanity**.' . . . To the Clergymen of America, who are making of themselves mere relay stations of alien and anti-Christian propaganda, there remains this question: 'What concord hath Christ with Belial?' (M. C. Robinson in The Dearborn Independent, Jan. 9, 1926.)

*"Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against thee, O God, the chief prince of Meshech (Moscow) and Tubal: (Tobolsk) . . . **in the latter years** thou shalt come into the land that is brought back from the sword . . . against the mountains of Israel, . . . Thou shalt ascend and come like a storm, thou shalt be like a cloud to cover the land, thou, and all thy bands, and many people with thee. Thus saith the Lord God; It shall also come to pass, that at the same time shall things come into thy mind, and thou shalt think an evil thought: And thou shalt say, I will go up to the land of unwalled villages; . . . To take a spoil, and to take a prey; . . . Therefore, son of man, prophesy and say unto Gog, Thus saith the Lord God; In that day when my people of Israel dwelleth safely. . . . thou shalt come from thy place **out of the north** parts, thou, and many people with thee, all of them riding upon horses, a great company, and a mighty army: And thou shalt come up against my people of Israel, as a cloud to cover the land; **it shall be in the latter days**, . . . And it shall come to pass at the same time when Gog shall come against the land of Israel, saith the Lord God, that my fury shall come up in my face. For in my jealousy and in the fire of my wrath have I spoken, Surely in that day there shall be a great shaking in the land of Israel; . . . And I will plead against him with pestilence and with blood; and I will rain upon him, and upon his bands, and upon the many people that are with him, an overflowing of rain, and great hailstones, fire, and brimstone. Thus will I magnify myself, and sanctify myself; and I will be known in the eyes of many nations, and they shall know that I am the Lord" (Ezek. 38).

For centuries Scripture has revealed that "in the latter days" God would "regather" Israel to her own land; when regathered, "the army from the north" would swoop down like a "storm" "cloud" to destroy Israel. Present Russian hatred of the Jews is proverbial. Israel is "regathering" in Palestine. For centuries the prophecy of Ezekiel 38 has been understood by Bible scholars to refer to Russia, and true to prophecy, Russia is in preparation for the fulfillment of this prophecy. Prophecy and its fulfillment demonstrate that the Bible is the inspired Word of God. Scripture reveals that the world will be devil-looted, not evolved.

"Young men and women of the colored race are in **Russia** taking a three years' course of training for the **Russian 'diplomatic service.'** . . . For several months the Department of Justice has known that more than a hundred paid Communist workers have been steadily at work in the United States, and that some of them have been making a determined effort to enroll American Negro workers under the Soviet banner, with the idea of eventually staging a 'black revolution.' No attempt was made at the American Negro Labor Congress at Chicago to hide the fact that the movement is financed and directed from Moscow" (The Dearborn Independent, Jan. 23, 1926).

Their doctrine of **evolution** with its mask off is in reality, **revolution**, the undermining of government. What right has evolution to enter the school-room and college and undermine our government and destroy faith in the Bible on whose laws our jurisprudence system is founded?

OUR NATIONAL LIFE IN PERIL

"New York, the largest city in the world, is today a modern Babel and Babylon with conditions from some points of view that are horrible. We have taken time to study the city from a nearby range and have no hesitation when saying that she is going the pace that kills. What is worse she is casting a baleful influence over the rest of America. But for the remnant, the five or ten righteous persons, she would sink to hell before nightfall. Shelly, in his day, made this declaration: "Hell is a city like London.' Those who are familiar with some of our American cities, with equal fitness can say, Hell is a city like New York; or like Chicago, or like San Francisco, or like some parts of Boston." See pages 120-123, and there you will find evidence that New York and Chicago are two great centers of immorality in America; that they are undermining our government and our educational system; that they are wrecking the homes and churches and are destroying faith in the Bible and in Jesus Christ.

"Mrs. Johanna Gregg is a candidate for mayor of Chicago. What an opportunity for some able woman to achieve immortal fame by cleaning up **this modern Gomorrah!**" ("Capper's Weekly," Aug. 1, 1925). The word, "Gomorrah" stands for and is typical of the vilest and most bestial type of sin. Fine tribute for a city, isn't it?

Viscount BRYCE, late British Ambassador to the United States, to American business men: "Go back to the splendid world across the sea; but don't you make a failure of it. You cannot go on twenty-five years more in your great cities as you have been doing."

Fifty years ago Lord Macaulay predicted: "Our republic will be as fearfully plundered and laid waste by barbarians in the twentieth century as the Roman Empire was in the fifth."

"It is not wide of the mark to say that the world at large is a stranded ship on the point of breaking up. The world's inhabitants, with the exception of a remnant, are moving sometimes slowly, sometimes rapidly, but always towards irretrievable ruin" (Prof. Luther T. Townsend, D. D., S. T. D., M. V. I. in "C. of E.").

"Nations, in their foreign policies, are racing back and forth between sanity and suicide. Altogether it is a **time of earthquake, wind, and fire**" (Christian Work, pamphlet, 1925). They admit the world is facing wreckage, yet, modernism claims present conditions are the result of evolution. Scripture represents that they are the work of devil-lootion. "By their fruits ye shall know them."

THE CRIME CARNIVAL

" 'Current History,' a magazine published in New York, has published some startling and significant statistics concerning what is termed 'the crime wave,' which wave, by the way, seems to keep on waving. . . .

"**The High School** age seems to breed the larger percentage of criminals. The report given is not complete by any means, and this is attributed to the fact that 'statistics so far as they are kept at all, are kept in a desultory and fragmentary way which evokes the plainly expressed amazement of foreign criminologists.' . . .

("Jazz music, jazz pictures and jazz thinking are turning modern men, women and children back to the stages of barbarism, warned Prof. H. Augustine Smith.")

"From the statistics available, it appears that there was a 500 percent increase in burglaries in five years; a bank robbery every 19 hours; one automobile in 22 stolen in Chicago; 30,000 professional criminals in New York State alone, and 10,000 in Chicago, the latter city reporting \$4,000,000 stolen in 1921.

"The New York criminal docket is about a year and a half behind. Indictments pending in the Federal courts in 1921 numbered 70,000 as compared with 9,503 in 1912. Deducting the cases arising from the violation of Prohibition laws, this represents an increase of 332 per cent in ten years.

"From 1912 to 1918 there were 9,377 murders in our country, as compared with 50,327 deaths of American soldiers in the World War" (T. C. Horton).

"A study of 146 homicide cases has just been completed by one of the largest insurance companies in America. It finds that out of the 146 homicides, which included 114 manslaughter or murder cases, there was only one death penalty." Our governments are ceasing to function in executing judgment against crime.

"Report of the Chicago crime commission made . . . July 22 . . . 'No country, with the exception of Italy, comes near the United States in the murderous tendency of its people'."

"Here are a few surprising figures which should have a voice speaking with no uncertain sound to every loyal citizen. Are we growing better and better as they are telling us in so many pulpits and schools? Is humanity on the up-grade? Is the old nature steadily improving and sloughing off its inherent weakness and wickedness? Is there something the matter with our home life? Is there something the matter with our laws? Are we letting down in our estimate of what is moral? Are we drifting from the moorings of our fathers?

You must add to the amount of money stolen and property ruined and lives taken, the increased amount necessary to pay the police, the judges and the expense of penal institutions, and then **face an outstanding fact which grows worse every year.**

"Gentlemen, what is the remedy? They tell us that we must not believe God's Word which says, 'The soul that sinneth it shall die,' but we must intensify social service, give them more amusements, more socials, more movies, more gymnastics, more dances and all will be well. If this is the remedy we ought to know as quickly as possible. This wave of sin means a wave of sorrow and suffering, of broken homes and broken hearts" (T. C. Horton).

"Forgeries, according to insurance estimates, included in the report, may reach 100 million dollars for 1924."

"John E. McGeehan, district attorney of the Bronx, New York, . . . declared, '**the code of morals of the jungle inhabitants is higher than that of our boasted civilization**' " (The Kansas City Times, Mch. 7, 1925).

"The cost of crime in the United States has reached its highest point, **as much as the annual budget of the nation**, which was more than 3½ billion dollars, according to a report prepared by the protective committee of the American Banker's Association."

Dr. James G. Walsh, Cathedral College, N. Y., says, "**Man has not progressed. The unhappiest age of the world is right now.**"

"Is it time to trifle? We have made no moral progress with all this new-fangled system of religions. Our schools are not furnishing a higher standard of citizens. 'Higher culture' and 'Higher criticism' go hand in hand in the dance to hell. May God Almighty stop the procession, if it be possible, and may men turn back to the old paths and the old Book" (T. C. Horton).

"Faith in God, faith in the Bible and faith in its laws, on which all civilized jurisprudence is founded, are rapidly being swept away, so there is no restraining law or recognized accountability for sin (crime). Under the name of 'Capital' and 'Labor' do we have two ill-omened monsters that are stifling the life and driving our citizens into bondage. Do they 'boss' the government and 'run' its elections and 'make' its laws? The Standard Oil octopus as it tramples under foot everything in its path, illustrates the one view: the 'Herrin' dastardly unpunished crimes, illustrate the other view. Show us where either of these recognize God or His laws, or even man and his laws. When men, who neither reverence nor fear God nor His laws, sit as jurors, then you can look for ruined lives, ruined homes, a ruined commonwealth and a ruined world. As in all pages of past history the crest of human endeavor has been reached only to fall back into disintegration and death; so now, we are headed down hill. The only thing that will arrest ruin, is to turn to God, to the Bible and to law and righteousness" (An Observer).

THE BIBLE, THE FOUNDATION OF OUR GOVERNMENT

The foundations of our government were based on the laws of God as revealed in the Bible. "This is what I call the American Idea . . . a government of the principles of eternal justice, **the unchanging law of God**; for shortness' sake, I will call it the idea of freedom" (T. Parker, in 1850).

"THOU, too—sail on, O Ship of State!
Sail on, O Union, strong and great!
Humanity, with all its fears,
With all its hopes of future years,
Is hanging breathless on thy fate!
We know what Master laid thy keel,
What Workman wrought thy ribs of steel,
Who made each mast, and sail, and rope,
What anvils rang, what hammers beat,
In what a forge and what a heat
Were shaped the anchors of thy hope!"

—Longfellow.

"Fourscore and seven years ago our fathers brought forth upon this continent a new nation, conceived in liberty, and dedicated to the proposition that all men are **created** equal. . . . We here highly resolve . . . that this nation, **under God**, shall have a new birth of freedom" (Abraham Lincoln).

Our government was conceived and founded on the laws of the Bible and in recognition of and reverence for God as Creator, as Provider, as Protector, as Sovereign. The Kansas state preamble reads: "We the people of Kansas, grateful to Almighty God for our civil and religious privileges, etc." Thomas Jefferson in the Declaration of Independence says: "We hold these truths to be self-evident: that all men are **created** equal; that they are endowed by **their Creator** with certain inalienable rights; that among these are life, liberty, and the pursuit of happiness." Our government's birthday of independence declared: "We hold these truths to be **self-evident** that God has "**created**" and "**endowed**" all men, etc. And now "professors," modernist preachers and "scholars" who are in charge of the American boys and girls are daily instructing the children that God is **not** the **Creator**, that the Bible is a "tale" or "myth" etc. The very foundation stones are being undermined by those forces which effectually determine our future destiny. They teach, no God, no creation, no Bible, no accountability.

On our silver dollars, we inscribe, "In God we Trust," whereas God does not have a dimes worth of credit with, or trust from many a man. They don't even trust His sacred Word, or the account of His creation, or His Son, Jesus Christ, with the salvation of their souls. The anti-Bible, anti-God and anti-Christ "scholars," "scientists" and "teachers" are doing more at the present time to destroy confidence in the Bible and God than all the churches can do to establish faith. Christian men and women who are engaged in these lines should oust from their midst, these enemies of God and government. "Teachers and professors in schools, supported by public money, are turning the youth of the land out into a starless night, robbing them of their faith in immortality and a Heavenly Father, and substituting cold, clammy materialism which reduces Christ to a mere man, and gives Him an ape for an ancestor. The Darwinian theory is not scientific. It is wilder fiction than the Arabian nights."

Our civil government does not allow the Bible to defend itself or be taught in the public schools, but it allows any kind of a teacher or textbook to enter the school room, and teach that the Bible is false, thus undermining the foundations on which our homes, churches and commonwealth were founded. If the Bible is the Word of God, the child needs to know its pages, infinitely more than it needs to know all the other books combined. And the Bible's enemies should be expelled from the school room.

"President Grant said: '**Hold fast to the Bible as the sheet anchor of our liberties.** To the influence of this book we are indebted for all the progress made in true civilization and **to this we must look as our guide in the future.**'" . . .

"President Jefferson said: 'I always have said, and always will say, that the studious perusal of the sacred volume will make better citizens, better fathers, and better husbands,' . . .

"President Andrew Jackson said: '**THE BIBLE IS THE ROCK ON WHICH OUR REPUBLIC RESTS.**'" . . .

"President Benjamin Harrison said: 'If you take out of your statutes, your constitution, your family life, all that is taken from the Sacred Book, what would there be left to bind society together?' . . .

"President Wilson said: 'A man has deprived himself of the best there is in the world who has deprived himself of this (a knowledge of the Bible). There are a good many problems before the American people today, and before me as President, but I expect to find the solution of those problems just in the proportion that I am faithful in the study of the Word of God.' . . . (The evolutionist and modernist are going to solve our

problems by discarding the Bible. They say a man isn't half educated or is part imbecile, who believes the Bible.)

"President McKinley said: 'The more profoundly we study this wonderful book, and the more closely we observe its divine precepts, the better citizens we will become and the higher will be our destiny as a nation.' . . .

"President Harding said: '**The future of the nation cannot be trusted to the children**, unless their education includes their spiritual development. It is time, therefore, that we give attention to the religious instruction of the children of America.' . . .

"In a national appeal issued in 1904, and signed by Theodore Roosevelt, Grover Cleveland, Chief Justice Brewer, Justice Fuller, Chauncey M. Depew, William Jennings Bryan and many other leaders of note, we find the following: '**The social fabric of modern states has no surer foundation than the Bible**, especially in a republic like ours, which rests upon the moral character and educated judgment of the individual. No thoughtful man can doubt that to decrease the circulation and use of the Bible among the people would seriously menace the highest interests of civilized humanity.' . . .

"President Roosevelt said: 'Almost every man who has by his life-work added to the sum of human achievement of which the race is proud, of which our people are proud, almost every such man has based his life-work largely upon the teachings of the Bible' " (Moody Bulletin).

"I can conceive of no adequate remedy for the evils which beset society, except through the influences of religion" (President Coolidge).

Mothers and fathers of the commonwealth have been sitting idly by, while anti-Christ, anti-Bible, "pseudo-scholars" and "scientists" have gotten possession of both our secular and ecclesiastical educational systems. They are destroying faith in Jesus Christ and destroying faith in the Bible, and undermining the very foundations of our government for which our forefathers suffered, bled and died.

We need a law, immediately, prohibiting the teaching thru the medium of the public schools, colleges, universities, etc. that the Bible and its account of creation and accountability are false. Let's enact and enforce such a law at once. Beat back to law, to righteousness, to the Bible, to good government and to God. **The Bible is "the Word of God."**
This is the greatest issue of all the ages.

Section 11

SUMMARY OF CONTRASTS AND CONTRADICTIONS BETWEEN EVOLUTION AND THE BIBLE

"The evolution theory, in its broadest aspect, undertakes to explain the origin of the universe . . . material and immaterial" (Int. Encyc., on "Evolution," p. 221.)

TYPICAL EVOLUTION TEACHES: That the earth was formed, as per the nebular hypothesis or some similar method. See text books used in schools. It teaches that the substance now the earth, was once in a gaseous, then in a liquid state; that while in this condition it was whirling or rotating, as it radiated heat it gradually cooled, and finally a solid surface appeared. Evolution teaches that when water and land came together, a tiny protoplasmic cell came into being; from this life cell by a process of evolution, extending over untold ages of time, all of the existing forms of life developed; from low forms of brute life, man has finally evolved; and that the human race is now in a process of continuing this evolution until all its ills will vanish away and mankind will have attained perfection. Evolution teaches that all of this has occurred or will occur without God having anything, or practically anything to do with it.

There are all forms and degrees of evolutionists. We have dealt with the typical evolutionist, who doesn't pussy-foot around, but openly denies the Bible's account of creation, claiming it is a myth. Evolution, in substance, has as its foundation, the "nebular hypothesis," which translated means, a "cloudy guess." Would anyone with horse sense, stake the case of his soul on a mere guess? But when a man risks his soul's eternal welfare on a "**cloudy guess**," he certainly is not entitled to a hearing by thinking people, is he? Now, talking about mythology, if a "**cloudy guess**" isn't a myth, what is?

The infidel, Luther Burbank, who brags that he has helped fill men's stomachs with good things to eat for time, fails to mention the fact that he is evidently robbing many a man's soul of God for eternity. He is anti-Bible and therefore, anti-Christ. He is a typical evolutionist and expresses their views when he says, "Man . . . (is) traveling across the face of time . . . **we know not whither.**" Burbank says "science" is "our saviour" but admits that his saviour, "science" has nothing to offer a dying man, but monkey-mist and midnight. This infidel's grey hairs will soon be lowered into a grave of midnight.

Are you willing to have your loved ones and children be born, live, die and be lowered into the dark, imprisoning walls of a cold grave, with nothing but evolution, a myth or "cloudy guess," as an anchor for their souls thruout the eternal years?

"Bless the Lord, O my soul. O Lord my God, thou art very great; thou art clothed with honour and majesty. . . Who stretchest out the heavens like a curtain . . . Who laid the foundations of the earth, that it should not be removed for ever. . . O Lord, how manifold are thy works! in wisdom hast thou made them all: the earth is full of thy riches" (Ps. 104:1, 2, 5, 24).

"The heavens declare the glory of God; and the firmament sheweth His handywork. Day unto day uttereth speech, and night unto night sheweth knowledge. There is no speech nor language, where their voice is not heard. Their line is gone out through all the earth, and their words to the end of the world" (Ps. 19:1-4).

"Thou art worthy, O Lord, to receive glory and honour and power: for **thou hast created all things, and for thy pleasure they are and were created**" (Rev. 4:11).

"Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. **Is not the life more than meat**, and the body than raiment? Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? Which of you by taking thought can add one cubit unto his stature? And why take ye thought for raiment? Consider the lilies of the field, how they grow; they toil not, neither do they spin: And yet I say unto you, That even Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these. Wherefore, if God so clothe the grass of the field, which to day is, and to morrow is cast into the oven, shall he not much more clothe you, O ye of little faith?" (Matt. 6:25-30).

Now, see "The Sixth Day" of Creation, pp. 176-180. **Typical evolution absolutely denies everything God has said in His Word about creation.**

THE BIBLE TEACHES: That back in eternity, God existed. God is love. It is the nature of love, to desire objects to love, so God purposed to create objects to love—men, with whom He could have fellowship and to whom He could manifest His love. This necessitated similarity between God and man. So God planned to create man in **the image of God*, thus making fellowship and mutual love possible. In carrying out this purpose and plan "God **created** the heavens and **the earth**." God fitted the earth as a home for man. When this home was finished, it was an Eden. Then "God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them" (Gen. 1:27). A perfect pair had a perfect home and were living a life of perfect love with each other and toward God. God provided for them, cared for them and supplied all their daily needs ("Give us this day our daily bread"). Man was given dominion over the earth. Man rebelled, fell and became a sinner. As a result of man's sin and consequent degeneration, we have the beast type of man as evidenced by the cannibal, bush-man, cave-man, etc. As a result of man's sin and fall, God at once began executing a plan of redemption. In this plan of redemption, God has provided a Saviour for sinners, in the Person of His own Son, who left heaven and became incarnate as the God-man, the Lord Jesus Christ. In redemption, the Saviour substitutes for the sinner, paying the penalty for sin in his place and stead. And when the sinner realizes that he is lost and that sin is damning his soul, if he will turn to the Saviour and "believe on the Lord Jesus Christ," he shall be saved.

When one believes "that Jesus is the Christ" he "**is born of God**" (1 Jno. 5:1). The saved sinner is a **new creation** and has a new life (2 Cor. 5:17). Christ (Spirit Being) indwells the believer, as the result of regeneration. "Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your own selves. Know ye not your own selves, how that Jesus Christ

*A man's body is simply the house in which man lives. It was man, and not his body that was created in "the image" of God.

is in you, except ye be reprobates?" (2 Cor. 13:5). In redemption, Christ as our Saviour, indwells us to will and to do for us God's good pleasure (Phil. 2:13). Paul, living a victorious life, ascribed it to "Christ (who) liveth in me" (Gal. 2:20). "That Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith" (Eph. 3:17). Fallen man (once in God's image), who has turned to Christ, "**is being transformed into the image** of Him that created him (2 Cor. 3:18), "**until Christ be formed in you**" (Gal. 4:19). And redemption is not complete in this life. "We look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:

Who shall **change** our vile body, that it may be **fashioned like unto his glorious body**, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things unto himself." (Phil. 3:20-21).

This "change" occurs "in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye" (1 Cor. 15:50-55). It is not a process of evolution. When man is restored to the image of God, the Kingdom Age ended, and the final judgments executed, then God creates a new heaven and a new earth. Then, redemption will be complete and the earth will be back in an Eden condition.

Scripture sets forth that all phases of redemption, both for the individual and for the world are the direct result of God, personally intervening in human affairs. Evolution teaches that the world, its present condition and even man, himself, is the result of mere accident or chance in evolution and that if there is a God, He has seldom, if ever, intervened in human affairs.

ABSOLUTE CONFLICT BETWEEN THE BIBLE AND EVOLUTION

The Bible asserts that:

- (1) The account of creation is "the Word of God." "The Scripture cannot be broken."
- (2) The earth was created by God.
- (3) The sentient life on earth was created by God, each "after its kind."
- (4) Man is the result of a special creative act by God, which transpired in a short time.
- (5) At man's advent, he was the masterpiece of creation and all things on earth were subject to his dominion.
- (6) Man fell from "the image of God."
- (7) Man is born a sinner and needs a Saviour.
- (8) Jesus Christ was God, incarnate.
- (9) Jesus Christ was the Son of God, in a sense in which no other person was ever the Son of God.
- (10) The cure for the world's woes is the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ.
- (11) Jesus Christ "came down from heaven" (Jesus said, "I came down from heaven" Jno. 6:38).

Evolution claims that:

- (1) The Biblical account of creation is a myth.
- (2) The earth is the result of a sort of nebular evolution of substance.
- (3) All forms of life are the product of gradual evolution, from lower to higher forms and there is no such thing as species or "kind."
- (4) Man is the result of a long, continuous, evolutionary process extending over untold ages.
- (5) At man's advent, he was the lowest of life; later evolving from jellyfish kin, he became a wild beast; once on a level with brutes, he struggled, evolved, became superior and is now man of the "scientific" and "scholar" type. Let alone he will continue to evolve till he takes God from His throne and rules supreme.
- (6) Man has arisen from the image of the monkey.
- (7) Man is inherently all right and by social environment and science he will perfect himself.
- (8) Jesus Christ was a mere man.
- (9) Jesus Christ was the son of God, in a sense in which all men are sons of God.
- (10) The cure for the world's woes is social service and science.
- (11) Jesus Christ came up from the life of the slime and ooze of the sea bed, and evolved "A child of his time."

The Bible and evolution are **diametrically** opposed to each other in all those vital, fundamental points, upon which the foundations of Christianity rest.

PERSON AND WORK OF THE LORD JESUS CHRIST

Typical evolution teaches that Jesus Christ was a mere man, but that in evolving He attained greater perfection than the ordinary man. Because of this, His value to the human race lies in His great social teachings.

The Sacred Scriptures set forth that Jesus Christ:

(1) Is the **CREATOR**. "In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. . . .

"All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. . . .

"And the Word (Jesus Christ) was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father), full of grace and truth" (Jno. 1:1, 3, 14).

(2) He is a Divine Redeemer. See pages 8-15, 46, 176.

(3) He is **"THE HEAD OF THE CHURCH."** "For the husband is the head of the wife, even as Christ is the head of the church; and he is the Saviour of the body" (Eph. 5:23).

"Jesus Christ, who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature:

"For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him:

"And he is before all things, and by him all things consist:

"And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the pre-eminence" (Col. 1:15-18).

(4) He will **RAISE THE DEAD**. "All men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which hath sent him.

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life.

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live.

"For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself;

"And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man.

"Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice,

"And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation" (Jno. 5:23-29).

(5) He is **THE JUDGE OF ALL THE EARTH**. "For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son" (Jno. 5:22).

"Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead" (Acts 17:31).

"In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel" (Rom. 2:16).

The preceding is a word photograph of the Son of God, the world's Redeemer. Evolution and modernism deny the Word of God in this matter and are diametrically opposed to the Person and work of the Lord Jesus Christ, as set forth in Scripture.

THE RISE OF MAN AS PER EVOLUTION

versus

The Fall of Man as per "the Word of God"

The first chapters of Genesis set forth that God created man in His own image; that Adam was the first man; that he was given dominion over the earth by God; that Satan tempted man and he fell, and the defiled earth was cursed. The three outstanding results of all of this are: (1) that man is a sinner and needs a Saviour; (2) that the government of the earth was usurped by Satan, who uses sinful man as an instrument to carry on unrighteousness; (3) that the earth went under curse and is now defiled by sin.

As we have seen, the Bible is a revelation to man by God, concerning redemption. The central facts of redemption are: (1) Christ was crucified for the sins of the world; (2) Christ will be crowned King of kings over the earth and govern it in righteousness for God; (3) Christ will re-create the earth, defiled by sin.

The Old and the New Testament confirm each other and both set forth the fact that sin entered the world by one act of one man, Adam and his fall, and that sin will be removed from the world by one act of one other man, Jesus Christ, who by His death on the cross bore the punishment for the sins of the world.

THE WHOLE PLAN OF REDEMPTION, AS SET FORTH IN BOTH THE OLD AND THE NEW TESTAMENT, IS BASED ON AND DEPENDENT UPON THE FOUNDATIONAL FACTS SET FORTH IN THE FIRST CHAPTERS OF GENESIS. It is therefore, a vital issue and affects the eternal welfare of both the individual and the race, as to whether the early chapters of Genesis are simply "myths" as the evolutionist and modernist claim, or whether they are the great eternal foundational facts of redemption, the very "Word of God." If the book of Genesis is a myth, then the New Testament and Christianity, as set forth therein are myths and they should be discarded, as has been done by the typical modernist and evolutionist. If the book of Genesis is "the Word of God" and man's eternal redemption is dependent upon the facts contained therein, then the Bible should be fought for and its enemies deprived of the right to destroy the faith of your boy or girl in "the Word of God," and in His account of creation and plan of redemption. THE GREATEST ISSUE OF ALL THE AGES IS THE ISSUE AS TO WHETHER THE BIBLE IS "THE WORD OF GOD" OR THE TRADITION OF MEN.

Jesus Christ is the central figure in the Bible's plan of redemption. According to scripture, all forms and phases of doctrines or teachings that oppose the Bible or Jesus Christ are anti-Christ and therefore born of the devil. They are instigated and propagated by Satan, through human agencies, the objective being to continue the present unrighteous reign over the earth and prevent the setting up of the kingdom of heaven on earth.

"WHAT SAITH THE SCRIPTURES?"**"To the law and to the testimony"****The Old Testament teaches that:**

- (1) "In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth" (Gen. 1:1).
- (2) "God created man in His own image" (Gen. 1:27).
- (3) "That old serpent, called the Devil . . . beguiled me" (Rev. 12:9; Gen. 3:13).
- (4) "The imagination of man's heart is evil from his youth" (Gen. 8:21).

The New Testament teaches that:

- (1) "God . . . created all things" (Eph. 3:9). "O Lord . . . thou hast created all things" (Rev. 4:11).
- (2) "Men . . . made after the similitude of God" (Jas. 3:9).
- (3) "I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted" (2 Cor. 11:3).
- (4) "There is none righteous, no not one . . . all have sinned" (Rom. 3:10-23).

These New Testament Scriptures confirm the Genesis' account of the creation of the heavens and the earth; of man's creation in the image of God; and of man's temptation, fall and consequent sinful state.

"God, who at sundry times and in divers manners spake in time past unto the fathers by the prophets,

"Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom also he made the worlds" (Heb. 1:1-2). This New Testament Scripture asserts that God has spoken to man, through the prophets of the Old Testament.

Jesus said, "But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female" (Mk. 10:6). In this New Testament Scripture, Jesus Christ, who was God incarnate, asserts that the Genesis' account of the creation of man, in "the beginning," is a fact.

"By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh" (Heb. 11:4). This New Testament Scripture asserts that the Genesis' account of Cain and Abel is a fact.

"By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God" (Heb. 11:5). This New Testament Scripture asserts that the Genesis' account of the translation of Enoch is a fact.

"By faith Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith" (Heb. 11:7). This New Testament Scripture asserts that the Genesis' accounts of Noah and the ark are facts.

"The God of glory appeared unto our father Abraham. . . .

"And said unto him, Get thee out of thy country, and from thy kindred, and come into the land which I shall shew thee" (Acts 7:2-3). This New Testament Scripture asserts that the Genesis' account of the call of Abraham, by God, is a fact.

"There appeared to him (Moses). . . . an angel of the Lord in a flame of fire in a bush. . . .

"Then said the Lord to him, Put off thy shoes from thy feet: for the place where thou standest is holy ground.

"I have seen, I have seen the affliction of my people which is in Egypt, and I have heard their groaning, and am come down to deliver them. And now come, I will send thee into Egypt" (Acts 7:30-36). This New Testament Scripture asserts that the Pentateuch's account of

the call of Moses, by God, to deliver the children of Israel, is a fact.

Scripture is like the rock of Gibraltar. It refuses to break when you strike at any fundamental fact in the Bible. #Deny a fundamental fact in the Old Testament, and you are forced to deny it in the New Testament. Many people have a false notion that they can accept the New Testament, yet deny the Old Testament. Both Testaments are integral intricately, interwoven parts of a complete revelation by God to man, concerning the **creation, fall and redemption** of man.

One frequently hears from some professed preacher or teacher of the Bible, this satanic, siren song, "There is no conflict between evolution and the Bible or Christianity." A man with both ears batted down and both eyes knocked out ought to be able to see that evolution denies the vital, fundamental teachings of Christianity, as set forth in Scripture. Evolution sweeps away God's account of creation and man's fall, as set forth in Genesis, and blatantly asserts that these accounts are unreliable, contradictory, allegorical or mythical. It asserts that the world and its life came into existence by evolution and **not** by creation; that man was **not** created in God's image; *that Adam was **not** the first man and that sin didn't enter the world by Adam's fall.

Notice that the following New Testament Scripture denies these contentions and assertions of evolution.

"Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned:

"(For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law.

"Nevertheless, death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come.

"But not as the offence, so also is the free gift: for if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many.

"And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift: for the judgment was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is of many offences unto justification.

"For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.)

"Therefore, as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life.

"For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous" (Rom. 5:12-19).

"For since by man came death, by man came also the resurrection of the dead.

"For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive. . . .

"And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last man Adam was made a quickening spirit.

"Howbeit that was not first which is spiritual, but that which is natural; and afterward that which is spiritual.

#Therefore, typical modernism or liberalism, which opposes fundamentalism, doesn't have a Biblical foundation.

*Statements made by historians or scientists to the effect that Adam was not the first man, are without any proper foundation of facts to justify their claims. There are no documents in existence that are sufficient in number and properly authentic in character and of proper contents to enable anyone to establish it as a fact, that any man ever lived before Adam. In profane literature, there is nothing but the most meager, unauthentic, historical

"The first man **is** of the earth, earthy: the second man **is** the Lord from heaven. . . .

"And as we have borne the image of the earthy (Adam), we shall also bear the image of the heavenly (Jesus Christ)" (1 Cor. 15:21-22, 45-47, 49).

Scripture sets forth that "the first man Adam" was the product of **creation** and that the "last Adam" was the product of **incarnation**. Both are the result of special, distinct, Divine acts.

Christianity has its gospel of redemption resting on facts set forth in the New Testament, **whose foundations are deeply embedded in the Old Testament**. From the preceding Scriptures and facts, you will note that **the New Testament confirms the Old Testament** and teaches that God is the Creator of all things; that man was created in the image of God; that Adam was the "first man," that Adam was tempted by Satan and fell; that sin entered the world **AS RECORDED IN GENESIS**, by one act of one man, Adam and his fall; and that man is a sinner and needs a Saviour, the Christ, who by one act, His death on the cross "bare our sins."

(1) "For we which have believed do enter into rest, as he said, As I have sworn in my wrath, if they shall enter into my rest: although the works were finished from the foundation of the world.

"For he spake in a certain place of the seventh day on this wise, And God did rest the seventh day from all his works" (Heb. 4:3-4) The New Testament asserts that God rested **on "the seventh day"**. "from all His works," **as recorded in Genesis**.

(2) "For the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man.

"Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man" (1 Cor. 11:8-9). The New Testament asserts that it is a historical fact that Adam came into existence **before Eve, as recorded in Genesis**.

(3) "But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty, so your minds should be corrupted from the simplicity that is in Christ" (2 Cor. 11:3). The New Testament asserts that the temptation that resulted in Adam's fall was a direct result of Satan, working through the serpent, **as recorded in Genesis**.

(4) "God hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation:

"That they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us:

"For in him we live, and move, and have our being" (Acts 17:26-28) (See Weymouth's translation.) The New Testament asserts that Adam was the father of the human race, and that the nations were derived from his descendants, **as recorded in Genesis**.

Man lives and moves and has his being in God, not in the accidents of evolution. Man's blood has its kinship in "the first man, Adam" and not in the monkey, as per the test tube of pseudo-science. Search the New Testament Scriptures and you will find that **each reference to the Genesis' account of creation and man's fall is treated as an absolute fact. THESE FACTS, SET FORTH IN GENESIS, are the FOUNDATIONS ON WHICH THE ENTIRE PLAN OF REDEMPTION RESTS.**

data in existence, concerning man prior to the time of Noah. The Scriptures, which "cannot be broken" set forth that Adam was "the first man." That settles the subject, for it is "the Word of God." Science can delve and the excavator can dig, but they will never overthrow the truth of the Bible, for it is "the Word of God," which "shall stand forever."

God's plan of redemption, as set forth in Scripture asserts that sin entered the world by one act of "the first man Adam" and that its penalty is removed by one act of one other man, Jesus Christ. Deny the account of the creation of man in the image of God and the entrance of sin into the world by "the first man Adam" and you deny that there is any redemption in Christ Jesus. Typical evolution denies this account of creation; denies that Adam was "the first man;" denies that sin entered the world by Adam, **and therefore denies that Jesus Christ is the Redeemer.** Denying that Jesus Christ is the Redeemer, evolution therefore denies **all three** of the great cardinal climaxes in redemption, that the holy Scriptures set forth that Jesus Christ, as Saviour, is to accomplish: namely, (1) Christ's death on the cross for the sin of the world; (2) Christ will be crowned King of kings, the government will be upon His shoulder and He will rule the earth in righteousness; (3) Christ will complete redemption by re-creating the earth, defiled by sin. See p. 100. All Scripture points to or clusters around these three great, cardinal climaxes in redemption. Denying these three great climaxes in redemption, **evolution therefore denies the entire Bible.**

"AND GOD PURPOSED THROUGH HIM (CHRIST) TO RECONCILE THE UNIVERSE TO HIMSELF" "having made peace through the blood of His cross" "to reconcile to Himself through Him, I say, things on earth and things in heaven" (Col. 1:20, King James and Weymouth Versions). "The purposes which He has cherished in His own mind, of restoring **the whole creation** to find its one Head in Christ; yes, **things in Heaven** and **things on earth**, to find their **one Head** in Him" (Eph. 1:10, Weymouth Version).

The typical modernists and evolutionists, like the hypocritical scribes and Pharisees, deny and try to "make void the Word of God" by human traditions and "myths." Stripped of their satanic garb and camouflage, **they are simply deniers of "the Word of God," from start to finish.** They seek to and **do** destroy faith in the Bible and in the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ.

Some day the God of heaven will come taking vengeance on those who know not God and refuse to obey the Gospel of the Lord Jesus Christ. He will forever stop the mouths of those false teachers, who assert that "there is no conflict between evolution and the Bible or Christianity." "They do err, **not knowing** the Scriptures nor the power of God" (Matt. 22:29). They are "blind leaders of the blind," preachers of "another gospel." They rob boys and girls and men and women of faith in God, of faith in His precious Word and of faith in Jesus Christ, on whom their hope for eternity depends. At death's door, they send them out into the night, into "the blackness of darkness forever," without hope, without Christ, and without God. Is anything gained by sealing the doom of one's soul in order to become a devotee of evolution? "Take heed that no man deceive you." If you are a modernist or an evolutionist, you are trifling with "the Word of God" and you are trifling with precious human souls that will be lost throughout eternity.

AND IT IS NOT GOD'S WILL THAT THEY SHOULD PERISH

"For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life" (Jno. 3:16).

The word "lost" is the death cry of the doomed. It is the most awful word in human language. Lost and **lost throughout eternity.** This is the lot of the one who "tramples under foot the Son of God" and counts the "blood of the covenant" an unholy thing. In the silent

cities of the dead, across teeming thousands of cold grave stones, should be written that lone, desolate word "lost." "Lost":—sad, mournful sound—no note of joy, no sound of victory. Out—out . . .—out . . . —far **out** on the great ocean—midnight—no gleam of light, no compass to guide—**LOST**—**lost**—lost. God gone . . . and **gone forever**.

Do you want your loved ones, at death's door, to anchor the hope of their soul for eternity on the "cloudy guess" of the evolutionist, or do you want them to anchor their soul in the Rock of Ages and in the precious Word of God, which "shall stand forever?" **"THE WORD OF OUR GOD SHALL STAND FOREVER."**

No wonder that humble man of God, the apostle, Paul, died fighting for "the Word of God" and in defense of the "faith," which was once for all delivered unto the saints. He fought a good fight. He "finished (his) course." He "kept the faith."

"For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain salvation by our Lord Jesus Christ.

"Who died for us, that, whether we wake or sleep, we should live together with him" (1 Thess. 5:9-10).

Where are you going when you close your eyes in death? Where are your loved ones going? **Where are you going to spend eternity?**

"PREPARE TO MEET THY GOD"

"Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved." Who says so? God says so. I believe. Amen.

"In the cross of Christ I glory,
Tow'ring o'er the wrecks of time;
All the light of sacred story
Gathers round its head sublime."

"Love of God, so pure and changeless,
Blood of Christ so rich and free,
Grace of God, so strong and boundless
Magnify them all in me."—In Jesus Name, Amen.

Section 12

WHAT ARE YOU GOING TO DO ABOUT IT?

Let us keep "the faith," and in the hour of death may you and your loved ones be found clinging to Jesus Christ who "bare our sins" on the cross, instead of clinging to the beclouded guess of evolution. We have never seen a defender of typical evolution, even though he had a D.D. after his name, whose writings or teachings on Christianity gave evidence that he believed the Scriptures and could pass a decent examination on the subject of redemption, as set forth therein. When we make this statement, we have in mind some men, who are unquestionably regenerated, Christians. Some would term them scholarly. Some of them hold prominent places in the confidence of the public, yet they are lacking in a clear, well-defined grip on the things of redemption and are carried away with forms of modernism, evolution, etc. Whether the devotees of evolution will admit it or not, yet the facts remain, that **typical evolution not only denies everything God has said in His Word about creation (see pp. 176, 277-286), but it denies everything God has said in His Word about redemption.**

Evolution and the Bible are diametrically opposed to each other. One of them is necessarily wrong. What right has wrong to ask for toleration, or insist on the privilege of propagating itself, especially when wrong or evolution destroys one's faith in "the Word of God" and the Lord Jesus Christ, on whom one's hope for eternity absolutely depends? "Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved" (Acts 4:12). What right has the robber to ask for toleration, yet he demands it? What right does modernism or evolution have to rob your boy or girl of faith in Jesus Christ and a home in heaven? What do you think of a man who will take any chance on his son or daughter losing their souls by allowing himself to become a devotee or defender of modernism or evolution? There are some things in life that absolutely must not be tolerated and there are some interests of your children that absolutely must not be trifled with. "Awake thou that sleepest! Arise!" Fight for their lives and your life. If you tarry, it will be "too late," and they will be lost throughout eternity. If you are a pastor and a "watchman" will their blood be required at your hands?

Evolution, in its opposition to the Bible, the Lord Jesus Christ and government (the enforcement of law), is in mighty bad company. The whoremongers, harlots, drunkards, thieves, murderers, and the wretched, lawless wrecks of the human race (including those in high society as well as low society), and apostate preachers and teachers—all believe in evolution. Have you associated yourself with this gang, who oppose the Bible, who oppose Jesus Christ, and who oppose the redemption that God offers to your loved ones through Christ Jesus?

What are you going to do when some newspaper or magazine comes into your home containing articles which attack the Bible and discredit its teachings concerning creation and redemption, while they set forth the doctrines of evolution and modernism? What are you going to do when a text book attacking the Bible and teaching evolution is forced

upon your son or daughter, as a daily study book in the school room? What are you going to do when some misguided or uninformed preacher or teacher, or some son of the devil, undertakes to get hold of your son or daughter under the protection of the school room or the church or elsewhere, and teaches them that evolution is a fact and that the foundational revelations of redemption, as set forth in Scripture are myths? The issue is eternal life or eternal death for your loved ones and **what are YOU going to DO about it?** "Now is the accepted time" to act; Tomorrow may be **TOO LATE!**

If you have charge of school, church or city affairs; or if you have charge of state or national affairs, isn't it your bounden duty to protect the individual life of the commonwealth from eternal danger and injury as well as material danger and injury? Doesn't the very fact that authority is vested in you, necessarily obligate you to squarely and fearlessly face the issues and do the right, as God gives you to see the right?

"But if the watchman see the sword come, and blow not the trumpet, and the people be not warned; if the sword come, and take **any** person from among them, he is taken away in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at the watchman's hand" (Ezek. 33:6).

"The Scripture **cannot** be broken." It is "**the Word of God.**" Who said so? The Lord Jesus Christ, Who was God incarnate. (Jno. 10:35; Mk. 7:13.) And what are you going to do about it?

"For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life" (Jno. 3:16). What are **you** going to **do** with Jesus, which is called Christ?

"Christ Jesus: Whom God hath set forth to be a propitiation (substitute sacrifice) **through faith in His blood**" (Rom. 3:24-25). What are **you** going to **do** about it?

"The government shall be upon His (Christ's) shoulder: and His name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of His government and peace there shall be no end" (Isa. 9:6-7). And what are **you** going to **do** about it?

"A King shall reign in righteousness" (Isa. 32:1). "The earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea" (Isa. 11:9).

"**And God purposed through (Christ) to reconcile the universe to Himself . . . things on earth and things in heaven**" (Col. 1:20, Weymouth translation). Who said so? God said so. And what are you going to do about it?

Christ came to die;
He died to save;
He lives to keep;
He comes to reign.

Praise God, the Father! Praise God, the Son! Praise God, the Holy Ghost!

Preach it. Teach it. Tell it wherever you go.

Either stick to the Bible or step out of the pulpit.

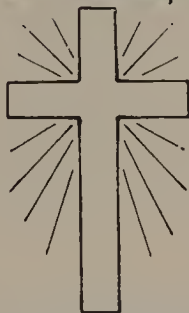
Away with the fakes of "evolution" and its monkey-mist. Away with the falsehoods of "modernism" and its midnight. Under the leadership of false preachers, false teachers, pseudo-scientists, anti-christs, etc., teeming millions are dying—going out into doomed eternities, without

Christ and without God—lost and **lost forever**. And what are **you** going to **do** about it?

The Lord Jesus Christ commanded: “Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to **every** creature” (Mk. 16:15). Multitudes perish in midnight. God is “not willing that **any** should perish.” The Lord’s command is, “Go, **go**, GO . . . go to **every** creature.” You pass the lost by on every hand, every day—“Go,” get the gospel to them—to “**every** creature” of them. God means exactly what He says. He is talking to **you**. He expects you to obey His command.

“ONLY ONE LIFE
'Twill soon be past
Only what's done for Christ
WILL LAST.”

“It is Finished”



Christ was
Crucified
at His “First”
Coming

“Having made peace thru the Blood of His Cross”
Jo. 19-20-Col. 1-20

“In the cross of Christ I glory,
Tow’ring o’er the wrecks of time;
All the light of sacred story
Gathers ’round its head sublime.”

“It is Done”

Christ to be
Crowned King
at His “Second”
Coming.



“The kingdoms of this world are (to) become
the kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ; and
He shall reign for ever and ever.”

—Rev. 16:17; Rev. 11:15.

"All hail the pow'r of Jesus' name,
Let angels prostrate fall;
Bring forth the royal diadem,
And crown Him Lord of all.

Let every kindred, every tribe,
On this terrestrial ball,
To Him all majesty ascribe,
And crown Him Lord of all."

Amen!



Carefully study and re-read this volume a number of times. The more frequently and prayerfully this is done, the better the wonderful Word of God and truths of God will be seen and understood. **"Search the Scriptures."** **Know the truth.** "The truth shall make you free" (Jno. 8:32). Place this volume in the hands of **all** preachers, **all** teachers and **all** men everywhere. Get "the gospel" out to **"every creature"** that all men everywhere may learn to know Christ, Whom to know is to love: Whom to know is to long to be like: Whom to know is to have life eternal. (Jno. 17:3). Amen!

Volume II of this series of books should be secured and studied in connection with this volume, but will likely not be off the press till late in the year 1927 or possibly 1928, D. V.

Volume II takes up the subject of "A Detailed Exposition of the Biblical Account of Creation" and deals with such subjects as, "The Innocency of Man in Eden"; "The Temptation"; "The Fall" of Man; Man Exchanged Government by God in Eden for Government by Satan in "the world"; "The Saviour"; "Satan"; Proofs of Satan's Existence, his Work and his Methods; Satan's Origin, Personality and Position; Satan's Pre-Existence and his Advent on Earth as an Enemy of God and man; Satan as a Destroyer; Satan's "Works" and Finished Products as Evidenced by the Wretched Wrecks of the Human Race; Accountability for Sin; Consequences of Sin; Earliest Revelation to Man Concerning the Ground and Means of Redemption; Deliverance from the Consequences and Habit of Sin; Satan's Relations to "The Kingdom of Heaven"; Satan Undermines and Destroys every "Nation"; Contrasts between Satan and the Saviour; "Cain" and "Abel"; Two Kinds of People on Earth—"sons of God" and "sons of the devil." Therefore, God administers justice from two thrones—"A Throne of Grace" and "A Throne of Judgment." God Provided Salvation for the Sinner before the Creation of Man; The Progress and Price of Sin; The Way of Life and the Way of Death; Where Cain Got His Wife; The Flood; The Call and Commission of Noah; "The Ark"; The Cargo Intended for "the Ark"; The Course and History of "the Flood"; Seven Proofs of the Fact of the Flood; The Story of "the Flood" Preserved and Handed Down by the Descendants of the Flood; All Races of Mankind are Descendants of Shem, Ham and Japheth, who were "the sons of Noah"; A Proper Method of Obtaining and Presenting the Facts of History; The Extent of the Flood; After the Flood, Mankind Had a New Start in a New World; The Noahic Constitution for the Kingdom on Earth to be Governed for God; Human Government; The "Token" of God's "Covenant" with Noah; "The Fall" of Noah; What Did Noah's Sons Know about Creation, the Temptation in the Garden of Eden, the Flood, the Laws of God, and the Ground and Means of Redemption?; The Dispersion of Knowledge; The Ages of the Antediluvians; How did Moses Know?; The Origin of Man; The Age of Man; The Tower of Babel and its Significance; The Birth of the Nations; The Dispersion of the Races, etc.

Vol. II closes with a "Mosaic Summary" which assembles and sets forth evidence establishing the fact that the Bible is the inspired "Word of God," and that Moses necessarily wrote with a head and a hand that was guided by God. "With God all things are possible." "For ever, O Lord, thy word is settled in heaven."

SPECIAL

"IT IS FINISHED" EDITION OF THE GOSPEL OF JOHN

By JAMES E. ELY

This special edition of the Gospel of John sets forth the **finished** work of Christ on the cross for the sinner. Price, 5 cents each; 45 cents per dozen, postage paid.

"It Is Finished"



"Having made peace through the Blood of His Cross"
Jo. 19-30-Col. 1-20

Things people say about this special Gospel of John:

It "contains notes worth their weight in gold."

"The best I have ever seen."

"Meeting the need of the intelligent inquirer . . . as no others we have come across."

"The best, most concise wonderful compilation of truth I have ever seen."

"The grandest book I ever read for explaining 'God's Word' "

"A splendid little piece of work . . . The way of God in regards to salvation is made exceedingly plain. May this edition prove to be the means of innumerable conversions to His glory."

"Enjoyed many outlines and explanations of salvation, but I believe your notes on the Gospel of John are the best, simplest and clearest of all I have seen." Then be sure to get copies at once for your friends and loved ones.

"The best I ever saw . . . so plain and clear, a child could understand it." Then see that every child has a copy.

"The one thing you find in the perusal of this wonderful little book is the work is finished. Hallelujah! You find yourself lifted into His presence."

"Not one thing that is not according to the Word of God in it."

"I have been recommending them to everyone I meet . . . Give them to preachers as well as others with the remark that they are the best thing of their kind I have seen. . . . I like to give them to young converts as they contain so much that is helpful and suggestive for beginners in the Christian life. Any young convert reading them carefully will gain more real knowledge of what is essential to the Christian life than any other arrangement of the Gospel of John ever seen and I have used in my open air work and evangelistic work many emphasized editions of the Gospel of John. We like to use them on the streets to give out to people who are interested. . . . I am sure that all who read them carefully will have a clear conviction of saving truth for it is made as clear as a, b, c.

... In the notes accompanying the text many of the great doctrines of the Bible are given a most helpful and practical exposition."

The one I hold "in my hand, alone, is priceless to me."

"God alone knows how much it has meant to me."

"Effective in bringing consciousness of guilt and need of Christ."

"As I look thru the book, I must thank God . . . that a poor ignorant sinner may find eternal life in the Lamb of God, who taketh away the sins of the world." Then quickly place copies in the hands of "the lost" before they perish.

"I was in great grief over temptation and I was in agony and darkness, but picked up this little book and directly light and deliverance came; with it **much** peace and joy. I praise God for this little book."

"I picked a little book up in the street, 'It Is Finished' . . . It certainly did me a lot of good."

"One dear shut-in said . . . 'It has been the greatest blessing to me of anything I have ever read.' Then give the "shut-ins" copies.

"My aunt . . . a Sunday School . . . teacher wrote me that one of her girls had a nervous breakdown and all she wanted to take to the sanitarium with her was the little Gospel."

"Just what not only the saved but the unsaved need."

"A friend of mine in Canada, an old man of 90 years, has his nurse read your Gospel of John every day almost. He is a rich childless man, lived for nothing but money and couldn't talk of anything else; worried to death about what will become of it when he passes, etc., but thank the dear Lord, he is reading your book." See that the sick have copies.

"I am going to read that book until I die because it's been so precious to me."

"One of my leading church members went home to Glory . . . he lingered for several weeks . . . he read this Gospel of John many days and remarked to me many times, 'If I could have had something like this many years ago I would be stronger in the faith'." See that the dying have copies.

"A wonderful message . . . I would be glad to undertake to send out 100 to Methodist pastors in Philadelphia and vicinity."

"Please let me have 300 of the Gospels of John for our Sunday School."

"I am organizing a class for Bible study. We will use this little book."

"Wonderfully suited for the Jews . . . I wish I had the money I would put a million Gospels into the hands of the Jews in Greater New York." Then place a copy in the hands of every Jew, that they may know Christ.

"They are wonderful. Our pastor . . . told me to write you and ask you how much it would cost to secure ten thousand copies of the Gospels . . . to distribute all over the city . . . on National Defense Day."

"After leading a soul to Christ (it) is one of the best things to put in their hands." Then see that the new converts each have a copy.

"These last three weeks . . . quite a number have given their hearts to Jesus thru reading your book."

"I decided to begin a fund to secure at least 10,000."

"Some one gave me a copy of your book 'It Is Finished' the Gospel of John and it has been a great blessing to me. I have read it thru many times, and find a hidden gem each time. In fact, I read from it almost every day. The footnotes are wonderful . . . I can think of no better work than passing out the book of John, 'It Is Finished' and your other books."

It "should be distributed to the ends of the earth." Then see that all men everywhere get copies of the "It Is Finished" Gospel of John.

Christ commanded, "**Go ye into all the world** and preach the gospel to **every** creature" (Mk. 16:15). Jesus meant exactly what He said. Why? Because "the world" is **lost**. They are lost **now**. "Your sins have separated between you and your God" (Isa. 59:2). Who says so? God says so! Teeming millions lie in the midnight darkness of eternal death, because they are without Christ, as Saviour. They are hell-bound—headed to an eternal separation from God, under an eternal curse. Tomorrow's sun will rise on thousands of them, who have died and gone out into eternity, hopelessly doomed forever. Have you no concern for their souls? Will you stand idly by with folded hands while all the inmates of the burning building meet a horrible death? My God! Thousands of Christians and so-called Christians stand idly by, while "the lost" daily die about them and go out to meet their awful doom. They wilfully let them perish in the sea of sin. They do not do practically one thing to get a "life saver" to them. They refuse to get the Gospel out to "**every** creature." Will their blood be upon your hands? It's the mission of the Businessman's Gospel Association to belt the globe with the Gospel in an effort to literally get "the Gospel" out to "**every** creature." We need hundreds of thousands and millions of dollars to carry on this work. We are unable to meet the ever-pressing needs. To what extent will you finance this world-wide program of getting the Gospel out to the lost for the sake of Jesus, Who died for you and Who is "not willing that any should perish."

For \$27,000 we will place for you 1,000,000 of these Gospels of John.
For \$2,800 we will place for you 100,000 of these Gospels of John.
For \$300 we will place for you 10,000 of these Gospels of John.

If you desire to finance a smaller number of these Gospels of John, we will place them for you at the last named rate. **Make a big investment that will last thru time and thru eternity. DO IT NOW.** The lost are dying daily. For many, "tomorrow" will be "**too late.**" Pray for this work, for the workers and for funds to carry on. Amen.

BUSINESSMAN'S GOSPEL ASSOCIATION

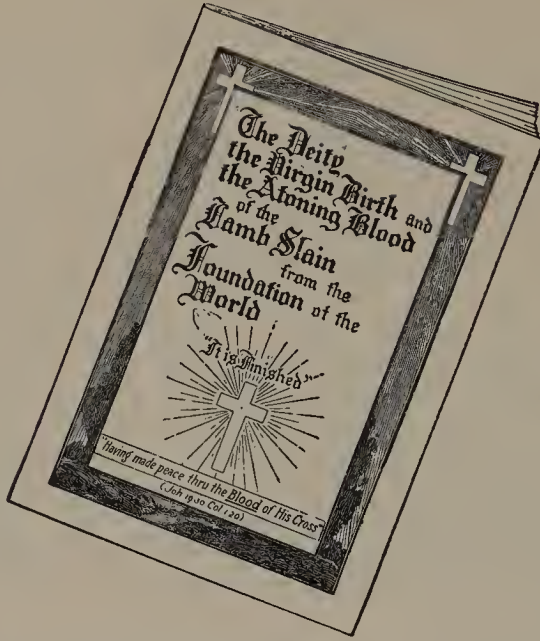
Garden City Office

Garden City, Kansas, United States of America

WAS CHRIST VIRGIN BORN?

Read "The Deity, the Virgin Birth, and the Atoning Blood of the Lamb Slain From the Foundation of the World"

By JAMES E. ELY



Things people say about this booklet:

"Just finished reading the Virgin Birth. I surely praise God it was placed in my hands."

"The most blessedly comprehensive and convicting that I have yet seen."

"Your booklet on the Virgin Birth is especially illuminating and inspiring."

"Excellent." "It's safe and sound."

"In these brief pages 'the matter' has been presented 'so clearly and scripturally . . . that rationalists are left without excuse if they continue to abide in unbelief . . . I hope that it may have a wide circulation and careful reading'."

"The Episcopal minister with his wife read through 'The Deity, the Virgin Birth,' etc., and were so much pleased that she recommended it for the next book we study in our little prayer league."

"In these days of so much apostasy and false teaching in schools, colleges, pulpits, and publications, this is a message that is very, very greatly needed to be distributed among the people."

This book has cleared doubts, cured skepticism, and blessed multitudes. If you want to know the truth you will find it set forth in a surprisingly brief, clear and simple way in this book.

Place this Gospel message in the hands of every preacher, every Sunday School teacher and all men everywhere. Every man and woman and every boy and girl should carefully read and study its twenty-four pages. Price 10 cents each; 70 cents per dozen, postage prepaid.

BUSINESSMAN'S GOSPEL ASSOCIATION

Garden City Office

Garden City, Kansas, United States of America

FOUR UNUSUAL GOSPEL TRACTS

“The Way of Life and the Way of Death”

“God’s Plan of Salvation”

“It Is Finished”

“Where Cain Got His Wife”

Things the people have to say about these tracts:

“THEY HAVE NO UNCERTAIN SOUND. They have the TRUE RING OF THE SPIRIT OF GOD; they make the way of salvation so clear and plain.”

“Your tracts are clear and scriptural . . . The way of salvation needs to be made plain, and that you have done in a very fine way.”

“‘Where Cain Got His Wife’ went like hot cakes. I hope they read every word of it.”

“I think your gospels and tracts surpass them all.”

The leader of a band of Christian Laymen says, “We expect to use many of your gospels and tracts in our work in the days ahead of us as we consider them the best we have ever used.”

“We’ve had hundreds of different kinds of tracts. None others as complete, and convincing as yours. The ‘God’s Plan of Salvation,’ ‘Way of Life and Death,’ and the ‘It Is Finished’ are wonderful tracts.”

“Just the past week six Philippino boys accepted the Lord Jesus through reading ‘God’s Plan of Salvation’.”

It was just a slip of paper, but it contained “the gospel.” It set forth the finished work of Christ on the cross for the sinner. A desolate soul read its gospel message and saw and received Jesus Christ as her personal Saviour. In the scale of values, established by God, that soul was worth **more than all the world**. “What shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?” That gospel tract was a “**life saver**” for that lost woman that day. Multitudes perish—doomed—eternally lost. They know not Christ. You have never told them of Jesus. Jesus commanded, “Go ye into all the world and preach the gospel to every creature” (Mk. 16:15). He meant exactly what He said. Why not obey before lost souls perish and meet an awful doom. We cannot all be preachers, nor evangelists, but we can all daily hand out or send out “life savers” in the form of tracts or gospels. A small investment can bring in **big returns**—returns which will last **for time and for eternity**.

For \$1200 we will place for you 1,000,000 mixed tracts

For \$120 we will place for you 100,000 mixed tracts

For \$12 we will place for you 10,000 mixed tracts

If you desire to finance a smaller number of gospel tracts, we will place them for you at the same rate. Price of these tracts: 10 for 3 cents; 100 for 15 cents; 1,000 for \$1.20. **Order today.**

BUSINESSMAN’S GOSPEL ASSOCIATION

Garden City Office

Garden City, Kansas, United States of America

Announcing the Latest Song Book

Harkness Gospel Songs

(WITH STANDARD HYMNS)

*Compiled and
Edited by*

Robert Harkness

*Composer
Pianist*



FOR ALL EVANGELISTIC PURPOSES

Songs for the { **Crowd Revival**
 Choir Church
 Soloist Young People } **and All Occasions**
 Sunday School

A book of *One Hundred and Fifty-seven Songs, New and Old*—carefully selected from the best songs of the best composers, including *Fifty Great Songs by Robert Harkness*.

Considering size, price and contents, this book offers the greatest value in any Gospel Song publication.

It meets the need of the Evangelistic Meeting. It revives the Sunday evening service. It appeals strongly to the young people's organizations.

PRICES

	Express not prepaid		By mail postpaid	
	Hundred	Dozen	Dozen	Copy
High Grade Manila.....	\$17.50	\$2.40	\$2.80	30c

Published by

ROBERT HARKNESS

1632 HUNTINGTON DRIVE

SO. PASADENA, CALIF.

Obtainable at the following depots:

MOODY COLPORTAGE ASSOCIATION

So. La Salle St., Chicago, Ill.

BIOLA BOOKROOM

536 So. Hope St., Los Angeles, Calif.

FLEMING H. REVELL CO.

158 Fifth Ave., New York, N. Y.

(or direct from the publisher)

INDEX

If this index does not afford the information you want, please consult the outline of the subject matter of this book on pages I to VI, which you will find in the front of this volume.

- Aberrations, 196.
- "Ability of God," 134, 199, 200, 238.
- "Abomination of desolation," 36, 45, 55, 56, 74, 76, 84. See Tribulation.
- Abraham, 9, 22, 26, 29, 57, 63, 83, 89, 144, 181; Call of, 23, 24.
- Adam, 4, 7, 9, 20, 42, 83, 178, 179.
- Adams, Pres., 261.
- Adloff, 194.
- Adultery, 110.
- "After its kind," 173, 175, 195. See Species Propagate "After their kind."
- Agassiz, 162, 175, 177, 218, 247.
- Age of Fossils, 246.
- Age of Man, 83, 211, 222, 235, 243, 244.
- Age of Strata, 231-234.
- Ages of Creation, 165.
- Agnosticism, 141.
- Akeley, Carl, 207, 208.
- Allegory, 200.
- Alpha and Omega, Christ the, 3.
- Ames, Prof. E. S., 118, 123.
- Anatomy, 193.
- Ancon sheep, 191.
- "And it was so," 148.
- Andrews, Dr. Wm., 246.
- Angels, 18, 19, 60, 75, 76, 100, 166, 167.
- Animalcules, 141, 175.
- "Another gospel," 115, 125, 285.
- Anti-Christ, 62, 103, 104, 169, 188, 197, 267. See Beast.
- Apostasy, 56, 71, 72, 117, 125-131, 212.
- Archeology, 192, 229.
- Aristotle, 187.
- Ascension of Christ, 52, 58.
- Atheism, 141.
- Babson, Roger, 112.
- Babylon (Babel), 20-22, 30, 31, 38, 44, 49, 109, 121, 161, 168, 272.
- Balfour, Prof. F. M., 163.
- Barrande, Joachim, 240.
- Bateson, Prof. Wm., 217, 221, 225, 259.
- Beale, Prof. L. S., 221.
- Beast, The, 37, 39, 45, 56, 63, 72, 74, 86, 87, 117. See Anti-Christ.
- Beginning and Ending of Days of Creation, 138-140, 148-149.
- Bell, Alex. Graham, 204.
- Bell, Sir Charles, 219.
- Berthelot creates Food from Air, 198.
- Bethlehem, 11, 43, 53, 58.
- Bey, Dr. Bruner, 238.
- Bible, 1, 140, 178, 180-185, 190, 197, 249, 260, 279-285.
- Bible Climaxes, 2, 6, 7.
- Bible, Outline of, 3, 102, 278. The Foundation of our Government, 274—.
- Bingham, Dr. Hiram, 252.
- Biology, 192.
- Biometry, 193.
- Bishop, T. B., 190, 193, 196, 203, 208, 212, 214, 217, 220, 227, 234, 237, 239, 240, 241.
- Blood of Christ, 7, 8, 10-15, 98, 106, 148, 181, 285.
- "Blood Test," 260.
- Boas, Dr. Franz, 232.
- Bolshevism, 269, 271. See Modernism.
- Bonnier, M. Gaston, 220.
- Brain Capacity, 236.
- Branca, Prof. W., 217, 230, 231, 241.
- Brass, 37, 38.
- Brass, Dr. Arnold, 208.
- Brewster, Sir David, 163, 173, 217.
- Bride of Christ, 87, 88.
- Brisbane, Arthur, 253, 256, 269.
- British Association for the Advancement of Science, 135.
- Broca, Prof. P., 243.
- Brotherhood of Man, 104.
- Brown, Wm. Adams, 104, 122.
- Brugsch, Prof. 251.
- Bryan, W. J., 141, 175, 187, 209, 210, 219, 264, 267.
- Bryce, Viscount, 124, 272.
- Buchanan, J. Y., 245.
- Buchner, Dr., 187.
- Bulwer, 215.
- Burbank, Luther, 192, 231, 277.
- Butler, Pres. Nicholas Murray, 122.
- Butler, Samuel, 190.
- Cain, 9, 23.
- Calvary, 14, 61.
- Campbell, Rev., 57, 124.
- Canaan, 23, 24, 26, 31, 79, 89-91. See "The Land."
- Carlyle, Thomas, 219.
- Cause of Judgment of Genesis 1:2, 166.
- Cell, 141, 156, 189, 195, 198-201, 237, 248.
- Certainty of Scripture, 195.
- Chamberlin and Salisbury, 152, 155, 159, 205, 221, 222, 247.
- Chart of the Ages, 83.
- Chart of the Cross, 7.
- Chart of Finished Redemption, 102.
- Chart of God's Kingdom Before the World was Made, 18.
- Chaos, 150-152, 162, 165.
- Cherubim, 18, 19, 69, 168.

- Kelvin, Lord, 135, 157, 165, 172, 189, 190, 202, 259.
 Keyser, Dr. L. S., 208, 254, 265.
 Kidd, Benjamin, 252.
 Kim, Dr. Yamei, 112.
 King, Christ as, 28-30, 38, 39, 41-78, 81, 86-97, 101, 105, 107, 169.
 Kingdom, God's purpose of a, 5, 20, 22-36, 39-42, 45, 57, 59-78. See Kingdom of Heaven.
 Kingdom Age, 101. See Kingdom of Heaven. See Kingdom.
 Kingdom of Heaven, 20, 23, 25, 27, 29-32, 37-50, 53, 57-65, 68, 70, 73, 75, 77, 82, 87, 89, 92-96, 98, 101, 105—, 107, 116, 169. See Throne of David. See Kingdom.
 Klaatsch, Herr, 206.
 Kohlbrugge, Dr. J. H. F., 228, 235.
 Kollmann, Prof., 231.
 Krishnamurti, 72.
 Lacarno Pacts, 108.
 Laidlaw, Dr. W., 120.
 Lalande, M., 243.
 Lamb of God, 8, 9, 11, 13, 17, 41, 51, 52, 87, 88, 103, 181, 182.
 Lancaster, Sir E. Ray, 207.
 Land, 171.
 Land Animals, 176.
 Landis, Judge, 112.
 "Last Adam," 42, 43, 49.
 Law of Biogenesis, 189.
 Law of Creation, 197. See "Each after its kind."
 League of Nations, 38-40, 73-75.
 Leavitt, Dr., 209.
 Le Conte, Prof. J., 162, 231, 245.
 Length of Days of Creation, 133, 153, 154, 169.
 Leonard, Bishop Adna, 128.
 Leuba, Prof., J. H., 130, 263.
 Liberal, The, 185.
 Liebig, 172.
 Light, 169. Lights, 173.
 Literary Digest, 110, 120.
 Livingstone, Dr., 225.
 Loeb and Leopold, 119.
 Lubbock, John, 222.
 Lyell, Sir Chas., 165, 222, 224, 243, 252.
 Macaulay, Lord, 272.
 MacBride, Prof., 232.
 Macfie, Dr. R. C., 219.
 Machen, Prof. J. G., 117, 118.
 Magazines, 112.
 Mammoth, 223.
 Man is a species, 196.
 Man of sin. See Beast.
 Man's Creation, 177.
 Marshall, Vice Pres. T. R., 131.
 Materialism, 142.
 Mathews, Dean S., 118, 122, 268.
 Mauro, Philip, 188, 189, 190, 216, 219, 249, 250, 261.
 Mayo, Dr. W. J., 260.
 Media-Persia, 31, 38.
 Messiah, 48, 53, 57, 84.
 Meyer, Dr., 230.
 Micah, 11, 29, 51, 53, 58.
 Millennium, 83, 95, 96, 107, 108, 169.
 Millikan, Dr. R. A., 202, 217, 225.
 Missing Link, 225, 239—, 247.
 Mitchell, P. C., 190.
 Mivert, St. George, 220.
 Modern Business (Commerce), 108, 109.
 Modern Dance, 110.
 Modernism, 56, 57, 74, 78, 85, 103, 104, 106, 107, 110-131, 156, 183-185, 194, 217, 218, 220—, 231, 243, 257-263; Movement of, 267, 269, 272, 273, 275, 276, 285.
 Mollusk, 192.
 Moody Bulletin, 261.
 Moses, 13, 14, 25, 69, 71, 90, 135, 137, 154, 170, 171, 179.
 Movies, 111.
 Mueller, Max., 243.
 Murchison, Sir Roderick, 217, 242.
 Murray, Prof. Gilbert, 206.
 Mutation, 205.
 McAdoo, Wm., Chief Magistrate, 120, 121.
 McBride, Prof. E. W., 193, 219.
 McCabe, Joseph, 193.
 McKeever, Prof. W. A., 57, 118.
 McKinley, Pres., 276.
 Nackman, Rabbi, 136.
 Nations, 30, 31, 37, 39, 43, 44, 64, 71, 72, 74, 75, 94, 95, 97, 106, 108, 115, 169; Birth of, 21, 25. See Gentiles.
 Natural selection, 192.
 Neanderthal Man, 230—.
 Nebular hypothesis, 139, 140, 155, 166, 277.
 Nietzsche, 188, 253.
 New heavens and new earth, 100.
 New York, 104, 110, 120-124, 272.
 Newspapers, 112, 253.
 No life except from life, 189.
 Noah, 20, 56, 63, 64, 84, 234.
 Norris, J. Frank, 210, 264.
 Notling, Dr., 224.
 Numerics, 142-149, 180—, 214, See Seven.
 Numerics of "And God Said," 180—.
 Obermaier, Prof., 237.
 "Occupy till I come," 64.
 Ogburn, Prof. Wm. F., 230, 234.
 Oldham, Mr., 224.
 Order of Creation, 135.
 Osborn, Prof., W. F., 237.
 Otto, Prof. Rudolf, 192.
 Owen, Prof., 177.
 Pace, Dr. E. J., 145, 146.
 Pagan religion, 30.
 Paleontology, 217, 223.
 Panin, Dr. Ivan, 142-144, 184.
 Pantheism, 142.
 Paraguay cattle, 191.
 Passover, 9-17, 25, 54, 65, 181-182.
 Pasteur, 190.
 Patterson, Dr. Alex., 163, 216, 219, 223.
 Paulsen, Prof., 188.
 Pember, G. H., 165, 175, 247.
 Persia, 38.
 Peschel, Prof., 192.

- Petrie, Dr. Flinders, 244.
 Pfaff, Dr. Friedrich, 244.
 Pfliederer, Prof., 260.
 Pharaoh, 38, 153.
 Phelps, Guy Fitch, 230, 234, 236.
 Piltown Man, 226.
 Plants, 171, 172.
 Pocock, Prof. R. I., 236.
 Polytheism, 142.
 Popular Science Monthly, 257.
 Porto Santa rabbits, 191.
 Post-millennialism, 50-55.
 Poulton, Prof. E. B., 195.
 Pre-glacial man, 222.
 Pre-millennialism, 50-55, 128.
 President of Cornell, 185.
 Prestwich, Sir Joseph, 222, 245.
 Price, Dr. George McCready, 163, 189, 204, 232, 233, 267.
 Primrose, 191.
 Princeton Theological Seminary, 118, 264.
 Proctor, 170.
 Prophecies, 30, 79-82.
 Prophets, 29, 36, 79, 181.
 Protoplasm, 141, 187, 189, 191, 193-195, 209.
 Pseudo-science arrayed against Bible, 156—, 211, 236, 242, 248, 257.
 Rawlinson, 252.
 Read, Dr. C. H., 224.
 Reason rejects theory of Evolution, 210—.
 Recapitulation Theory, 193.
 Reconstruction, 208; unreliable, 236.
 Redemption, 6-10, 19, 20, 281. See God's Plan of Salvation.
 Regathering of Israel, 29, 32-36, 55, 75, 79, 81, 89, 91. See Scattering of Israel.
 Reid, Dr. Archibald, 195.
 Reid, John T., 239.
 Reign of Anti-Christ, 117. See Beast.
 Reign of Christ. See King, Christ as, 86-103. See Kingdom Age.
 Reinheimer, Prof. H., 195.
 Reinke, Prof. J., 207.
 Reisner, Dr., 121.
 Remnant, 31, 40, 48, 49, 55, 83, 93, 104.
 Renouf, Prof., 251.
 Resurrection, 11, 19, 56, 58, 59, 60, 66, 67, 85, 88, 97, 98.
 Reudiger, Dr., 203.
 Revelation, 19. See Prophecies.
 Rewards, 98, 99.
 Rice, Dr. Edward L., 254, 265, 267.
 Ring of Cheops, 252.
 Ritter, Prof. W. E., 192.
 Robinson and Breasted's History, 222, 243.
 Rome, 38, 39, 66, 73.
 Roosevelt, Pres., 276.
 Royce, Prof. J., 118.
 Ruskin, 220.
 Russia, 124, 131, 197, 269-272.
 Sacrifice, 7, 9; different animals used, 16, 17.
 Salvation, God's Plan of, 7; Central fact of, 7; provided ahead of time, 8; depends upon, 10; God's purpose of, 5; Its ground and means in the days of the Patriarchs, 9.
 Satan, 4, 5; his pre-existence, 18; enters world, 4; exit from world, 5; a rebel, 18; his last chance, 19; his dominion, 20, 21, 32, 43-45, 56, 77, 87, 97, 100, 101, 104, 105, 113, 116, 166, 167, 190; his last stand, 97.
 Saviour, 44, 50-59, 101, 105, 111. See Christ. See Jesus. See Redemption.
 Sayce, Prof. A. H., 244, 252.
 Scattering of Israel, 31-36, 48, 55, 91. See Regathering of Israel, 29.
 Schliemann, Dr., 225.
 Schmidt, Dr. Rudolph, 219.
 Scholars, 113, 114, 135, 195, 200, 204.
 Schuler, Rev. Bob, 128.
 Schwalbe, Prof. G., 202.
 Science's Assured Facts, 202.
 Scientific Gas and Guesses, 205.
 Scott, Dr. W. B., 220.
 Scott, Dr. D. H., 119.
 Scott, Prof., 193.
 Seas, 171.
 Second Coming of Christ, 28, 29, 39, 40, 46, 50, 54-73, 77, 82, 86, 96. Signs of, 55, 56, 62, 63, 71-73.
 Second Day, 171.
 Seed, 11, 27, 28, 31, 41, 42, 56, 58, 145, 195.
 Sellars, Roy W., 118.
 Seuss, 165.
 Seven, 30, 31, 75, 76, 81, 83, 103, 142-150, 173, 180-182. See Numerics.
 Seven evidences man made by God, 213.
 Shaler, Dr. N. S., 218.
 Sheldon, Dr., 258—.
 Sidgwick, Prof. A., 193.
 Silver, 38.
 Simpson, Edward, 224.
 Sin, enters the world, 4; sin's exit, 5; its penalty, 9, 12; "All have sinned," 20, 32, 42.
 Six days of Reconstruction and Creation, 169—.
 Sixth Day, 176, 177.
 Skates, Electric organs of, 212.
 Smith, Prof. Elliott, 204, 225.
 Smith, Prof. G. B., 117.
 Snow, 145-146.
 Soares, Prof. T. G., 123.
 Solar System, 170, 174.
 Son of God, 57. See Jesus.
 Species propagate only "after its kind," 190.
 Spencer, Herbert, 188, 189, 203, 205.
 Spiders, 212.
 Spinnerets, 212.
 Spontaneous generation myth dispelled, 172, 189.
 Starr, Prof. F., 244.
 Sterility, 191, 192, 196.
 Stone, 37, 39, 69, 75, 77.
 Stone Age, 223.
 Strata, 154, 157-165, 175; Age of, 211, 231, 239.
 Strong, Dr. A. H., 104, 118.
 Substitution, 11-14.
 Successive Ages, 163-166, 192.
 Sully, Prof. J., 260.
 Summerbell, Dr. J. J., 144.
 Sunday Observance, 185.

- Kelvin, Lord, 135, 157, 165, 172, 189, 190, 202, 259.
 Keyser, Dr. L. S., 208, 254, 265.
 Kidd, Benjamin, 252.
 Kim, Dr. Yamei, 112.
 King, Christ as, 28-30, 38, 39, 41-78, 81, 86-97, 101, 105, 107, 169.
 Kingdom, God's purpose of a, 5, 20, 22-36, 39-42, 45, 57, 59-78. See Kingdom of Heaven.
 Kingdom Age, 101. See Kingdom of Heaven. See Kingdom.
 Kingdom of Heaven, 20, 23, 25, 27, 29-32, 37-50, 53, 57-65, 68, 70, 73, 75, 77, 82, 87, 89, 92-96, 98, 101, 105—, 107, 116, 169. See Throne of David. See Kingdom.
 Klaatsch, Herr, 206.
 Kohlbrugge, Dr. J. H. F., 228, 235.
 Kollmann, Prof., 231.
 Krishnamurti, 72.
 Lacarno Pacts, 108.
 Laidlaw, Dr. W., 120.
 Lalande, M., 243.
 Lamb of God, 8, 9, 11, 13, 17, 41, 51, 52, 87, 88, 103, 181, 182.
 Lancaster, Sir E. Ray, 207.
 Land, 171.
 Land Animals, 176.
 Landis, Judge, 112.
 "Last Adam," 42, 43, 49.
 Law of Biogenesis, 189.
 Law of Creation, 197. See "Each after its kind."
 League of Nations, 38-40, 73-75.
 Leavitt, Dr., 209.
 Le Conte, Prof. J., 162, 231, 245.
 Length of Days of Creation, 133, 153, 154, 169.
 Leonard, Bishop Adna, 128.
 Leuba, Prof., J. H., 130, 263.
 Liberal, The, 185.
 Liebig, 172.
 Light, 169. Lights, 173.
 Literary Digest, 110, 120.
 Livingstone, Dr., 225.
 Loeb and Leopold, 119.
 Lubbock, John, 222.
 Lyell, Sir Chas., 165, 222, 224, 243, 252.
 Macaulay, Lord, 272.
 MacBride, Prof., 232.
 Macfie, Dr. R. C., 219.
 Machen, Prof. J. G., 117, 118.
 Magazines, 112.
 Mammoth, 223.
 Man is a species, 196.
 Man of sin. See Beast.
 Man's Creation, 177.
 Marshall, Vice Pres. T. R., 131.
 Materialism, 142.
 Mathews, Dean S., 118, 122, 268.
 Mauro, Philip, 188, 189, 190, 216, 219, 249, 250, 261.
 Mayo, Dr. W. J., 260.
 Media-Persia, 31, 38.
 Messiah, 48, 53, 57, 84.
 Meyer, Dr., 230.
 Micah, 11, 29, 51, 53, 58.
 Millennium, 83, 95, 96, 107, 108, 169.
 Millikan, Dr. R. A., 202, 217, 225.
 Missing Link, 225, 239—, 247.
 Mitchell, P. C., 190.
 Mivert, St. George, 220.
 Modern Business (Commerce), 108, 109.
 Modern Dance, 110.
 Modernism, 56, 57, 74, 78, 85, 103, 104, 106, 107, 110-131, 156, 183-185, 194, 217, 218, 220—, 231, 243, 257-263; Movement of, 267, 269, 272, 273, 275, 276, 285.
 Mollusk, 192.
 Moody Bulletin, 261.
 Moses, 13, 14, 25, 69, 71, 90, 135, 137, 154, 170, 171, 179.
 Movies, 111.
 Mueller, Max., 243.
 Murchison, Sir Roderick, 217, 242.
 Murray, Prof. Gilbert, 206.
 Mutation, 205.
 McAdoo, Wm., Chief Magistrate, 120, 121.
 McBride, Prof. E. W., 193, 219.
 McCabe, Joseph, 193.
 McKeever, Prof. W. A., 57, 118.
 McKinley, Pres., 276.
 Nackman, Rabbi, 136.
 Nations, 30, 31, 37, 39, 43, 44, 64, 71, 72, 74, 75, 94, 95, 97, 106, 108, 115, 169; Birth of, 21, 25. See Gentiles.
 Natural selection, 192.
 Neanderthal Man, 230—.
 Nebular hypothesis, 139, 140, 155, 166, 277.
 Nietzsche, 188, 253.
 New heavens and new earth, 100.
 New York, 104, 110, 120-124, 272.
 Newspapers, 112, 253.
 No life except from life, 189.
 Noah, 20, 56, 63, 64, 84, 234.
 Norris, J. Frank, 210, 264.
 Notling, Dr., 224.
 Numerics, 142-149, 180—, 214, See Seven.
 Numerics of "And God Said," 180—.
 Obermaier, Prof., 237.
 "Occupy till I come," 64.
 Ogburn, Prof. Wm. F., 230, 234.
 Oldham, Mr., 224.
 Order of Creation, 135.
 Osborn, Prof., W. F., 237.
 Otto, Prof. Rudolf, 192.
 Owen, Prof., 177.
 Pace, Dr. E. J., 145, 146.
 Pagan religion, 30.
 Paleontology, 217, 223.
 Panin, Dr. Ivan, 142-144, 184.
 Pantheism, 142.
 Paraguay cattle, 191.
 Passover, 9-17, 25, 54, 65, 181-182.
 Pasteur, 190.
 Patterson, Dr. Alex., 163, 216, 219, 223.
 Paulsen, Prof., 188.
 Pember, G. H., 165, 175, 247.
 Persia, 38.
 Peschel, Prof., 192.

- Petrie, Dr. Flinders, 244.
 Pfaff, Dr. Friedrich, 244.
 Pfliederer, Prof., 260.
 Pharaoh, 38, 153.
 Phelps, Guy Fitch, 230, 234, 236.
 Piltown Man, 226.
 Plants, 171, 172.
 Pocock, Prof. R. I., 236.
 Polytheism, 142.
 Popular Science Monthly, 257.
 Porto Santa rabbits, 191.
 Post-millennialism, 50-55.
 Poulton, Prof. E. B., 195.
 Pre-glacial man, 222.
 Pre-millennialism, 50-55, 128.
 President of Cornell, 185.
 Prestwich, Sir Joseph, 222, 245.
 Price, Dr. George McCready, 163, 189, 204, 232, 233, 267.
 Primrose, 191.
 Princeton Theological Seminary, 118, 264.
 Proctor, 170.
 Prophecies, 30, 79-82.
 Prophets, 29, 36, 79, 181.
 Protoplasm, 141, 187, 189, 191, 193-195, 209.
 Pseudo-science arrayed against Bible, 156—, 211, 236, 242, 248, 257.
 Rawlinson, 252.
 Read, Dr. C. H., 224.
 Reason rejects theory of Evolution, 210—.
 Recapitulation Theory, 193.
 Reconstruction, 208; unreliable, 236.
 Redemption, 6-10, 19, 20, 281. See God's Plan of Salvation.
 Regathering of Israel, 29, 32-36, 55, 75, 79, 81, 89, 91. See Scattering of Israel.
 Reid, Dr. Archibald, 195.
 Reid, John T., 239.
 Reign of Anti-Christ, 117. See Beast.
 Reign of Christ. See King, Christ as, 86-103. See Kingdom Age.
 Reinheimer, Prof. H., 195.
 Reinke, Prof. J., 207.
 Reisner, Dr., 121.
 Remnant, 31, 40, 48, 49, 55, 83, 93, 104.
 Renouf, Prof., 251.
 Resurrection, 11, 19, 56, 58, 59, 60, 66, 67, 85, 88, 97, 98.
 Reudiger, Dr., 203.
 Revelation, 19. See Prophecies.
 Rewards, 98, 99.
 Rice, Dr. Edward L., 254, 265, 267.
 Ring of Cheops, 252.
 Ritter, Prof. W. E., 192.
 Robinson and Breasted's History, 222, 243.
 Rome, 38, 39, 66, 73.
 Roosevelt, Pres., 276.
 Royce, Prof. J., 118.
 Ruskin, 220.
 Russia, 124, 131, 197, 269-272.
 Sacrifice, 7, 9; different animals used, 16, 17.
 Salvation, God's Plan of, 7; Central fact of, 7; provided ahead of time, 8; depends upon, 10; God's purpose of, 5; Its ground and means in the days of the Patriarchs, 9.
 Satan, 4, 5; his pre-existence, 18; enters world, 4; exit from world, 5; a rebel, 18; his last chance, 19; his dominion, 20, 21, 32, 43-45, 56, 77, 87, 97, 100, 101, 104, 105, 113, 116, 166, 167, 190; his last stand, 97.
 Saviour, 44, 50-59, 101, 105, 111. See Christ. See Jesus. See Redemption.
 Sayce, Prof. A. H., 244, 252.
 Scattering of Israel, 31-36, 48, 55, 91. See Regathering of Israel, 29.
 Schliemann, Dr., 225.
 Schmidt, Dr. Rudolph, 219.
 Scholars, 113, 114, 135, 195, 200, 204.
 Schuler, Rev. Bob, 128.
 Schwalbe, Prof. G., 202.
 Science's Assured Facts, 202.
 Scientific Gas and Guesses, 205.
 Scott, Dr. W. B., 220.
 Scott, Dr. D. H., 119.
 Scott, Prof., 193.
 Seas, 171.
 Second Coming of Christ, 28, 29, 39, 40, 46, 50, 54-73, 77, 82, 86, 96. Signs of, 55, 56, 62, 63, 71-73.
 Second Day, 171.
 Seed, 11, 27, 28, 31, 41, 42, 56, 58, 145, 195.
 Sellars, Roy W., 118.
 Seuss, 165.
 Seven, 30, 31, 75, 76, 81, 83, 103, 142-150, 173, 180-182. See Numerics.
 Seven evidences man made by God, 213.
 Shaler, Dr. N. S., 218.
 Sheldon, Dr., 258—.
 Sidgwick, Prof. A., 193.
 Silver, 38.
 Simpson, Edward, 224.
 Sin, enters the world, 4; sin's exit, 5; its penalty, 9, 12; "All have sinned," 20, 32, 42.
 Six days of Reconstruction and Creation, 169—.
 Sixth Day, 176, 177.
 Skates, Electric organs of, 212.
 Smith, Prof. Elliott, 204, 225.
 Smith, Prof. G. B., 117.
 Snow, 145-146.
 Soares, Prof. T. G., 123.
 Solar System, 170, 174.
 Son of God, 57. See Jesus.
 Species propagate only "after its kind," 190.
 Spencer, Herbert, 188, 189, 203, 205.
 Spiders, 212.
 Spinnerets, 212.
 Spontaneous generation myth dispelled, 172, 189.
 Starr, Prof. F., 244.
 Sterility, 191, 192, 196.
 Stone, 37, 39, 69, 75, 77.
 Stone Age, 223.
 Strata, 154, 157-165, 175; Age of, 211, 231, 239.
 Strong, Dr. A. H., 104, 118.
 Substitution, 11-14.
 Successive Ages, 163-166, 192.
 Sully, Prof. J., 260.
 Summerbell, Dr. J. J., 144.
 Sunday Observance, 185.

- Sunday School Times, 263, 267.
 Sunday, Wm., 267.
 Sword of Christ, 108.

 Ten-Toes, 37-40, 73.
 Theistic evolution, 201.
 "The Land," 48, 55, 79, 89-94. See Canaan.
 Third Day, 171.
 "This same Jesus," 96.
 Thomas, Dr. J. B., 173.
 Thomson, Dr. W. H., 217, 242, 255, 260.
 Thomson, Prof. J. A., 194, 195, 254.
 "Thousand years," 45, 83, 87, 97, 98, 101.
 Throne of David, 42, 61, 65. See David.
 Times of the Gentiles, 36-40, 44, 48, 72. See Nations.
 Townsend, Prof. L. T., 124, 187, 189, 192, 196, 210, 216, 220, 223, 227, 243, 246, 253, 272.
 Traas, Dr., 217, 254.
 Translation, 45, 64, 83-86, 98, 101.
 Transmutation, 192, 196.
 Tribulation, 38, 43, 45, 54, 56, 62, 63, 75, 76, 84, 87, 101. See Abomination of Desolation.
 Trinity, in Creation, 178.
 Trinity, of God, 8, 18, 178, 180, 181.
 Trumpets, 76-78.
 Turney, Dr. D. B., 144.
 Tyndall, 172, 189, 193, 219.

 Uncertainties of human knowledge, 195.
 Union Theological Seminary, 104.
 University of California, 192.
 University of Chicago, 104, 117-119, 121-123, 188, 205.
 University of Illinois, 120.
 University of Kansas, 118.
 University of Michigan, 118.
 University of Wisconsin, 264.
 Upham, Dr. Warren, 245.
 Urquhart, Dr. J., 178, 222, 223, 224.

 Van Belmont, 187.
 Van Loon, Dr. H., 206, 266.
 Variation of species, 189, 190, 191, 195, 196, 205, 231, 234, 240.
 Vergil, 187.
 "Vestiges" (vermiform appendix), 254.
 Victoria Philosophical Institute, 204, 217.
 Virchow, Dr. Rudolph, 209, 221, 224, 231, 234, 241, 244, 255, 260.
 Virgin birth or incarnation. See Jesus.
 Von Hartman, Edward, 220.

 Wagner, Rudolph, 230.
 Wallace, Dr., 136, 175, 191, 196, 214, 232, 241.
 Warren, Dr. J. B., 218.
 Wars, 56, 62, 71, 72, 84, 107, 108, 270.
 Wasman, 196, 228.
 Watermelon, Wisdom from, 212.
 Water spider, 212.
 Watts, Dr. Robert, 192.
 Weismann, Prof. 191, 193, 195, 206.
 Wells, H. G., 216, 255, 256, 257.
 Wesley, Rev. John, 128.
 Whewell, 165.
 Wilson, Pres., 275.
 Wilson, Robert Dick, 183, 184.
 Winchell, Prof., 217, 223, 240.
 Wise, Rabbi, 110.
 Wiseman, Cardinal, 156.
 Wolf, Dr. J. G., 232.
 Wolff, Prof. G., 202.
 Woman's Creation, 180.
 Woodward, Dr. Smith, 236.
 Woolaston, T. Vernon, 191.
 Works, 114; Not saved by, 98.
 World, the enemy of God, 104-116, 168.
 World Reconstruction, 108.
 Wright, Dr. J. N., 18.
 Wright, Prof. G. F., 135, 156, 163, 220, 224, 231, 245, 246.

 Yale University, 216, 264.

 Zahm, Dr. J. A., 156, 219.
 Zahn, Dr. 223.

GRACE THEOLOGICAL SEMINARY

VII



9781446509715

12/02/2019 14:16-3

23